

Buttl @ Bx ?

2nd row!

E. C. Smyth

Page 3



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

Life of Jean Paul Frederic Richter.

LIFE
OF
JEAN PAUL FREDERIC RICHTER.

Compiled from Various Sources.

TOGETHER WITH
HIS AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

TRANSLATED BY
ELIZA BUCKMINSTER LEE.

TRANSLATOR OF WALT AND VULT

"I would gladly, after my death, have that which has never yet happened to any author, all my thoughts given to the world—*not one* should be concealed."
JEAN PAUL.

COMPLETE IN ONE VOLUME.

NEW-YORK :
D. APPLETON & COMPANY, 200 BROADWAY.
PHILADELPHIA :
GEO. S. APPLETON, 164 CHESNUT-STREET.
M.DCCC.L.

ENTERED, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1850, by

D. APPLETON & CO.,

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the Southern
District of New-York.

RBR
Jantz
#386

PREFACE.

THE following pages are presented to the reader, as containing an *authentic* life of Jean Paul, although they are not a literal translation of any *one* of the biographies of the great German Poet.

It is well known, that he was the most frank and unreserved of authors, and that he has interwoven, in all his romances, much of his personal experience. When, in the latter part of his life, he began his great comic romance of "*Nicholas Margraf, or Poetry from the Life of an Apothecary,*" he undertook at the same time, as a parallel or companion piece, his "*Autobiography, or Truth from my own Life,*" intending to interweave the *two* as the *romance* and *reality* of *one* life. From hence results the comic tone, and the apparent affectation of speaking in the third person, in his *Autobiography*, which was continued only to his thirteenth year. He found, perhaps, that it was only in childhood he could *idealize* his own life, and do that better, in his fictitious heroes, than when he was *avowedly* his own.

The *first* part of the following Life is as literal and accurate a translation of Richter's *own* biography, as I am able to make; the mystification already mentioned, has added obscurity to the "bewildering conceits" with which he usually illustrates his wit and his wisdom. My desire to preserve,

as much as possible, the peculiarity of the original, has, perhaps, given to the English a German dress, which, I trust is thrown off in the remaining parts of the work.

The *Life* is continued from "*Wahrheit aus Jean Paul's Leben*" (Truth from the Life of Jean Paul), "Spazier's Biographical Commentary," and Paul's correspondence with his friends. The materials furnished from these sources, I have drawn out, and woven together again with the same threads, although in a different form; and my embarrassments, which have not been small, have arisen from the abundance of the materials, and the difficulty of selection, where I wished the reader should enjoy the whole. But as the whole is comprised in scarcely less than twenty volumes, I have selected only such parts of the letters as would throw light upon Jean Paul's personal concerns, and explain the peculiarities of his character.

Are readers disappointed in this *selected* Life? I must have the honesty to assure them, the fault is in the setting; should they search the original, they will find *gems* worthy of the purest gold, and the richest pattern.

Should German scholars find any discrepancy in the extracts from the letters, the reason may be, that I have translated, as happened to be convenient, from *three different* versions; from Otto's and Spazier's *selections*, and from Jean Paul's correspondence with Otto.

August 12, 1842.

CONTENTS.

VOL. I.

INTRODUCTION.

	PAGE
Sketch of the Fichtelgebirge, the birth-place of Richter,.....	9

PART FIRST.

THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

CHAP. I.—Wunsiedel. Birth. Grandparents,.....	15
CHAP. II.—Which includes the time from August 1775 to January 1776. Joditz. Village Idyls,.....	25
CHAP. III.—Schwarzenbach-on-the-Saale. First Kiss. Restor. The Lord's Supper,	60

PART SECOND.

FROM JEAN PAUL'S ENTRANCE INTO THE HOF GYMNASIUM, TILL AFTER HIS FIRST VISIT IN WEIMAR.

CHAP. I.—Remarks upon the Autobiography. Removal to Schwarzenbach. Self-Education. Loss of Childish Faith,.....	75
CHAP. II.—Hof Gymnasium. School Anecdotes. Death of the Father. Domestic Troubles,.....	81
CHAP. III.—Youthful Friendships. Werther Period. First Book-making. On the Practice of Thinking,.....	86
CHAP. IV.—Richter enters the University of Leipzig. Letters from Leipzig. Change of Studies. Letters to his Mother,.....	92
CHAP. V.—Extracts from Journal.—First Literary Effort. "Greenland Lawsuits,"	104
CHAP. VI.—Extreme poverty. First success. Costume Controversy,.....	113
CHAP. VII.—Love Passage. Second volume of "Greenland Lawsuits." Pressing Poverty. Flight from Leipzig. Domestic circumstances in Hof. Book of Devotion,	117
CHAP. VIII.—Christian Otto. Studies. Herman. His Death,.....	127
CHAP. IX.—Adam Van Oerthel. Residence at Topon. Death of his Friend. Change of Views,.....	134

CHAP. X.—Richter takes a School at Schwarzenbach. Method of Instruction. Female Pupils and Friends,.....	141
CHAP. XI.—Richter's first Serious Work.—"The Little Schoolmaster Wuz." "The Invisible Lodge." First Success. Sabbath Weeks of Life. "Hesperus,"	152
CHAP. XII.—Richter visits Bayreuth. The Jew Emanuel. The Original of Clotilde. "Siebenkas." Letter from "Septimus Fixlien,".....	165
CHAP. XIII.—Letters from Weimar. Letter from Madam von Kalb. Richter prepares to go to Weimar,.....	171
CHAP. XIV.—First Visit in Weimar. Letters from Weimar. Goethe. Herder. Schiller. Wieland,.....	175
CHAP. XV.—Madam von Kalb. Letters. Close of Richter's intimacy with Madam von Kalb,.....	184
APPENDIX,	191

CONTENTS.

VOL. II.

PART THIRD.

FROM JEAN PAUL'S FIRST VISIT IN WEIMAR TO HIS FINAL RESIDENCE IN BAYREUTH.

	PAGE
CHAP. I.—Prince Hohenlohe. Madam von Krudener. Letters. "Jubelsenor."	
"Kampaner Thal,"	5
CHAP. II.—Richter visits the Frauenbath in Eger. Death of his Mother. Emilie von Berlespsh. Removal from Hof to Leipzig,	11
CHAP. III.—Residence in Leipzig. Letters. Emilie von Berlespsh. Visits Dresden,	17
CHAP. IV.—Richter returns to Weimar. Wieland. Goethe. Herder. His attachment to Jean Paul. Philosophy. Madam Von Kalb,	26
CHAP. V.—Richter visits the Court of Hildburghausen. Mademoiselle von F. The four Sister Princesses. Dedication of Titan. Visits Berlin,	36
CHAP. VI.—Richter removes to Berlin. Introduction to Caroline Meyer. The Meyer Family. The "Verlobung,"	44
CHAP. VII.—Richter's Petition to the King of Prussia. Marriage. Caroline's Letters from Weimar,	53
CHAP. VIII.—Residence in Meiningen. Letters. Birth of Richter's first Child. Dog's Petition,	58
CHAP. IX.—Titan,	64
CHAP. X.—Richter leaves Meiningen. Removes to Coburg. Birth of his Son. Death of Herder. "Flagelyahre." Bayreuth,	72

PART FOURTH.

FROM JEAN PAUL'S RESIDENCE IN BAYREUTH TO HIS DEATH.

CHAP. I.—Richter removes to Bayreuth. Social Position. Personal appearance and habits. Family. Letter from his eldest Daughter,	79
CHAP. II.—"Introduction to Æsthetics." "Freedom Pamphlet." "Levana." Richter's View of Napoleon. Comic Works. Letter to General Bernadotte,	86
CHAP. III.—Pecuniary embarrassments. Prince Dalberg. Paul receives a small Pension. Extract from Varnhagen von Ense's Memoirs,	95
CHAP. IV.—Domestic Letters. Journey to Erlangen. Journey to Nurnburg. Jacobi,	102

	PAGE
CHAP. V.—Richter in relation with the unhappy. Letters. Maria Forster,.....	111
CHAP. VI.—Richter's love of travelling. Visits Prince Dalberg. Visits Heidelberg. Receives his Doctor's diploma. Henry Voss. Animal Magnetism,....	123
CHAP. VII.—Richter visits Munchen. His son Max. His melancholy and death,	132
CHAP. VIII.—Richter visits Dresden. The impression he made upon his relatives,	139
CHAP. IX.—The purely Comic Works of Jean Paul.—The Life of Fibel. Nicholas Margraf, or the Comet,.....	144
CHAP. X.—Richter visits Nurnburg on account of his eyes. Kanne. His blindness. Last Letters. "Selina,".....	150
CONCLUSION,.....	163
APPENDIX,.....	174

INTRODUCTION.

SKETCH OF THE FICHELGEbirge, THE BIRTH-PLACE OF RICHTER.

IN the very centre of Germany, in the kingdom of Bavaria, rises that mountain region called the "Fichtelgebirge," or Pine Mountain, which takes its name from the pinewoods with which its summit is crowned. The author from whom I have taken the following account gives it the name of the "mountain island," derived from the isolation in which it remains, although surrounded by mountains and only divided from them by mountain plains. He speaks of it thus: "The Fichtelgebirge, spite of its wonderful peculiarities, is an unknown and unvisited part of Germany. To a great portion of the cultivated as well as the ignorant world, its name is scarcely known. The trains of travelling carriages, on the road from Munich and Nuremberg to Saxony, pass the foot of the mountain on the western side, and the travellers throw only a hasty glance at its dark-green crest as they go by. The troops of travelling German youth, with their staves and sketch-books, turn away from its threshold, frightened at its gloomy aspect."

In the bosom of this mysterious mountain island Jean Paul Frederic Richter received his birth; and, if country and climate and early circumstances exert a powerful influence on the character of the poet, it seems a proper introduction to his biography to give a slight sketch of the region where he received his earliest impressions, and of its inhabitants, among whom his early days were passed.

The elevation of the Fichtelgebirge above the level of the sea subjects it to late springs and cold summers, and in winter it is covered with perpetual snow. The winter lingers late into the short summer; and the frosts begin so early

that the potatoes are sometimes dug from the snow, and the harvest gathered when the hands must be covered with gloves. Cut off, as they are, from the surrounding country, and pressed together within a small compass, so that they can embrace each other with the eye as well as the heart, the inhabitants are joined together in the closest bonds, and, like other mountaineers, are united by a romantic attachment to their country.

The air has been said to belong to the Germans, as the sea does to the English; but many of the German traditions go far into the secret bosom of the earth, and, among the mountain people who dig for treasures, there is a species of romance that belongs to no other country.

In the Fichtelgebirge, gold, that object of intense desire in the Middle Ages, had been found, and the search for it led to many valuable mineral discoveries. Gold is no longer sought there; but the traveller hears continually, in the solitude, the hollow echo of the blows of the man of the mountains, and sees arise, behind a wall of verdure, the smoke of the smelting furnaces for iron, vitriol, and tin. The beautiful fountains and fresh streams, that burst out in every little hollow and green nook, are a constant source of delight; and the sweet and soothing sound of running water is heard, whenever the blows of the hammer and the roaring of the furnace are hushed.

The inhabitants of these heights are a pious, true, and simple people. Their employment gives a certain pride and self-confidence to their character, and a grave and religious seriousness to their manners, although they are often excited and heated like the element in which they work. The most numerous and contended class are the wood-cutters. Many young men leave a mechanical employment, irresistibly drawn, by the singing of birds and the charms of the fresh air, to a life in the pine woods, where they have no wants but simple nourishment and necessary clothing. But the inhabitants of places where manufactures are carried on, like Hof, have lost somewhat of the simplicity of their manners. Many are engaged in manufactures, who live, indeed, like country people, uniting some handicraft or agricultural occupation with their manufacturing employment. Among them, at the first glance, may be discovered, by certain peculiarities, the landlord, the butcher, the baker, and the miller, and these form the well-to-do and independent class of citizens.

The higher class, who possess estates in the mountain, the nobles, also retain the peculiarities of the country. In their domestic arrangements a pure simplicity prevails, and the inhabitants of the whole region live in confidential intercourse with each other.

In describing *one* of the dwellings of the inhabitants of the middling class, we shall give an idea of the house in which Richter passed his infancy. The richest people live in substantial stone-houses, with tiled roofs; but the poorer houses, and such as the father of Richter occupied, are built of beams of wood filled up with mortar, and thatched with straw, inclosing under the same roof the stables, and shelter for all kinds of domestic animals. At the entrance of these humble dwellings, a small space is parted off for the implements of agriculture. On the wall hang the scythes, sickles, and cart and sled harnesses. A door on one side leads to the stalls for oxen and cows; and on the left, to the dwelling apartment, and in the rear is the little, dark kitchen. Near the entrance stands always, even in the poorest houses, a large stove, often of china, glazed or polished, that diffuses its genial warmth over the whole house; upon the top are two iron vessels, built in, for holding warm water; benches are around the walls, and a sort of movable frame, to hang garments upon, is placed on one side. The walls are kept clean and white by constant washing; and, as the apartment is lighted with pine-knots, there is a little funnel, near the stove, to carry off the smoke. The floor is tiled, with a groove in the centre to convey away the water often shaken over from the iron stove-pots.

Near the window, in a corner, stands a large wooden table, used for all purposes, and surrounded with wooden stools; shelves near the door contain the wooden, iron, and tin implements for cooking, dining, &c.; and above the door is a shelf on which the great, well-worn Bible, and the sermon and psalm book are laid. Every Saturday, table, benches, and all other utensils are rubbed and polished with white, shining sand.

All these conveniences and habits of cleanliness are doubly necessary, where a whole family live in one room. There is, however, a small apartment, divided off between the stove and the wall, where they can retire for purposes of rest or solitude; and the bed of the married pair sometimes stands in a small adjoining room, together with a large

chest, curiously carved and ornamented, that descends from father to son as an heir-loom in the family. This chest contains the family linen, the money, the silver shirt-buttons of the husband, and necklace of the wife, the registers of marriages and births, tax-bills, and other important documents.

The background of the premises is closed by a cart-house, swine-house, and large baking oven. In the centre stands a circular dove-house, elevated on a low pillar. This peculiar feature of a German homestead is familiar to those who have looked at Retzsh's beautiful sketches of German life in the "Song of the Bell." Around are great piles of firewood ready split for the stove, necessary both winter and summer, in a climate so severe as that of the Fichtelgebirge. An orchard near the house, with a little corner appropriated to kitchen vegetables, and still another little corner with a few pinks, forget-me-nots, and lavender flowers, complete the domestic picture.

These little orchards surrounding the houses, the flowering hedges bordering the streets and connecting house with house in the villages at the foot of the mountains, and the rustic bridges crossing the frequent streams, give them an aspect of beauty, dear to the eye of a painter or lover of rural scenery. Other ornaments are the flowering maples and weeping birch-trees, and the decorated May-pole, that stands in the midst of every village, and around which, on Sundays and festivals, the dance is led. Not all the mountain villages are thus ornamented. In some, the presence of only clumps of mountain-pine gives them a sombre and melancholy aspect.

The dress of the people who are not engaged in manufactures is primitive and simple. The old women bind a three-cornered handkerchief upon the head, and the young weave a silken band through the hair. They wear a woollen petticoat with a leathern girdle around the waist, through which, in working hours, the petticoat is tucked. Their stockings reach only to the ankle, and the feet are bare, as the shoes are carried in the hand, and only put on when they reach the church-door. The large straw hat is also carried in the hand, and is worn only on rare occasions. The dress of the men is finer and more ornamented. Indeed, the women are almost serfs, and do all the heavy and laborious out-of-door work of the family. The men, it is true, are occupied in the mines, and in cutting wood in the forests for smelting metals.

This may be the reason why the agricultural labors, and the care of the animals, devolve upon the women. But we cannot regret it; for this circumstance, no doubt, gave occasion to those passages of tenderness, respect, and compassion for women, in the writings of Jean Paul, that made the hearts of the German women his own.

The festivals of marriage, baptism, Christmas, and the season of the first communion, are enjoyed and celebrated in these mountain villages with the utmost heartiness and delight; and every reader of Jean Paul will recollect how large a space these festivals occupy in his novels.

Plain and simple as are the inhabitants of this region, the charm of romance, and the poetry of the ancient superstitions, are thickly spread over it.

The old people relate that good-natured dwarfs and fairies entered secretly certain families, and brought them good fortune. In the forests are *woodmen* and *wood-women*, who nourish and protect those who have lost their way, and, for a piece of money, give them good counsels. Every where around in the deep solitudes, the horn of the "wild hunter" and the anvil blows of the "man of the mountains," are heard.

The atmospheric phenomena of these regions are still another source of excitement to the imagination of the poet. Sometimes the whole mountain-tops are covered with vapor, where the sun is reflected in infinitely beautiful hues long after it is below the horizon. Sometimes the mountain-top presents the same peculiar rosy hue that is seen upon the Alps. The reader who has been wearied by Richter's too frequent and diffuse descriptions of atmospheric changes, will find their source in the rare and beautiful appearances this otherwise sombre sky often presents. His weather-prophecy, like that of all mountain people, was an occasion of continual sport and pleasantry, and also of serious attention and study.

It would be impossible for a poet with so keen a susceptibility to all impressions as Richter, to be born under such influences and to pass his youth just within the threshold of a region so filled with romance, without its having a powerful but perhaps secret influence upon the whole man, and upon the character of his genius and writings. It makes him the most personal of authors. The fact that he never could climb the heights of his birth-place, was the mother of

that secret longing with which he every moment, even in the most cheerful circumstances of his life, fell back upon his youth. When easier circumstances permitted him to travel, he would not enter the solitary valleys or ascend the romantic heights of the Fichtelgebirge, lest the reality should break the enchantment of memory, and the illusions of his youth, that embellished the evening of his life with romantic hues, should vanish.

Late in life he returned, after a short separation, drawn by the mountain magnet, to the place of his birth. The visitor found him, in his last years, in the little city and plain of Bayreuth, at the southern threshold of the mountain, where his eye could always turn to the high cradle of his infancy, and where the shadow of the pines could fall upon his grave.

PART FIRST.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

FIRST LECTURE.

CHAPTER I.

WUNSIEDEL.—BIRTH.—GRANDPARENTS.

IT was in the year 1763, about the same time with the Peace of Hubertsburg,* that the present Professor of his own history came into the world;—in the same month that the golden and gray wagtail, the robin-redbreast, the crane, the red-hammer, appeared, and many snipes and woodcocks arrived also; and, indeed, on the same day of the month, in case any one should wish to strew flowers upon the cradle of the new-born, the spoonwort and aspen hung out their tender blossoms,—on the 21st of March;—also at the earliest and freshest time of day, namely, at half past one in the morning. But what crowns all is, that his life and the life of the spring began at the same moment. This last circumstance, that the Professor and the spring were born together, I have mentioned in conversation at least a hundred times; but I fire it off here, as a salute of honor, the hundred and first time, that, by printing it, I may place it out of my power to offer again as a *bon mot*, what through the press has gone the rounds of the whole world. It is a misfortune in the history of a man, even the wittiest, that Fate herself has laid for him a pun as a nest egg; for upon this egg he sits and broods his life long, and strives to bring something out

* The peace that put an end to the Seven Years' War was signed at Hubertsburg, a Saxon hunting-seat, on the 15th of February, in 1763.—TR.

of it. Thus, I knew a barber and a coachman, who both, at the question, "What is your name?" answered with simplicity, and without any appearance of wit, "Your obedient servant," or "Your servant." The reason was, they had the misfortune to be named *Diener*, (*servant*,) and through this their heads were indelibly tonsured by a standing joke, they were both condemned to a perpetual conceit, and these small-shot of wit all went in one direction. Let us not hope, my honored friends, who bear at the same time a common and a proper name, such as Ochs or Rapinat, (both, indeed, Swiss,) Wolf, Schlegel,* Richter,† to surprise such a double-named man with any consequent play of wit, however brilliant; for he has lived too long with his own name to find any allusion to it, which may occur to the novice, either new, or surprising, or witty, but all to his ear is quite worn out. Müllner made a more witty play upon words, with *Schotten* and *Schatten*, (*Scotsman*, *shadow*,) for no Scotsman ever considered himself a shadow, and no shadow can be a Scotsman, for two vowels separate them eternally.

But I return to our history, and place myself among the dead, for all are out of the world who saw me come into it. My father was called John Christian Christopher Richter, and was Tertius‡ and organist in Wunsiedel. My mother, who was the daughter of the cloth-weaver, John Paul Kuhn, in Hof, was named Sophia Rosina. The day after my birth I was baptized by the Senior Apel. One godfather was the abovementioned John Paul, the other, John Frederic Theime, a bookbinder, who did not know at that time to what quantities of his own handicraft he lent his name. From these two sponsors was the name John Paul Frederic shot together; the grandfatherly half I have translated into *Jean Paul*, and have thereby gained a name, the reasons for which shall be fully made known in future lectures.

But now let the hero and subject of these historical lectures lie and sleep securely in the cradle and on the mother's breast; for in the long morning sleep of life there is nothing interesting for the universal history of the world, and he may sleep until I have spoken of those after whom my heart

* A beater.

† A judge.

‡ Tertius is master of the third class in a Gymnasium. A German Gymnasium has eight classes. The classes are arranged in an inverse order: thus, the first is taught by the rector; the second, by the conrector; the third, by the subrector; the fourth, by the quintus, &c.—TR.

and my pen yearn,—my ancestors, my father, mother, and grandparents.

My father was the son of the Rector of the Gymnasium in Neustadt on the Culm. We know nothing of him, but that he was in the highest degree poor and pious; and, should one of his two remaining grandsons come to Neustadt, the inhabitants would receive him with grateful joy and love. The old would relate how conscientious and severe his life and instructions had been, and yet how cheerful. They yet show a bench, behind the organ, where every Sunday he kneeled to pray, and a hollow or grotto in the abovenamed little Culm,* that he formed for himself to pray in, (at this distance of time it stands open,) and in which his more ardent son sported with the Muses and Penury. The evening twilight was a daily harvest for him, in which, for some dark hours, he walked up and down the poor schoolroom, weighing the produce of to-day and the seed that was to be sown to-morrow, under the influence of earnest prayer. This schoolhouse was a prison, not indeed of bread and water, but of bread and beer; far more than these, of some little contentment of the most pious character, which a rectorate could not give, although united with the offices of chanter† and organist. But notwithstanding the fellowship of united offices, it produced only one hundred and fifty florins‡ annually. At this common hunger fountain for Bayreutish schoolmasters, the man who had been chanter in Rehau thirty-five years long, stood and drank. Certainly he would have gained a couple of bites or pennies more, had he been promoted to the office of a country pastor. As often as scholars exchange their dress, that is, from the school mantle to the priest's mantle, they receive a little better food, as the silkworm at the casting of her skin receives richer nourishment; so that such a man, by increasing his labors, may so increase his salary, as to be inferior only to a statesman with expectancies or gratuities; or, in general, to some high functionary in retirement, whose

* The Culmberg, near Neustadt, is a solitary conical hill, on the southeastern entrance to the Fichtelgebirge. It is surrounded by pines that give it a dark-blue appearance, easily distinguished from Bayreuth. We can easily believe that the poetic eye of Richter was often turned to this, his pious grandfather's altar, when near his cottage study he wrote in the open air.—Tr.

† Director of the music.

‡ A florin is 40 cents.

staff of emoluments is carried through the whole score of the chamber, and that even during all the pauses of the instrument.

In the mean time, my grandfather visited the parents of his pupils in the afternoons, more on account of the latter than the former, taking a bit of bread in his pocket, from the abovementioned beer and bread by which he lived, and receiving, as a guest, only his little can of beer. But at last it happened, in the year 1763, exactly the year of my birth, on the 6th of August, probably through especial connection with higher powers, he was promoted to the most important station, one for which the rectorate, and the city, and all the Culmberg itself, could easily be given up; and when he numbered seventy-six years, four months, and eight days, he was actually promoted to the station above mentioned in the Neustadt churchyard. His wife, twenty years before, had preceded him, occupying a rival station, and waited for him. My parents went with me, then a child of five months old, to visit his dying-bed. A clergyman who was present, as my father has often told me, said, "Let the old Jacob lay his hand upon the child, that he may bless him." I was placed in the bed, and he laid his hand upon my head. Pious grandfather! often have I thought of thy cold, blessing hand, when fate has led me out of dark into brighter hours; and I needed to hold fast my faith in thy blessing, in this world, penetrated, governed, and animated by wonders and spirits.

My father was born in Neustadt, December 16th, 1727;—more, I should say, to the winter of life, than, like myself, to the spring, had not his excellent nature had the power to carve a good haven from an iceberg. But the Lyceum in Wunsiedel, could only be enjoyed or endured by him, as by Luther the school at Eisenach, as an *alumnus*, or poor scholar; for when my grandfather's salary, one hundred and fifty florins a year, was divided among many brothers and sisters, his part was exactly nothing, or at most *alumnus-bread*; therefore he went to the Gymnasium at Regensburg, not only to hunger in a larger city, but to cultivate the peculiar *flower* of his nature, as well as the leaves, and this was the science of music.

In the chapel of the Prince of Thurn and Taxis, the well-known connoisseur and patron of music, he could serve the saint for whose adoration he was born. Piano-playing

and general bass made him, forty years later, to be a favorite composer of church music in the principality of Bayreuth. On the evening of Good Friday, he often delighted himself and us, his children, with the exhibition of that holy power of music, the tones of which even to this day elevate and sanctify souls in the Catholic church. I must, alas, acknowledge, that, when I was lately in Regensburg, among the antiques and forgotten relics of that place, the oppressed life of my father was the most precious of all; and, when I was in the palace of Thurn and Taxis, and in the narrow streets where two portly persons could scarcely pass each other, I thought of his small means, and the narrow passages of his youthful life. Instead of the delightful science of music, he studied theology, both in Jena and Erlangen; perhaps for no better reason than this: to suffer himself to be plagued for a long time, even till his thirty-second year, as a domestic teacher in Bayreuth, where his son collected these particulars; for, in 1760, he obtained from the city authorities the post of organist and Tertius in Wunsiedel. In this case, he obtained under the Margrave of Bayreuth a better and earlier fortune than that candidate in Hanover, of whom I have read, who, at seventy years old, had received no better place in the church than what the churchyard offered.

Some of my hearers may fear, from what I have said, that I shall bring my father before them with a pitiful aspect, like some modern ultra-Christians, who cover their faces with a tear-steeped handkerchief. On the contrary, he lived, as it were, on wings, and was sought by the families of Brandenburg and Schopf as the most agreeable of companions, always full of wit and jests and amusing anecdotes. The faculty of social wit accompanied him through life; even when in his office he passed for a very severe pastor, and as it was called, in the pulpit, for a preacher of the Law. In his native city, he won his relations by his exciting preaching, and in Hof, in Voigtland, something yet more important, — a bride, and, what was far more difficult, the rich relations of his bride. If a citizen who, through cloth-weaving and veil-selling, had become wealthy, could not deny, of his two only daughters, the most beautiful, the most delicate and tenderly nurtured, and withal the most beloved, to a needy Tertius, who dwelt, with his creditors, a whole day's journey from them, so on the other side, this Tertius could only

with the reputation of great desert and shining pulpit gifts, and agreeable personal appearance, gain both daughter and parents; and an elevated soul must have raised the cloth-weaver above his cloth and his money, and talents and spiritual gifts must have appeared to him of more worth than the shining heaps of common wealth.

The 13th of October, 1761, the beloved went as a bride, with all her treasures, into his little narrow school-house, that fortunately was not made narrower by furniture. His cheerful life, his indifference to money, united with his entire confidence in his housekeeper, left in the Tertius's shell room enough for all travellers from Hof, who wished to rest there. My mother, for such were married people at that time, and there are a few such now, troubled herself as little as my father on account of this emptiness.

In my historical readings, hunger will accompany the steps of my hero, and will indeed be mentioned as often as feasting in Thümmel's Travels, or tea-drinking in Richardson's "Clarissa." I cannot but choose to say to Poverty, "Be welcome! so thou come not too late in life." Riches weigh more heavily upon talent than poverty. Under gold mountains and thrones, lie buried many spiritual giants. When, to the flame that the natural heat of youth kindles, the oil of riches is added, little more than the ashes of the phoenix remains; and only a Goethe has had the forbearance not to singe his phoenix wings at the sun of Fortune. For much gold, the poor historical Professor would not have had much in his youth. Fate does with the poet as we with singing birds, and overhangs the cage with darkness until he sings the tune we would have him sing. But preserve, just Providence, the *old man* from want! for hoary years have already bent him low, and he can no longer stand upright with the youth, and bear heavy burthens on his head. The old man needs rest in the earth even while he is upon it, for he can use only the present and a little of the future, for the future does not reflect for him as in a glass the blooming present. Only two steps from the couch of his last and deepest repose, with no other curtain than the flowers about the grandfather's chair of old age, he would yet slumber and rest a little, and, half-asleep, open his eyes once more upon the ancient stars and fields of his youth; and I have no objection,—since he has already made his best preparation for the other world,—if now in the evening, he should rejoice

over his breakfast, and in the morning take comfort in his bed, and now, when he is a second time a child, the world should appear again under the innocent form of delight in which it first came before him.

Only one false resolution of my father's could we place perhaps to the account of his necessities, that, instead of wooing with his whole heart the muse of sweet sounds, he gave himself, like a monk, to the office of preaching, and suffered his genius for music to be buried in a village church. Indeed, the church, according to the opinion of my grandparents, was then the provision-ship and air-balloon, and the needy son of the Muses sought to run into the quiet haven of the pulpit. But whoever is not forced by necessity, but feels within him, growing with his growth, an inclination and declination of his magnetic needle, let him follow its pointing, trusting to it, as to a compass in the desert.

Had the present Professor of his own history imitated his father as he desired, he would now, instead of these lectures, be holding sacred discourses, casual preachings, and other sermons, and he might even have had a place in the "Universal Magazine for Preachers," only, alas! he would have been puffed up more than duty demands.

But my father was in fact neither unfaithful to himself nor to the muse of sweet sounds. Did she not visit him as his first love in the vestal garments of the holy Virgin, and bring with her, every week, to the solitary, silent parsonage of Joditz, the sweetest church music? And on the other hand, another art dwelt with that of music, and sought its playroom in the pulpit of Joditz; for if, after an old saying, connoisseurs in music love wine, and if, according to Lavater, they seek good living, why, the chapel-master must still be his own butler and his own caterer; so, in my father the master of the chapel and the master of the altar were united. Eloquence, the prosaic, but near neighbor to Poetry, dwelt in my father's heart; and the same sunbeam of genius that, in the morning of his days, waked sweet sounds in him, as in the statue of Memnon, kindled later in life, in the pulpit, the warmer light and the thunder of a preacher of the Law.

My hearers will remark, that I dwell a long time on my relations, and praise them much; but I will immediately begin to speak of myself, and then shall scarcely come to a

pause. Indeed, the praise itself, that I here give my father, would not appear (if he yet lived) so important to him, as it is empty to me. If I placed myself before him in Eternity, there among the blessed, he would not be elated, that in the year 1818 I should inform the world, from my Professor's chair, that he was appointed by the Bayreuth government to be their composer of church-music. And with the same coldness to all praise, in some future time when I am among the blessed, should my own son speak of me,—ought he, because I no longer feel praise, to speak in a less animated strain of the applause my works have gained?

In general, my reverend hearers, would I ten times rather hold historical lectures over my ancestors than over myself. How altered would be the appearance of that distant and foreign time, if our relations did not pass through it, stamp it with our presence, and make it fraternal to us. That man is to be envied, who can retrace his history from ancestor to ancestor, and cover hoary time with the green mantle of youth. For if we are able to paint the time in which our ancestors lived, and themselves also only in the splendor and freshness of youth, then we should connect our posterity with ourselves, and paint them not as youths, but more properly as old men.

I return at last to the hero and subject of our historical lectures, and select especially the fact that he was born in Wunsiedel, a city of the Fichtelgebirge. That Fichtelgebirge, almost the highest region of Germany, gives to its inhabitants so much health, that they can dispense with the Alexander baths, and furnishes for them a tall, large wood growth, and the speaker invites his hearers to decide whether he appears as a confirmation of, or an exception to his assertion. It is particularly vexatious to a man whose dearest hope is, to acquire a name in his native city, that the Wunsiedlers swallow the *r* at the middle and end of every word, and it is well known that the name of Richter begins and ends with that letter.

Besides, the forefathers of the Wunsiedlers stand there with the laurel crowns of warlike bravery that I must win for myself, for it has been constantly known from history how they withstood the Hussites and were victorious; and, perhaps, if they will place Reviewers there instead of Hussites, I shall not be struck from the list of brave men, if they

will number my victories over my enemies, from the Hussite Nikolai to the Hussite Merkel.*

In former times, Wunsiedel was the sixth town in the so-called Six-Districts, at least for patriotism and united zeal in defence of our country and rights; in short, it was a sixth day of creation, and German fidelity and love and strength long continued to hold out therein.

I am willing to have been born in *thee*, little city of the high mountain, whose summits look down upon us like the heads of eagles. Thy mountain throne is embellished by the steps that lead to it, and thy fountains of health give the sick man strength to ascend to the wide throne above him, and to send his glance over distant villages and mountain plains. I am glad to have been born in thee, little, but good city of my affections.†

It is often observed that the first-born is usually of the female sex. To this observation the hero of this history is no exception, notwithstanding his right to be the first-born; for his parents were married in October, 1761, and he was born in March, 1763. There went before him a being, that on this earth was only a shadow, and began perhaps its life in the light of another world, without having discovered the light of this.

Men who have a firm hold on nothing else, delight in deep, far-reaching recollections of their days of childhood, and, in this billowy existence, they anchor on *that*, far more than on the thought of later difficulties. Perhaps for two reasons,—that in this retrospection they press nearer to the gate of life guarded by spiritual existences, and, secondly, that they hope, in the spiritual power of an earlier consciousness, to make themselves independent of the little, contemptible annoyances, that surround humanity. To my great joy, I am able to bring, from my twelfth or at furthest my fourteenth month, one pale, little remembrance, like the earliest and most frail of snow-drops, from the fresh soil of childhood. I recollect, namely, that a poor scholar loved me much, and that I returned his love, and that he carried me about in his arms, and, later, took me more agreeably

* Nikolai and Merkel, editors and printers of Reviews that had severely criticised the works of Jean Paul.—TR.

† Wunsiedel is a pleasant little town of about three thousand inhabitants. It lies between Bayreuth and Egar, the two extremities of the Fichtelgebirge, and higher on the mountain than either.

by the hand to the large, dark apartment of the older children, where he gave me milk to drink. This form, vanishing in distance, and his love, hover again over later years, but, alas, I no longer remember his name. If it were possible that he lives yet, far in his sixtieth year, and that, as a learned and well-informed man, these lectures should meet his eye, and that he should then recollect the little Professor that he bore in his arms and often kissed! Ah God, if this should be so, and he should write, or the *older* man should come to visit the *old* man! This little morning star of earliest recollection stands yet tolerably clear in its low horizon, but growing paler as the daylight of life rises higher. And now I remember only this clearly, that in earlier life I remembered every thing clearly.

As, in the year 1765, my father was called to be Pastor in Joditz, I can separate my Wunsiedler relics more easily from my childish recollections of Joditz. Under the parsonage roof of Joditz is now the second act of our little historical mono-drama, where, highly honored gentlemen and ladies, the hero of the piece has entered into a wholly different unfolding of character, for every division of my lectures is in a different dwelling-place. It is, especially in the history of these lectures, or the lecture on this history so skilfully and happily arranged, that, of the three unities of an historical piece, the first, that of place, is no more violated than that of time; for, as the hero must go from one place of residence to another, so from the entrance into life to the entrance into his Professorship, he must pass from one period of time into another. But he hopes, in the representation of the piece, that he shall scarcely offend the unity of time by growing older, although the great difficulty will be to preserve throughout the unity of interest. Our hero has already risen one step, and we have the satisfaction to meet him, whom we left in the first division only son of a Tertius, after two years as the son of a Pastor; for in 1765 my father was preferred to Joditz by the Lady Von Plotho, whose maiden name was Bodenhausen, the wife of the same Plotho who, in the beginning of the Seven Years' War of Frederic the Only, was a delegate to the Imperial Diet at Regensburg.*

* This was the most important event in the life of the Poet. In this little village of Joditz, too insignificant to be mentioned in any gazetteer

CHAPTER II.

WHICH INCLUDES THE TIME FROM AUGUST 1775, TO JANUARY 1776.
JODITZ.—VILLAGE IDYLS.

WE now find the Professor of his self-biography in the parsonage in Joditz, which, in a female's cap and a girl's petticoat, he entered with his parents. The Saale, springing like myself from the Fichtelgebirge, ran with me or after me there, as it did also when I removed afterward to Hof, pursuing its course and passing that city also. This river is the most beautiful, at least the longest in Joditz, and courses round it as if it were a little hill. The little place itself is traversed by a small brook that is crossed by a board for pedestrians. An ordinary castle and the pastor's house are the only distinguished buildings. The environs upon a level are not more than twice as large as the village itself. And yet is this village to the Professor of his own history far more important than the place of his birth; for here lived the most important, the boy olympiad of his life.

Never could I give my voice for the nineteen cities, that, according to Suidas, quarrelled for the honor of giving birth to Homer; as little for the different Dutch cities, that (according to Bayle) would have produced Erasmus.

What can the first day after nine months signify more than any day before? And can the place of the grave confer dishonor or advantage on its inhabitant more than the place where his cradle stood? Although so many princes, on the whole, have been born in their own cities, yet London, Paris, Berlin, Vienna, do not glory in them, else, on the contrary, cities and hamlets that have produced great vil-

I have been able to consult, he went as a little child of two years old, and remained till his thirteenth year. There he received those impressions, and his genius that direction, which followed him through life and influenced all his works. Never is he so much at home in his works, as in the little village parsonage and church. The joys of humble, domestic life are the joys he delights to describe. The village festivals, the church consecrations, are all dear to his deeply religious spirit: the lowly God-acre (churchyard) is the place he delights in, as the source of devout contemplation; and his grandfather's altar, the Culmburg, was the spot he had always before him.—Tr.

lains, must on that account take shame to themselves. At furthest, the land of one's birth might arrogate the honors of birth-place, if, through the predominance of good births, any thing could be decided as to the climate of the place, or the character of the inhabitants; but a Pindar in Bœotia does not make there a swallow-summer.*

But the proper birth-place, that is indeed the spiritual, is the first and longest place of education; and if it is so for these great, world-renowned men who rarely need, and more rarely make use of education, how much more for hamlet and village celebrated mediocre men like my hero, who has gained so much through nurture and education, both in connection with reading, which is only a more important instruction, that he has become what he is, a Hildburghausen Counsellor, a Heidelberg Doctor of Philosophy, a threefold member of different societies, and the present unworthy possessor of the Professorship of this self-history.

Let no poet suffer himself to be born or educated in a metropolis, but if possible, in a hamlet, at the highest in a village. The excesses and the fascinations of a great city are to the excitable, weak soul of a child, like supping at a midnight table a draught of burnt waters, or bathing in fiery wine. Life exhausts itself in boyhood, and, after enjoying the greatest, he has nothing more to wish but smaller joys and village pleasures. But one does not gain so much when he comes from a city to a village, as on the contrary, from Joditz to Hof, that is, from a village to a city. I am thinking of that which is most important to the poet—Love! He must, in this city, draw about the warm zone of the friends and acquaintance of his parents, the greater and colder number from the icy circle of unloved persons, who meet and pass him with the same indifference that a ship's company on the great ocean meet and pass another ship, freighted with those they do not love. But in a village they love all the inhabitants, and not a nursling is there buried, but every one knows its name, and illness, and the tears it has cost. The Joditzers have accustomed themselves to dwell in each other; and this heartfelt sympathy for every one who bears the form of man, and which overflows upon strangers and

* The meaning seems to be this: one Pindar does not make a Parnassus of Bœotia, because born in the latter place, any more than *one swallow* makes a summer.

beggars, engenders a concentrated humanity, and rules all the pulsations of the heart. And then when a poet wanders from such a village, he brings to every one he meets a piece of his heart, and he must journey far before the whole heart is expended upon the streets and lanes.

There is yet a greater misfortune than that of being educated in a great city, namely, that of being educated like many aristocratic children, who journey whole years through strange cities and among strange men, and know no home but the coach-box.

We approach nearer again to our hero, the pastor's son, whose life in Joditz I should best describe if I called it, as I look back upon it, a whole course of Idyllic years; but, as wholesome cloudy weather often precedes a clear day, these clouds were rich in instruction, although gathered first at the end of ten years. My life consisted in learning every thing. Like a prince, I revelled in half a dozen teachers, but I had scarcely a good one. I yet remember the winter evening delight, when I received from the city a respectable A B C book, with a pointer to show the letters. Upon the cover, with true golden letters (and not without good reason were they of gold), the contents of the first page were written, which consisted in alternate red and black letters. A gambler wins with gold and *rouge et noir* less delight than I by that book, whose pointer I did not once apply. After I had at home gone privately through the lower school classes, I entered, in a green taffety cap, but already in breeches (for the school-mistress had in that established my weak claims), the high school, namely, the one whose school-house was opposite the parsonage.

As usual, all in the school were dear to me, especially the lean, consumptive, but animated schoolmaster, with whom I shared all his patient anxiety, when he lay in ambush behind his bird-cage, placed in the window, to allure some unwary passing goldfinch, or when he spread his net without in the snow, and caught a yellow-hammer from the host of birds. In the midst of the winter sultriness of the crowded school-room, I remember the delight with which I drew out the pegs that secured the canvas over air-holes bored in the wooden walls, and drew into my open mouth the exciting refreshment of the frosty air from without. Every new copy-book from the master delighted me as others are delighted with pictures. I envied every one who

said his lesson well, and I enjoyed reading together with my class, as singers enjoy the blessed harmony of their music.

Was it 12 o'clock, and the dinner not ready, I and my deceased brother Adam (although a bird's nest was dearer to him than the whole seat of the Muses) desired nothing better, for we flew with our hunger back into the school-room, not to lose a moment when the apartment was empty and quiet. Much might be thought of this sacrifice to the love of learning, but I know well that a great part of it was owing to the common desire of children to depart from the every-day, established order. We willingly dined an hour later, just as on this account the late hour of fast-days delighted us. Was the whole house in confusion, either through whitewashing* the apartments, or moving into another house, or through the arrival of many guests, we little fools could think of nothing finer!

Alas! I closed for ever upon myself the school door by an untimely complaint to my father, that a tall peasant's son (Zah is his name for posterity) had cut me a little on the knuckle with a clasp-knife. In his ambitious anger, my father resolved to instruct my brother and myself alone, and I must have the mortification to see every winter the children running into that haven that was shut to me. In the mean time, the rival joy remained for me to carry frequently to the schoolmaster the bulls and decrees of his village Pope, which, instead of the Romish Agnus Dei and consecrated Christmas-box, consisted of a butcher's joint, or a little dish with his dinner.

Four hours in the forenoon, and three hours in the afternoon, our father gave to our instruction, which consisted of merely learning by heart sentences, catechisms, Latin words, and long grammatical lessons. We were obliged to learn the long rules of the genders, every declension, together with the exceptions, and the accompanying examples in Latin verses, without understanding one word of them. Did my father on a beautiful summer's day go into the country, such cursed examples as *panis*, *piscis*, were left to be learnt by heart for the next morning. As for my brother Adam, to whom the long summer's day scarcely sufficed

* The reader will recollect the Fichtelgebirge houses were white-washed every spring.—TR.

for his activity and childishness, not an eighth part remained in his head, for rarely had he the good fortune to have such precious declensions as *scamnum* or *cornu* among the number, of which he certainly knew how every time to recite the Latin half. Besides, you will easily believe, gentlemen and ladies, that it was not an easy thing, in a clear, blue, June day, when the omnipotent father was not at home, to make oneself a fast prisoner in a corner of the apartment, and delve and engrave two or three pages of vocables in the head. In a blessed long summer's day it was not easy, but more so in a short, dark December's day, and we must not wonder if my brother always bore marks of such days. The Professor of his own history ventures to make this general statement, that he was never in his *school life* flogged in general, neither in part, not to say he was never completely flogged in his life.

Let not this mere learning by heart throw a false light upon my unwearied and amiable father, who sacrificed the whole day to writing out and committing to memory the weekly sermon for the country people, merely out of extreme pastoral conscientiousness, although he had many times proved the power of his extemporaneous eloquence. In his weekly visit to the school, and in doubling his public exercises with the children, yes, in every thing, he went beyond his duty by his voluntary and gratuitous services. And how he hung with a warm, tender, parental heart on me, and easily, with every little sign of talents or improvement, burst out into joyful tears! This father committed no other fault in his whole plan of education,—rarely as it happens,—except faults of the head, none of the will.

To *school* teachers, especially, is this method to be recommended, since so much toil and trouble is never saved as where the pupil relies on the book as a *vicarius* or *adjunct* of the teacher, and his *curator absentis*, and, like a powerful *clairvoyant*, feels himself magnetized. This intellectual self-repose of the children admits of extension to such a degree, that I will venture, by means of the post-office alone, to preside over whole schools in North America, or over such as are fifty days' journey removed from me in the old world; for I will merely write for my school-boys what they have to learn by heart every day, and I will have an insignificant man, to whom they shall repeat what they have learned. And so I shall enjoy the consciousness of their fine spiritual fast's day *reminisceres*.

In *Speccius*, I translated by command much of the beginning into Latin, with the joy with which I ascended and plucked from every new branch of learning. The last half I turned of myself into Latin without being able to find a corrector of its faults. In the dialogues in Langen's Grammar I guessed at the German from longing to understand their contents; but my father would not allow me to translate while in Joditz. In a grammar of the Greek language, written in Latin, I studied, hungering and thirsting, the alphabet of that language, and at last wrote tolerable Greek, at least as far as belongs to the handwriting. How easily and willingly could I have learnt more! The spirit, if not the substance, of a language entered easily into me, as the third lecture of our winter term will best prove to the world.

Once in a winter's afternoon, I might have been eight or nine years old, my father brought me a little Latin dictionary that I was to learn by heart, but first I was to read him a page. I read *lingua*, notwithstanding his frequent correction, not *ling-wa*, but always *lin-gua*, and repeated the same fault in spite of his repeated corrections, so often, that, with angry impatience, he took the book from me, and deprived me for ever of learning it. I cannot, even now, discover the source of this obstinate stupidity; but my heart tells me, that through my whole life I have never been self-willed even in play, and never to my father, who at this very time had given me a schoolboy's pleasure through a new book. This historical feature is purposely exhibited in our lecture-room, that the impartiality of our historical investigator and Professor may appear through the shadows he throws upon his hero, whom he would, willingly, if truth only were stated, represent in the most brilliant light. Besides, how often in life, either with or without understanding, do poor, innocent men say *lin-gua* instead of the more correct *ling-wa*,—and even with the tongue (*lingua*) that at the same time signifies language (*lingua*)!

Further, history,—as well ancient as modern, natural history, the most interesting descriptions of the earth, arithmetic and astronomy, as well as orthography,—all these sciences I became sufficiently acquainted with, but not in Joditz, where I was indeed twelve years old without knowing a word of them, but many years later, at different intervals and by fragments, from the *Universal Library*. So

craving was my thirst for books in this intellectual Sahara Desert, that every book was to me a fresh, green oasis,—particularly the *Orbis Pictus*,* and the “Dialogues in the Kingdom of the Dead.” Only my father’s library, like many public ones, was rarely open, except when he was not in it, nor at home. I, at least, often lay upon the flat roof of a wooden lattice bedstead (like a great cage for animals),† and crept like the great jurist, Baldus, upon the book-shelves to obtain one for myself. They may well consider that in a thinly peopled village and a solitary parsonage, to such a thirsting soul, a man speaking in a book must be as precious as the richest foreign guest, a Mæcenas, a travelling prince, a first American to a European. A novice, ignorant of the A B C of history, I did not in the least understand the quarto volume of the “Conversations in the Kingdom of the Dead;” but I read it, as well as the newspapers, as if it were a geographical work, and could relate much from both. As I related to my father out of the book, I told him that one evening during his absence I had read the history of the love of Roxelane for the Turkish Emperor. I was led to this by newspaper extracts from an ancient noble lady. He received, from his patroness Plotho in Zedwiz, a present of the Bayreuth newspaper; monthly or quarterly,—as often as he went to visit her,—he brought home these for a month or a quarter of a year, and he and I read the great heap with profit, as it came to us more in volumes than in sheets. A political newspaper, read, not in sheets, but in volumes, communicates real instruction, as there is room enough in a whole volume of leaves to correct previous impressions, and get the true one, and like the air, whose true color is not to be seen in parts and portions, but in the whole circumference. as then only (in its whole mass) it obtains its heavenly blue. Every morning I bore my news atlas to the castle of the old Lady Von Reitzenstein, and prophesied, at the morning coffee, one event and another from the news I brought, and allowed them to praise me. I remember yet the noun of multitude, at that time often repeated, *confederacy*, (it is highly probable it was the Poland confed-

* Göethe mentions the “*Orbis Pictus*” of Amos Comenius as one of the books that delighted his childhood.—TR.

† In the houses of the Fichtelgebirge, as the bed often stood in the common room, it was inclosed in a sort of wooden wicker-work.—TR.

eracy,) but I do not recollect the least interest taken in it, probably because I understood nothing of the whole matter. Thus impartially and calmly were Polish affairs considered in our village, as well by myself as by the old Lady Reitzenstein, my hearer.

The intellectual fibres of our hero, thirsting for learning, penetrated and wound themselves around every thing from which they could extract their aliment. He prepared clocks, whose dial-plates were good counsellors, with pendulums and wheel and weights, and stood well. He found a place for a sun-dial, and wrote upon a wooden plate the figures with ink, and drew the white line with the gnomons, and placed it firmly near the tower clock, so that he could frequently tell the exact time. He made dials, as many cities do, rather than clocks, as Lichtenbergh makes the titles of books before the books themselves. The present writer shows in *little* a box in which he established a miniature *étui* library of his own Joditz works, made from the ribbon cuttings of his father's octavo sermons, sewed together and neatly trimmed. The contents were theological and Protestant, and consisted of a little explanatory note, written under a verse in Luther's Bible, whence he copied it. The verses themselves were left out of the little books. Thus lay concealed in our Frederic Richter already a little Frederic Von Schlegel, who in the same manner in his selections, "Lessing's Geist," gives his opinion upon passages in certain writers, without the passages themselves.

In the same manner our hero threw himself upon painting. Many ruling potentates sat, or rather lay to him, when, with a fork, he pricked through their features upon a thick sooty sheet of paper, placed under the engraving, and afterwards pressed it upon a sheet of white paper. Whether he might not, under sunny influences, have attained the fame of Raphael Mengs, remains to be guessed, for, unlike this artist, they had to beat him *from* not *to* painting, and, when he afterwards received a box of colors, he colored the whole *Orbus Pictus* after the life. I could not, at this time, believe all that was in the box of colors, every thing is so painted in memory—the pale red leather ball, the four-cornered red tile, the rounded palette, the splendid colored shells, and the green and gold beetle yet shimmering in that box. It were yet something less judicious, from his art of making herrings in winter, to conclude that he could have been a

great financial correspondent. His artifice for collecting herrings at such a distance from the coast consisted in this. He waded into the brook with his herring bread, and softly raising a stone under which was a gudgeon, or smaller fish, he immediately placed it in a hollow cabbage stalk, which he called a herring cask and salted it in, and when the little cask was full, he would have had herrings to eat, if they had not all been spoilt. Still worse would it be to consider the little financier the precursor of surrogate discoveries, because he placed the brown, dried halves of pears upon pieces of broken glass like doves' feet, and served them up as hams ready for eating, or that he drove snails to pasture.* In fact, every future investigator of the history of the present historian would appear extremely ridiculous to me, if, out of the broken and scattered fragments of any other childhood, he should collect and read something wonderful. The foolish man would appear to me like that Paris barber, who, with the help of a Jesuit, placed together many of the bones of an elephant, and sold them as the true skeleton of the German giant, Teutoback. The beard does not make a philosopher, although a sailor and a criminal may each come from his ship and prison with that appendage, because they have not been under the barber's razor.

The boundless activity of our hero expended itself more in intellectual than in physical experiments, but he followed all with inexpressible delight. • Thus he invented, instead of a new language, a new writing character. He took the calendar signs from the Almanac, or geometrical out of an old book, or chemical, or original from his own invention, and putting all together, composed a wholly new alphabet. When it was ready, the first use he made of his *solitaire* alphabet, was to clothe therein a couple of pages of copied matter; thus he was his own secret writer, and his concealed play was with himself. Without peeping into Büttner's comparative tables of alphabetic characters, he could read his own as easily as the common, as he placed this literally under his own as a warrant, and had only to glance at it to read the secret.

At this time little will be thought of said historical investigator, if, out of this ciphering and deciphering, which

* Richter means here to ridicule those biographers who infer an original genius for their heroes from the nature of their sports.

even at this early time was less valuable for its contents than its form, he should have seen himself the incipient Counsellor of the Embassy, or even the ambassador himself; for I have, in fact, gained the character of *legationsrath*, and could to-day decipher many things.

To music was my soul, like my father's, every where open, and had for it a hundred Argus ears. When the school-master sent the church worshippers home with the final cadences of the organ, my whole little elevated being laughed and leaped as in a spring morning; or, when the morning after the night dance of the *Kirchweithe*,* (at which my father the next Sunday sent loud, thundering anathemas,) when the foreign musicians with their hautboys and fiddles collected the contributions of the peasants before the wall of the parsonage court, I climbed upon the wall, and a clear jubilee echoed through my narrow breast, and the delightful airs of spring played within, with the spring-time of life, and I forgot every syllable of my father's sermon. I devoted whole hours upon an old untuned harpsichord, whose only tuning hammer and tuning master were the winds and the weather, to thundering out my phantasies, which certainly were as free and bold as any in Europe, as I knew neither note nor touch; for my accomplished pianist father would teach me neither note nor finger.

But if accidentally, like the tune-setter for a rope or fairy dance, I attained with my fingers on the piano a short melody or harmony of three or six strings, I was like a man in an ecstasy, and repeated this discovery of my fingers as incessantly as any new German poet repeats the idea or discovery of the brain by which he gained his first applause. He acts, at least, in a more friendly manner than Heliogabalus, who condemned his cook to continue eating a bad soup until he had discovered a better; on the contrary, the Leipzig fair has entertained the reading world with many an *excellent* soup that they have tasted as continually as the imperial cook tasted the bad.

In the future literary history of our hero, it will appear doubtful whether he were not perhaps born more for the philosophic than the poetic art. In the earliest time, the

* A church consecration is one of the principal religious ceremonies in the German villages, at which, as Paul relates, foreign musicians and strollers of all sorts collected.—TR.

word *philosophy* was but a second name for the Orient, and to me, like the open gate of heaven, through which I saw far extended gardens of joy. Never shall I forget, that which I have never yet related to human being,—the inward experience of the birth of self-consciousness, of which I well remember the time and place. I stood one afternoon, a very young child, at the house door, and looked at the logs of wood piled on the left, when, at once, that inward consciousness *I am a Me* came like a flash of lightning from heaven, and has remained ever since. Then was my existence conscious of itself, and forever. Deceptions of memory are here scarcely imaginable, for no exterior occurrence could mingle with a consciousness so concealed in the holy sanctuary of man, whose novelty alone has given permanence to the every day circumstances that accompanied it.

It appears to me best, in order to represent the Joditz life of our Hans Paul (for so we must continue to call him) in the truest manner, to lead him through the whole of an Idyllic year, and to divide the normal year of four seasons into four Idyllic quarters. Four Idyls will exhaust his happiness.

Let no one wonder at an Idyllic reign, or Arcadian world in a little village and humble parsonage. A tulip-tree, whose flower-branches shall overshadow the whole garden, may grow in the smallest bed, and the life-giving air of joy can be breathed from a window as well as in the wide wood under the broad heaven. Is not the human spirit, with all its infinite, heavenly expansion, enfolded in a body of six feet high, with a covering of Malpighian* nerves, and capillary tubes, with only five narrow world-windows of senses to open for the boundless round-eyed, round-sunned *All!* And yet it discerns and reproduces an *All!*

I scarcely know with which of the Idylline quarters to begin, for each is a little heavenly introduction to the next; however, the climax of joys will be most apparent, if we start with winter, and January. In the cold, our father, like an Alpine herdsman, came down from the upper altitude of his study; and to the great joy of the children, dwelt in the plain of the common every-day room of the family. In

* Malpighi was a celebrated physician who decomposed the skin.
—TR.

the morning, he sat by the window and learned his Sunday's sermon by heart, and the three sons, Fritz, (who I myself am,) Adam and Gotlieb, for Henry came afterwards, carried by turns the full cup of coffee to him, and still more gladly the empty one back, as the bearer could pick out the unmelted remains of the sugar candy, which he took against a cough, from the bottom. Out of doors, the sky covered all things with silence—the brook with ice, the village with snow; but in our room there was truly life; under the stove a pigeon-house, on the windows green and goldfinch cages; on the floor the invincible bulldog, our *Bonne*, the night-guardian of the courtyard, and a poodle, the pretty *Scharmantelle*, a present from the Lady Von Plotho, and close by, the kitchen, with the two maids; further off towards the other end of the house, our stable with all sorts of neat, swinish, and feathered animals, and all their possible noises;* the threshers also with their flails might be heard in the court of the parsonage. In this way, surrounded by society, the male portion of the household spent their forenoons in tasks of memory, while the female portion were as busily employed in cooking.

No occupation whatever excludes holidays. I also had my airing festivals, equivalent to a holiday upon the water, when I could travel out in the snow of the courtyard and to the threshing in the barn. Nay, was there a difficult embassy to be transacted in a village; for example, a message to the schoolmaster or the tailor, I was sure to be dispatched in the middle of my lesson; thus I could breathe the free, cold air, and measure myself in the new snow. At noon also, before our own dinner, we children could have the hungry satisfaction to see the threshers in the kitchen fall to and devour theirs.

The afternoon was still more significant, and richer in joys. Winter shortened and sweetened our lessons. In the long twilight, the father walked to and fro, and the children trotted after him, creeping under his night-gown, and holding on, if they could reach his hands. At the sound of the vesper bell, we placed ourselves in a circle, and devoutly chanted the hymn, *Die finstre Nacht bricht stark herein*. (The gloomy night is gathering in.) In villages

* The reader will recollect that in the Fichtelgebirge houses all the domestic animals were under the same roof with the family.

only, for in towns there is more night than day work, have the evening chimes a meaning and beauty, and are indeed the swan-song of the day : the evening bell is, as it were, the muffle of the overloud heart, and like a *Ranz des Vaches* of the plain, calls men from toil and tumult into the land of silence and of dreams. After watching for the moonlight of the candle-lighting to appear under the kitchen door, we saw the wide room at once illuminated and secured ; namely, the window shutters were closed and bolted ; behind these window breastworks and bastions the children felt secure, and closely nested against *Knecht Ruprecht*, who could not enter, but only grumbled and growled from without.*

About this time also, we children might undress, and skip up and down in long trailing night-gowns. Idyllic joys of various kinds alternated. Our father either had his quarto Bible, interleaved with blank folio sheets before him, and was marking at each verse the book that had commented upon it ; or he had his ruled music paper, and, undisturbed by the noise of the children, was composing whole concerts of church music. In both cases, and especially in the last, I observed the writing, and was rejoiced when, through the pauses of various instruments, whole quarters of pages were at once filled up. He constructed his internal melody without help from external tones, (as Reichardt advises,) and in spite of the children's noise.

The children sat playing on that long writing and eating table, and even under it. Among the joys that belonged to this sweet time of childhood was this ; that during the severe winter's frosty weather, the long table, on account of the warmth, was shoved to the stove-bench ; † and our gain consisted in this, that we could sit or run upon it. . . .

Then how did the winter evening rise in value when, once a week, the old errand woman coated in snow, with her fruit and flesh, and general ware basket, entered the kitchen from the city Hof, and we all had the distant town in minia-

* *Knecht Ruprecht* is the hobgoblin or Raw-head-and-bloody-bones of German children.—TR.

† To understand this passage, the reader must recollect the *one* apartment of the houses of the Fichtelgebirge, the large porcelain stove, and the table used for all domestic purposes, which, when shoved to the bench that surrounded the stove, must have formed the coach-like domesticity that Richter loved —TR.

ture before our eyes, nay, before our noses, for there were pastry cakes also.

In our first childish years, the father permitted, after the early supper on winter evenings, yet another joyful repast, when the house maid brought her distaff into the common apartment, illuminated with all the light the pine torch could afford, kindled, as in Westphalia, from a pine branch.

At this supper table, as I now remember it, beside confectionary, and ices, and the popular tale of *Aschenbrodel*,† was also the pine-apple artificially raised by the maid herself,—namely, the history of the shepherd and his wolf-fight with wolves, with whom at one time his own danger, and at another that of his provision, was the greatest. Yet I felt the increasing happiness of the shepherd as my own, and remark only from my own experience, that the children in fictitious stories are far more interested in the gradual progression of happiness than in that of misfortune, and that they wish the path of heaven should lead up eternally, but the path of hell should go down only as far as is necessary to glorify and exalt the throne of heaven. These childish wishes would also later be the wishes of men, and they would for their fulfilment, make stronger demands upon the poet, were only a new heaven as easy to create as a new hell. Every tyrant can invent unheard of pains, but to discover unknown joys, they must themselves know the value of them. The seat of torture is the skin; upon which a hundred hells, from inch to inch, may pitch their tents, but the heaven of the five senses hovers, airy and uniform, above us.

At the end of the winter evening, a horrible wasp-sting or vampire's tongue threatened our hero. The children at nine o'clock were sent to bed in the guest's chamber, in the second story; my brother in a bed in the common apartment, and I in a room that I shared with my father. There, until he had finished his two hours' long night-reading, I lay with my head under the bed clothes, in the cold agony of fear of ghosts, and saw in the darkness the lightning from the cloudy heaven of spirits; and it seemed to me as if man himself was spun round by spirit-worms. I suffered thus helplessly two long hours, until, at last, my father came up, and, like a morning sun, chased away the spectres, like dreams, and the

* "*Aschenbrodel*" is probably the name of a popular German tale, with which the translator is unacquainted.

next morning the ghostly torment was as completely forgotten, as if it had been a dream; but only to appear again the next evening. Yet have I never mentioned this to any one, until to-day I tell it to the world.

This fear of ghosts was not so much created as nourished by my father himself. He spared us not one of all the spiritual appearances of which he had heard, and even told us some which he believed himself to have experienced; but, like the old theologians, he united with a firm belief in them, a firm courage *against* them, and Christ upon the cross was to him a shield against all spirits. Many children, who are physically timid, appear courageous against spirits, but this is merely from a want of imagination. On the contrary, a child like myself trembles before the *invisible* world, which his fancy forms and peoples, but arms himself easily against the *visible*, as this never reaches the depth and greatness of the invisible. Thus an eminent physical danger, such as a furious horse, a clap of thunder, war, or an alarm of fire, made me tranquil and self-possessed, as I was susceptible of fear, only through the imagination, and not by the senses. A ghost, could I have survived the first shudder, would have restored me again to common life, if it did not again, through gesture or sound, precipitate me into the endless kingdom of Phantasie. But how are we now to be preserved by education from the tragical over mastery of the spirit-invoking imagination? Not through contradiction, and the Wagnerish* solution of the monsters in the light of day, for the possibility of the unexplained exceptions, retains firm hold of our deepest convictions; but sometimes, partly through prosaic solutions, and familiarity with places and times, where formerly the imagination kindled its enchanted vapor, and partly through means by which the imagination is armed against the imagination, and spirits are opposed to spirits; to the Devil—God!

It happened through peculiar circumstances that I was sometimes afraid of ghosts in the daytime. Thus at a funeral, before the procession, headed by the pastor and school-master, with the children, and the cross, moved from the parsonage by the church, over to the church-yard, passing through the village, where it was joined by the singers, I was obliged to carry my father's great Bible through the

* See Faust.

church into the sacristy. Carelessly and full of courage, I went at a gallop through the shadowy, silent, listening church into the narrow sacristy—but who can represent to himself the pale, trembling rush of fear, before the after-rushing world of spirits at one's heels, with which I shot from the church door—and if it could be described, who would not laugh? Nevertheless, I always undertook, without opposition, the office of carrying the Bible to the sacristy, and concealed my terror in my own breast.

We come now to the great Idyl time, the Joditz spring and summer. Both seasons fall from various causes, especially in the country, into one Idyl. The spring dwells only essentially in the heart; out upon the earth, it is absolute summer, which is every where established upon the present, upon fruition.* Is it merely necessary in villages, to draw away the curtain of snow from the stage or earth, for its joys to begin. The city has its pleasures only in the winter. Ploughing and sowing are a countryman's pleasure-harvest, and for a pastor who does his own farming, they open new scenes to his secluded sons. Then were we poor children, who had been imprisoned by the winter in the narrow parsonage court, by the heaven-commissioned angel, the spring, freed and emancipated into the fields and meadows and gardens. Then we ploughed, sowed, planted; mowed and made hay, cut the corn and harvested it. Every where, the father stood by and helped, and the children assisted him, I especially, as the oldest. Only imagine, dear hearer, what it was to be freed, not merely from city walls, which sometimes inclose whole fields, but from the walls of a court, and to flee away over a whole village, into the uninclosed circle, and to look down from above, into the village, and see what they could not see from beneath.

My father did not stand by the field laborers as an overseer or taskmaster, (although they were feudal tenants,) but as a friendly shepherd of souls that would take part at the same time with nature, and with his spiritual children. While I see ecclesiastics and proprietors and avaricious men so richly furnished from head to foot with suckers, so that they draw every thing to themselves, I find in my father

* Jean Paul means here to indicate the rapid changes of season in a northern climate. He means to say, that while the heart is anticipating spring, it is already summer out upon the earth.—TR.

rather the diffusing system, and that he thought ten times a day of giving, although he had little for the purpose, but scarcely once of taking, by which he might have had something to give. And then, later in life, I have seen so many human insects furnished only with pincers good to wound, while *he* held in his hand nothing but those birth-forceps which merely bring the new life to its birth, and preserve it. Heavens! what a difference, and why is it not more considered! Are they just merchants, pastors and noblemen, who, knowing also what belongs to them, open their hands only as bird-climbers, to clutch at what is above them, or open merely to shut them again!

Now, in fact, life began with us under a pure heaven. The morning sparkled with the undried dew, when I carried his coffee to my father, to the pastor's garden, lying outside the village, where, in a small pleasure-house open on every side, he committed his sermon to memory. In the evening, our mother brought us, for our second meal, the salad prepared by herself, and currants and raspberries from the garden. It belongs to the unacknowledged country pleasures, that of being able to sup in the evenings without kindling a light. After we had enjoyed this, the father seated himself with his pipe in the open air,—that is, in the walled court of the parsonage, and I and my brother sprang about in our night-gowns in the fresh evening air, as freely as the crossing swallows above us. We flew nimbly here and there, till, like them, we bore us orderly to our nests.

The most beautiful of all summer-birds, meanwhile, was a tender, blue butterfly, which, in this beautiful season fluttered about our hero, and was his first love. This was a blue-eyed peasant-girl of his own age, with a slender form and an oval face somewhat marked with the small-pox, but with the thousand traits that, like the magic circles of the enchanter's wand, take the heart a prisoner. Auguste or Augustina dwelt with her brother Romer, a delicate youth, who was known as a good accountant, and as a good singer in the choir. It did not, indeed, come to a declaration of love on the side of Paul, or it would appear in this division of the readings already printed, but he played his little romance in a lively manner, from a distance, as he sat in the pastor's pew in the church, and she in the seat appropriated to women, apparently near enough to look at each

other without being satisfied. And yet this was only the beginning; for when, at evening, she drove her cow home from the meadow pasture, he instantly knew the well-remembered sound of the cow-bell, and flew to the court wall to see her pass, and give her a nod as she went by; then ran again down to the gateway to the speaking-grate, she, the nun without, and he the monk within, to thrust his hand through the bars, (more he durst not do on account of the children without.) in which there were some little dainty, sugared almonds, or something still more costly, that he had brought for her from the city. Alas! he did not arrive in many summers three times to such happiness as this. But he was obliged to devour all the pleasures, and almost all the sorrows within himself. His almonds, indeed, did not all fall upon stony ground, but in the Eden of his own eyes, for there grew out of them a whole hanging garden in his imagination, blooming, and full of fragrance, and he walked in it whole weeks long. For pure love will only *bestow*, and through making the beloved happy, is happy! And, could it give an *eternity* of ever-increasing happiness, what were more blessed than love?

The sound of this cow-bell remained for him a long time the *Ranz de Vach* from the high distant Alps of childhood, and yet will his old heart's blood roll in billows through his veins, when this sound again hovers in the air. There are tones from the wind harp that, playing on the spot are beautiful, but farther off more beautiful still, and in the distance. I might, at their softened sound, weep for pleasure. We associate love with even the slightest sound; be it only a cow-bell, its Orphic enchantment is doubled, and the distant, invisible waves of harmony lead the heart into the eternal, and we know not whether it is near or distant, and man weeps joyfully at the same time over what he possesses and what he desires.

In this focus of love, Paul remained opposite to Augustina, and lived whole years, without so much as touching her hand. Of a kiss indeed, he could never dream. If sometimes a homely servant-maid of his parents, whom he did not love, rashly and bashfully laid one upon his lips, soul and body rushed unconsciously and innocently together in that kiss—but the mouth of a beloved which, at a distance, shone warmly down like the sun upon the most inward spiritual love, would have immersed him in the warmest heaven,

and left him entranced, and evaporating in a glowing ether—and yet it must be confessed; that once or twice in Joditz he was thus entranced. In his thirteenth year, when his father received a much richer parsonage, he, or rather his eyes, were driven two miles distant from his beloved. His father, out of love for his old residence, had taken with him to his richer parish a young tailor, whom he entertained for many weeks. When he returned, our hero furnished him with many pretty Potentates, that he had sketched with wax and soot, and with his color-box had colored after life, to carry to Augustina, with the commission that the knights and princes were made by himself, and he presented them to her as an eternal *souvenir*.

Another love passage from the same period, and that endured no longer than dinner-time, belongs entirely to him, for the young lady knew nothing of it. As he sat wholly sunk in deep silence at a respectable table in Koditz, surrounded with grown up young people, the above-mentioned young lady sat opposite, and, in appearance, was one of them. There swelled in his heart, as he looked at her, a love inexpressible in sweetness, seemingly inexhaustible, a gushing of the heart, a heavenly annihilation and dissolving of the whole being into her eyes. She said not a word to the enchanted boy, nor he to her. Had she only bowed, or wafted a kiss to the poor parsonage boy, he had passed from heaven to heaven. Nevertheless, there remains the memory of the feeling of the moment, more than of her face, of which he retains nothing but the scars. As this beauty is already the second that has been thus *marked*, (in later readings more will enter,) the Professor considers it his duty to declare to all vaccinated fair readers, that he knows how to value *their* beauty as well and as highly as he did at that time a different fashion of face. And he pledges himself, in connection with this discussion of beauty, that every female face whose so-called ugliness has no moral cause, he can without cosmetic artifice, without paint or pomatum-box, without snow or soap-water, and without night-masks,* make in the highest degree charming and enchanting;—if she will only sing to him some evening

* Ladies sometimes sleep in medicated masks in order to procure a delicate complexion, or to defend a delicate one from the severe air of a northern climate.

a song composed of heart-words, no one shall be more beautiful than the singer,—but naturally only in *his* eyes—for who can speak for another?

This was confirmed by the very person in question; for when, twenty years afterwards, he found himself opposite to her in Hof, the scars only, the pit-marks remained. She was faded and bent, and I name her not!

Pure love has as illimitable power to create and elevate, as the common has to depress and destroy. It would obtain a more powerful hold of us in representation, had it not been so often described; but for this reason only are so many thousand books endured, that only paint it. Take from a man, who, in the enchanting time of love, looks upon the landscape, the stars, flowers and mountains, sounds and songs, pictures and poems, yes, even the living and the dead with poetic enjoyment;—take from him love, and he has lost the tenth Muse, or rather the mother of all the Muses; and every one feels in later years, when he prohibits himself this sacred inspiration, that of all the Muses, the tenth has failed him.

We come now to the Sunday of our Paul, in which his Idyl gains in splendor. Sunday appears to have been created for pastors, and pastors' children. Our Paul enjoyed especially a great many trinity Sundays, although, through all the twenty-seven, not one more summer Sunday came into the world and the church than in other years.

In cities, there are birthdays of princes and great men, and fair-time, the true *Trinitatis*. Paul began, on splendid, shining Sunday mornings, his enjoyment in this way: Before church, he went through the village with a bunch of keys, jingling them by the way, to show himself, and opened the pastor's garden with one of them, to bring roses from thence to adorn the reading-desk. In the church itself it was already cheerful, as the long windows admitted the sun, and the cold ground and the women's seats were already penetrated with broad beams of light that circled about the seat of the enchanting Augustina. The joy also is not to be despised, which he, together with his brothers in office, felt, when, after church, and before dinner, they carried to the feudal peasants of the week the lawful half-pound of bread and the money collected—especially as the father cut the bread very large, which was a joy to the peasants; and children, Paul particularly, love to carry joy into a house.

He had also to carry to the peasant Römer his portion of the bread, and found himself thus nearer to the saint of his church and heart,—but always in vain. For in his perspective painting of love ten steps more or less were something; and only imagine him, by some singular good fortune, to have stood but half a step from her!—But I will not hint—(for in that case he would have spoken out audibly for himself)—of such unrealized blessedness.

I assert that no magistrate, prince, teacher, or other official, can form to himself an idea how a Sunday's vesper hour is enjoyed, by the children of a pastor, especially of one who has himself preached, when both church services are over. How they, together with their father, rejoice, when the labors of the church are finished, and he can exchange the priest's mantle for the light every-day frock, and enjoy the calm repose of Sabbath evening, while, at the same time, the whole village visit, and enjoy the sight of one another.

I should be reproached with incompleteness, if I should forget to relate another *Trinitatis* joy, merely because it was less frequent. It was therefore so much the greater, that the pastor's family from Koditz, in order to hear the father preach and to see him, appeared in the midst of the sermon, and Paul's playmate, the pastor's little son, suffered himself to be seen before the church door. If Paul and his brother discovered him from their not very distant grated seat in the choir, there began on both sides fluttering and dancing, heart-beating and sign-greeting—and as to hearing the sermon, had the Propaganda, the ten first court preachers and *pastores primarii*, one behind the other, risen in the pulpit and spoken out, there would have been no more listening. The anticipation of this Sabbath, this mountain of precious hopes, the breakfast *à la fourchette* in the middle of the day, must be enjoyed afar off in the church. But who, after the first joyful storm of parental and childish preparations are over, can describe the blessed zephyr-calm of the evening! At furthest, it may be possible to paint, that, late in the evening, the Joditz family accompanied the Koditz far beyond the village on their return, and that, consequently, this sublime and wide extension of bliss, by the parents and by the little Pfarrherrlein, went far beyond the village, and into space, and left impressions in after-life, of which we shall hear more in future.*

* It must be remembered that Paul at this time was under ten years of age.

We come now, my dear hearers, to those Joditz Idyls that were enjoyed by Paul without doors in the village, and may conveniently be divided into those when he was not at home himself, and those when his father was absent. I begin with the last, as among the acknowledged pleasures of childhood, when the father journeys from home, when the power of academical censure and freedom of direction for the children is conferred on the mother. Paul and his brothers were able, even under the eyes of the business-entangled mother, to leap over the door of the court-yard, to hunt the wild game of the village, such as butterflies and gudgeons, to draw sap from the birch-trees, or make pipes from the meadow reeds, to bring home a new playmate in the schoolmaster's Fritz, or help ring at noon, merely to be lifted from the ground by the turning of the bell-rope.

One particular pleasure could be enjoyed inside the court-yard, except that Paul might easily have broken his neck, and thus put an end beforehand to his whole Professorship. It consisted in climbing by a ladder to a sort of balcony that hung in the stable, and from thence jumping upon the hay, that lay heaped upon the lower floor, merely to enjoy in the transit the pleasant sensation of flying. Sometimes he placed the old piano at the open window of the upper story and played beyond all measure down into the village, and sought to attract hearers from the passers by. He increased the descent of the sounds by means of a quill, which he passed over the chords with his right hand, while he struck the keys with his left. Sometimes he struck with his quill upon the strings extended over the bridge, but he could not get much harmony there.

The Joditz summer Idyls were naturally much richer, when we left our village wholly, and went to another, or to the city. Was there a beautiful summer day, after the lesson had been recited from Lang's Grammar, a more blessed order could not be heard than, "Dress yourself, for after dinner you shall go with me to Koditz." Dinner never tasted worse. Paul was obliged to run after the long strides of the father; but at the end of an hour he had his little Pfarrherrlein to play with in the open air, and his splendid mother, the sound of whose voice yet echoes in his heart like the string of a lute, or the harmonica-bells through the distance; and at the same time one or two tiny laurel crowns, large enough for his little head.

The father's paternal heart rejoiced, when he found his Sunday's sermon understood and remembered, of which, indeed, on Sunday evening, he repeated the principal heads, and the polished passages, and he ordered him to repeat the same again before the pastor's family—and the little one, I may safely say, went on without fear or faltering. In a boy who, during his whole life, had seen nothing great,—neither count, nor general, not even a superintendent, and rarely a nobleman,—perhaps twice in a year the Herr Von Reitzenstein, (as he was long under arrest, and consequently, in flight.)—in such a boy it shows courage to speak publicly in the apartment of the pastor's family. But, timid as he was when he stood there in silence, as soon as he began to speak, courage and animation appeared. Yes,—he ventured upon something yet more bold one afternoon when his father was absent. He took the psalm-book and went to visit an extremely aged woman, old as the hills, who had been bed-ridden for many years, and placing himself at the bedside, like the pastor visiting the sick, he began to read the psalms for the dying. But he was soon interrupted by tears and sobs, not of the old woman, at any thing she heard from the psalm-book, for she remained cold and unmoved, but by his own.

The father took our hero once with him to the court of Versailles, as they might indeed without exaggeration call Zedtwitz, since it was the residence of the patroness of the Joditz pastor. Every time he went to court, and in summer it was twice a month, he excited, in the evening, the utmost rustic astonishment, both in his wife and children, by telling about the exalted personages, and their court ceremonial, the court entertainments, the icehouses, and Swiss cows,—and how he was very soon invited from the domestics' apartment to the Herr Von Plotho, or even to the Froulein, to whom he gave exercises and imitation upon the piano, and at last was introduced to the Baroness Von Plotho, (born a Bodenhausen.) and always on account of his liveliness and wit was taken to the same table even, for it made no difference if the most distinguished nobleman of Voigtland sat there and dined,—but, like an old Lutheran court preacher, he knew how to look at the illimitable greatness of rank, as at the appearance of spectres, without trembling at either.

And yet I would say, how much happier are the children

of the present day, who are justly educated to no prostration before exalted rank, and are strengthened from within against outward splendor! While the Joditz pastor's sons were waiting, expecting in one short hour to prostrate themselves before the Zedtwitz throne, the interest of the occasion was heightened by the ornamented coach, which was sent the Thursday preceding Good-Friday, to carry the father as Confessor to the whole household, before the evening solemnity. The sons can speak of the coach, for, before the evening, they were carried round a little, with infinite delight, in the village.

Picture to yourself our hero going to Zedtwitz, to be presented to the reigning family, along with the Court-Confessor, who had spoken of him there with too much praise and love. The Baroness Von Plotho received him, after he had been waiting a long time before the pictures of her ancestors in the castle below, upon the steps above, as if it had been the presence-chamber. Paul, in true court style, rushed up and caught at her dress, and gave it the usual kiss of ceremony. And thus the whole audience, without court-sword and upper court-marshal, was finished, and the boy was permitted to run down again; and this he did into an ornamental garden.

It would have been difficult for any other ambassador than our at that time *little* Hildburghausen *Legationsrath*, immediately after such formal etiquette in his reception, to breathe through the romantic hours that the shaded walks, the fountains, the perfumed hot-beds, and leafy balconies must have offered to a village child, rich in fancy, who wandered for the first time, with widely-expanded breast, in the midst of all these splendors. But the elevated Paul was drawn again into reality by a wooden bird, suspended by a cord, whose iron bill he was permitted to shoot into the black centre of a shield; while a rich fruit-cake, sent down from the castle, held him between flight and perch. Its sweet after-taste remains uneffaced in the *reliquarium* of our hero. Oh! splendid solitary hours and walks for the indigent village child, whose heart so delighted to be filled, were it only with longing, in the outward world!

Among the summer Idyls of little court splendor, were the frequent errands that Paul, with a sack across his back, must make to the grandparents in the city of Hof, to bring meat and coffee, and all that was not to be had in the vil-

lage, at least not for the extremely small prices of the city. His mother, that all might not appear as gifts, furnished him with a few small pieces of money. The grandmother, liberal to her daughter and grandson, and avaricious to all the rest of the world, filled the sack with every thing that could at that time be placed in a bill of fare.

The two hours' walk led over places with few charms; through a wood, where babbled a brook full of stones, till at last, upon an elevated field, the city with its two united church towers, and the Saale in its level plain, overpowered the little traveller with excessive satisfaction. Before an excavated chasm, near the suburbs, through which, according to report, the Hofers fled in the Thirty Years' War, he passed with that shudder at all war and martyr times that belongs to childhood; and the adjoining cloth-fulling mill, with its perpetually thundering strokes, and apparently unmanageable machinery, expanded his village soul wide enough to take in the whole city.

When he had kissed the hand of the tall, serious grandfather, seated behind his loom, and given his mother's letter (for his father was too proud to beg) to his delighted grandmother, the little money was publicly delivered, and what had been the secret article of the petition, privately, behind the door of the passage. Then came the afternoon; and with his full knapsack, and his sugared almonds for Augustina, in the highest spirits on account of the parental provision-ship upon his back, he trotted home again. He yet remembers a summer's day, when he was returning about two o'clock, watching the splendid sunny mountain side, with its waving corn-fields, traversed by the coursing shadows of the clouds; and when a till now unexperienced, undefined longing came over him, of mingled pain and pleasure, and unremembered wishes. Ah, it was the whole nature awaking and thirsting after the heavenly gifts of life, that lay as yet concealed, undefined, and colorless in the deep folds of the heart; but an accidental sunbeam partially reveals them. There is a time of longing, which knows not the name of its own object, which at best can only name itself. It is not the hour of moonlight, whose silvery sea so softly melts the heart and makes it feel the Infinite, so much as it is the light of the afternoon sun, spreading itself over a wide prospect, which exercises this power of awakening a painful, boundless longing. In the works of Paul we find this several times described.

In the winter's snow, Paul was often obliged to travel, like a court or Dutch runner, when they wanted money, to negotiate a loan at his grandfather's; so too in the coldest weather he would follow his father to the neighboring parsonage. He may thank these weekly excursions for many later cherished powers, and especially for the best antidote to his opposing physical education; for at that time fur caps, medicines, and exclusion from the air, united with warmth and carefulness, did not arm one against, but prepared the way for, an unhealthy future. But this is the blessed fortune of poor and village children, that the summer, with its spring and autumn on the right and left, happily roots out the noxious weeds of winter. The pale winter hot-house plants spring at once into showers and healthy air, and, bareheaded and barefoot, grow and strengthen upon uncooked nourishment. It is only the dear little delicate princesses who flourish in *no* season. The good people, meanwhile, will not believe that the summer repairs the ravages of winter; but on the contrary, that this domestic winter season is the physician of those spent in the open air.

I come now to the last and greatest, and never to be forgotten summer Idyl, that always happened the Monday after St. James's day, when the grandparents sent to bring Paul's tender mother in a coach to the Hof annual fair, and Paul was permitted to ride with her. And here, not to wrong the cold historian, I would merely say, calmly and simply, that if to a villager a common city is more than a market-town, it follows that a city in time of the fair must be a two-fold city, and consequently excel in splendor all that a village youth could imagine. Thus it was with Paul, whose imagination was ever active.

As emperors were formerly presented with draughts of honor, the mother was received by her parents with sweet wine, and the son went with a little of it in his head to Silberer, the hair-curler. He cooled the head from without by means of heated irons and sharp screwing of the curled locks; but Paul came so much fresher, newer, and whiter with his curls and tonsure from the powder-puff back to dinner, which could not indeed be very considerable, as the grandfather must hasten back to the Rathhouse, to watch over the selling of his bales of cloth. At the evening meal, as with the ancient Romans, there was more time and less

frugality. The afternoon was splendid ; when, free from all *surveillance*, and deafened and dazzled by the variegated and loud tumult of men and goods, Paul, rich with his groschen* of fair-money from his grandmother in his pocket, could purchase every thing ; he could secretly purchase something to carry to the solitary house, but as all were absent and it was gloomily lonely, he mingled again with the thronging multitude.

The most respectable and beautiful ladies sat at the windows in the second stories of the houses. As he passed, Paul fell in love with them, and as they were ignorant of his existence, from the street below he fell in imagination upon their necks. Yet none was so distinguished, through the elevation of the apartment, or the ornaments upon her head, as his favorite sultana, the little country girl, Augustina, in Joditz, for whom he bought almonds and raisins. Towards seven o'clock, under the beams of the evening sun that embellished and gilded every object, the noise and pleasure was continually augmenting ; but he must now return to the house, for the grandfather, having completed his supper at this hour, and all the family must be together. I would fain present every one at this evening meal, for Paul, having eaten enough before, tasted little of it ; but so much more willingly shall I follow him, after the second grace, to the street again, where he was as blest as a young soul could be that had just escaped from a country parsonage.

In the deepening twilight, and as the night approached, the youth was wholly enchanted and inspired. During the fair, Turkish music was heard in the principal streets ; deafened and silent, the people and children followed the sounds, and the village boy heard for the first time drums and fifes, and the Turkish cymbals. "In me," these are his own words, "who never ceased to thirst after musical sounds. they produced a music-intoxication, and I heard, as the drunken see, the world double and in flight. The fife carried me away most powerfully through the high notes of the musical scale. How often did I seek before falling to sleep, when fancy was the finger-board that came easiest to hand, to hear again those echoing sounds ; and how am I blessed when I hear them again, as deeply blest as if my

* A groschen is about two and a half cents.

childhood, like a Tithonus, had become immortal, merely through the power of sound, and with it spake to me again ! Ah ! faint, thin, invisible sounds bear and harbor whole worlds for the heart, and are in themselves souls for the soul."

Perhaps the tones of the higher octave penetrate deepest into the soul. Engel asserts, indeed, that the peculiar harmony is sustained between the low and the high tones, but one may say that poetic music extends over both. In the dark, deep bass, the lowest bass sounds move slowly among the past, and in the passing time. On the contrary, the sharp heights of the extreme alto shriek and sink deep into the future, or summon it to us, while these sharp, acute tones speak out. Thus the high sharp fifing of the little fifes in the Russian field music is fearful to me, and sounds like a herald calling to battle, like a melancholy early *Te Deum* for future bloodshed.

I fear they will say in Germany and elsewhere, that I have reserved the autumn as the highest Joditz Idyl, when it can lead to nothing but a snow-path. But in the autumn a fanciful spirit, like Paul's, enjoys not only the autumn itself, but the winter beforehand, with its domestic joys, and the spring also, with its poetic prospect-sketching. In the meantime, the approaching spring has melted into summer, and the summer—which is the tranquil and usual state of his fancy—the summer is allied to autumn, and yet more distinctly to spring. But now, in the late summer, through the half-denuded trees, far off in other years, he sees snow-mountains all covered with flowers, and goes to them, in fancy, like a bee intoxicated with honey ; but when he approaches them they melt away. The widely-extended plans of summer journeys and summer harvests are anticipated and enjoyed, and when the spring itself arrives, the chief business is already over. As the landscape-painter prefers the autumn, so does the spiritual-painter, the poet, especially in old age.

But in the autumn our hero turned with wonderful facility to the reverse of the picture, and nurtured within himself the strong inclination to quiet domestic life, and to spiritual nest-making : he became a domestic snail, who withdraws contentedly, and loves to live in the narrowest recesses of his house. Only he will sometimes open his snail-shell sufficiently to thrust out his four feelers, not wide

enough to spread them like butterflies' wings in the air, but to stretch them ten times higher towards heaven, at least reaching with every filament one of the four satellites of Jupiter. Of this foolish union of desires for near and distant objects—which, like the telescope, by mere reversion, doubles either the distant or the near—more will appear in our readings, than I desire, or than autumn alone has room for.

This domestic disposition showed itself in the reveries of the boy. He deemed the young swallows happy, because they could sit so secretly and safe through the night in their walled nests. If he climbed upon the roof of the great pigeon-house, he was immediately at home in this apartment full of little chambers, or pigeon-holes, and the front was to him like the Louvre or the Escorial *in little*. I fear only that I shall injure myself, if I take up in my lectures such childish trivialities as that he made a complete fly-house out of fine clay, and built a castle as long and as broad, and somewhat higher than a man's hand. The whole house was red, striped with ink, and divided into square tiles. Within, it was of two stories, with stairs, galleries, chambers, and a spacious garret; on the outside it had balconies and projections. A chimney was provided, covered with glass, that the flies might not pass out instead of the smoke. In no part were windows spared, and I dare assert that the palace consisted far more of windows than of walls. When Paul saw innumerable flies in this wide palace, up stairs and down stairs, and running into all the great apartments, and from them into the balconies and projections, he represented to himself their domestic happiness, and wished to enter with them, and put himself in the place of the landlord, who could withdraw from the spacious apartments to the lower and smaller: then how insignificant and little the parsonage appeared to him!

He has later, as an author, described this domestic, corner-loving disposition, in *Wuz*, in *Fixlein*, and in *Fibil*; and yet the man remains full of longing for every little neat, humble shepherd's cottage of two stories, with flowers before the windows, and a little garden which he could water from the window; and the good domestic fool can sit contentedly in a coach, and looking out at the side-windows, say, "What a pretty, quiet, convenient, fire-proof apartment! while out there, the great villages and gardens sweep along by us." This is certain, that he could not live, still less write, in a

knight's-hall, or St. Peter's church—it would be to him a market-place covered by a roof. At the same time he would be able to write, or to live upon Mont Blanc or Ætna, where all is adapted and fitting environment; for the works of men only are not small enough for him, but great nature cannot be too much expanded. The littleness of the works of man is yet diminished through the vastness of nature.

The Joditz autumn Idyl is painted by what I have already said. Autumn leads people to their homes, and the harvest fills the home with plenty for the winter nest; prepared for winter, like the crossbill, who in icy months builds her nest and has her young. From this time, after the first threshing, Paul must follow the traces of the crows in the woods, and the cries of birds of passage, whose long processions he followed with infinite delight, because they were the prelude to that intimate domestic winter *in-nesting*—and it pains me now, on his account, to think how he could enjoy the shrieks of the geese, flying over in flocks in the autumn, as forerunners of winter time. From this cell and winter disposition of my hero, I understand why he read with such singular delight all travellers' descriptions of winter climates, like Spitzbergen, and Greenland; for the representation of simple distress upon paper hardly explains his delight thereat, for then he would have felt the same delight in reading of glowing distress in hot countries. On the contrary, the well known joy of the man over every quarter of an hour that is taken from the length of the day in autumn. I would ascribe to his love for superlatives, even of opposite kinds; in short, for every thing infinitely great or infinitely small, for the *maxima* and *minima* of every thing. He rejoiced just as much over the increase of the *length* of the day, and wished for nothing so much as a Swedish summer day. We observe in all things, with what innumerable satisfactions and conveniences God arms and furnishes man upon his path of life—while little is to be found on the right or left of it—so that, be it never so dark about him, he can always discern black from white; and gives him a double instinct both for land and water, that he may neither drown nor thirst.

These are merely autobiographical touches, which a future biographer may conveniently work into a portrait, and for which he will perhaps thank me. I must refer to this contented winter predilection, to understand why Paul re-

called another dry autumn pleasure with so much satisfaction. In the autumn evenings the father went with Paul and Adam to a potato field lying at the other side of the Saale. One boy carried a hoe upon his shoulder, the other a hand-basket; and while the father dug as many new potatoes as were necessary for supper, and Paul gathered them from the ground and threw them into the basket, Adam gathered the best nuts from the hazel-bushes. It was not long before Adam fell back into the potato beds, and Paul in his turn climbed the nut tree. Then they returned home, satisfied with their nuts and potatoes, and enlivened by running for an hour in the free, invigorating air; every one may imagine the delight of returning home by the light of the harvest festival.

Wonderfully fresh and green are two other harvest flowers, preserved in the chambers of his memory, and both are indeed trees. One was a full-branched muscatel pear-tree in the pastor's courtyard, the fall of whose splendid hanging fruit the children sought through the whole autumn to hasten; but at last, upon one of the most important days of the season, the father himself reached the forbidden fruit by means of a ladder, and brought the sweet paradise down, as well for the palates of the whole family, as for the cooking-stove.

The other always green, and yet more splendidly blooming, was a smaller tree, cut on Saint Andrew's evening from the old wood, and brought into the house, where it was planted in water and soil in a large pot, that on Christmas night, when it was hung with golden fruit, it might retain its verdant leaves. This birch, not a weeping, but a festive tree, is the only one which, in the dark month of December, even till Christmas, is strewed with the blossoms of joy, namely, its own ornamented leaves; every one of which indicates a cherished pleasure, and shows that every child under this May-tree of winter may celebrate his tabernacle feast of hope.*

My hearers will suffer me to describe Paul's Christmas festival, for in his works we meet with pictures of the same that far exceed mine, and merely two circumstances may be added as features of the picture. When Paul on Christmas morning stood before the lighted tree and the lighted table,

* We have become so familiar through descriptions with the beautiful German custom of the *Christkind tree*, that it is unnecessary to add any explanation to the text.—TR.

and saw this new world of gold and splendor and gifts lying around, and discovered and took possession of one rich gift after another; the first emotion that arose in him was not a tear, not even a tear of joy, but a deep sigh over life,—in one word, the transition, the leap, or the flight (call it as you will,) from the wild-swelling, sporting sea of Fancy, to the firm land, limited and limiting,—this transition the boy expressed with a sigh for a greater and more beautiful land. But before the sigh was breathed out, Paul felt that the highest degree of gratitude was due to his mother; this thought exerted its power in a short time, and the daybreak of reality soon scattered and extinguished the moonlight of fancy.

Here may be mentioned a peculiarity of Paul's father that occurred at the same moment. The father, so joyfully sympathizing with every joy, so willingly consenting to every gift, came on Christmas morning, as with a mourning veil on his face, from his own room into the splendidly-lighted dwelling and common apartment. The mother herself assured them of her unconsciousness of the cause of this yearly melancholy, and no one else had the courage to question him. He left to the mother the whole trouble and joy of being table-decker for the holy Christkind night. In this he was not like Paul, who always at the Christmas festival helped his wife to prepare for the children, if he did not himself do the whole. In fact, he had earlier—when they were simpletons, months before the representation of this enchanting opera,—lying upon the sofa, played the part of pretended ticket-bearer (*Lügen-Zettel-Träger*), of theatre poet, and scene-painter, and when the evening came he was perfect, as opera director and master of machinery. For every one of the three children he had divided the sections of the table with lights, and placed the presents for the maid aside, upon a near table. In short, all upon the tables and the tree were so advantageously arranged, and so perfectly ordered, that the whole shone with splendor, and his eyes with delight.

Nevertheless, the father and the father's mourning may be explained by the son, and indeed by *this*, that the latter has had for many years, notwithstanding his outward joyfulness and activity, the same thing to conceal. It is with both only that weary, sad feeling of comparison between the manly harvest of reality, and the childish spring before

them, where luxuriantly from the very trunk of reality the blossoms of the ideal flourish without waiting for leaves or branches.

The childish honey and wine of joy still required the ideal ether of faith in a Christkindlein who brought them; for as soon as he had accidentally observed, by the witness of his senses, that only human and not spiritual hands had broken off and laid upon the table the flowers and fruits of joy, the Eden splendor and Eden perfume went out, and were extinguished, and there remained only the common earth of the garden-bed. But it is incredible how he, like all children, armed himself against the heaven-disturbers of this divine faith, and how long he held fast his supernatural revelations against all the discoveries of his growing years, against all the hints of accident, until he at last saw and conquered, rather than was conquered. So difficult is it for man, in all religions, to descend to the men, who up in the air of heaven act the benevolent gods.

Thus far extend the Joditz Idyls, that endured for parents and children as long as the Trojan war. The expenses for four sons were always increasing, and for these sons the prospect of better schools was necessary. Upon the father, also, the discouragement weighed heavily, that his best years and finest powers should be wearied and consumed in so narrow a village church. At last the pastor Barnikel died, in Schwarzenbach-on-the-Saale, a little city or a great market-town.* Death is the only théâtre-director and machinery master on the earth. He takes a man as a cipher from a row of numbers, from the left, the middle, or the right, and behold, the whole collection changes its value and order. The right of presentation, which the Baron von Schönburg-Waldenburg and the Frau von Plotho possessed alternately, came at this time into the hands of Richter's patroness, who rejoiced long and undisguisedly at the opportunity of serving and rewarding the good, disinterested, and indigent pastor. But on this account he did not go oftener, but more rarely to Zedtwitz. In fact, a petition for a pastorate, or merely a verbal request, would have been to him, who, from his old faith, believed that the Holy

* Markt-flecken, a borough town that has the privilege of holding one or more annual fairs, and is the medium between a city and a village.—TR.

Spirit alone could call to the sacred office, an act of impure simony ; thus the pride of birth in the patroness must fall, without a petition and without a visit, before the pride of office in the poor indigent black coat. I will impart to you here a secret of the Zedtwitz court, which he has himself long since forgotten, although I relate it from the mouth of the old pastor as it happened on the day of his calling. As he was usually admitted first by the old Herr von Plotho, he could not withhold from my father the news of his good fortune, but gave it to him himself, or rather gave him the presentation while his wife was, in fact, the patroness, and was entitled to inform the pastor formally of his appointment. It naturally happened, as the newly-created pastor entered her apartment, that he presented his thanks, and her extreme displeasure was excited against her husband, that he did not leave the discovery to herself. For the rest, they were both disposed, while they presented the vocation with their own hand, to spare the penniless friend the mortification of all the graces and douceurs of the donor.

As I so well know your benevolent dispositions to both father and son, I can easily guess that you are calling out with delight, "This is indeed precious news, that at last the moon has changed in the parsonage, and promises more beautiful weather. We see the jovial amateur in music, coming earlier than usual from the barony, (he would gladly have entertained them longer from gratitude,) and running with his bull-dog to his home, to impart as early as possible his own delight to his family, especially to the poor wife, who had hitherto suffered enough in gleanings the tithes from the parental fields."

Serious and melancholy, he arrived with the joy-post ; but not merely because upon the flower and harvest crown of happiness, as upon the bridal crown, there is commonly hanging a dew-drop that looks like a tear, but because he could not take leave of the beloved flock, which had been to him for many years his second family, in that great family praying-hall, the church, without weeping ; and then the quiet, calm, unrestrained, simple, still life of the village, would in future hang as a distant picture in his memory. Indeed, the country life is like life at sea, of a uniform color, without the interchange of little and great events ; but it affords a species of uniform tranquillity, which works healthily, as the equal and uniform sea favorably, upon the

consumptive, while no clouds of dust are breathed, and no insects torment.

I believe I have now fulfilled my obligations as Professor of my own history, in reference to the village of Joditz, the place of my education, in such a manner, that in the next reading I may accompany the hero and his family to Schwarzenbach-on-the-Saale, where indeed the curtain of his life may rise a few turns higher, and we may see something more of the principal actors than, as hitherto, the mere infancy. For in fact we send him out of the present reading into the next as a twelve-year-old man, with ten times less knowledge than the five-year-old Christian Henrich Heineke von Lubeck, (who after his examination returned again to the bosom of his nurse,)* without knowledge of nature, country, or world-history, except the little part which was himself; without French or music; in Latin, only a little bit of *Lange* and *Speccius*; in short, such an empty transparent skeleton without learned nourishment or muscle, that I can scarcely wait for the time and place, Schwarzenbach-on-the-Saale, where he must begin to know something, and to nourish his skeleton.

We leave now with him that unknown village; and although it has not gained a laurel crown through a battle, as many other villages, yet he dares, I believe, hold it high in his heart, and say even to-day, as if he had left it only to-day, "Dear village, thou art to me dear and precious. Two little sisters lie in thy bosom. My contented father found in thee his fairest Sundays. Under the morning glow of life, I saw thy waves shining. Thy well-known inhabitants, whom I would thank, have, like my father, long since left thee—but to their unknown children and grandchildren my heart wishes happiness, and that every battle may pass far from them."

* The biographer of this miraculous child, in his "*Leben, Thaten, Reisen und Tod*," tells us, that at five years old he understood the Latin and French languages, had read history, geography, and the Institutions of the Roman Laws, had a good knowledge of anatomy and theology, was witty and penetrating in conversation, but lived altogether upon the milk of his nurse.

CHAPTER III.

SCHWARZENBACH-ON-THE-SAALE —FIRST KISS.—RECTOR.—
THE LORD'S SUPPER.

WILL my hearers believe that Paul, through the whole packing and moving, going forth and going in, thought of nothing, took no leave of parents or children, observed nothing on the way of two miles long, except the already mentioned tailor's son, in whose pocket he had tucked the soot-sketched kings for his beloved? But so it is in childhood and boyhood—they retain the little—they forget the great, and they know no reason for either. The child that is every where, and above every thing wishing for the open air, retains less the departure than the arrival; for the child severs ten times more easily long-accustomed relations, than transient ones; and first in manhood, exactly the contrary disposition appears. For children there is no leave-taking, for they acknowledge no past, only the present, that to them is full of the future.

Schwarzenbach-on-the-Saale* contained indeed much—a parish and a chaplain—a rector and a chanter—a parsonage, full of little apartments, and two large ones. These were opposite the two great bridges, with the thereto belonging Saale, and immediately beside it a school-house, that was as large, if not larger, than the whole Joditz parsonage. Amongst the houses there was a council-house, not to reckon the tall empty castle!

At the same time with the father, a new rector entered upon his duties. Werner, from Merseburg; a handsome man, with a high brow and nose; full of fire and feeling, with overpowering natural eloquence—as full of questions and comparisons and speeches as father Abraham, but without any depth either in conversation or in other sciences. Meanwhile he helped his poverty on this reverse side by a head full of liberty-speeches and zeal. His tongue was the lever to childish minds. His principle was, to let us learn in the grammar only the most necessary forms of language,

* Schwarzenbach-sur-la-Saale, is a town of about sixteen hundred inhabitants, six miles from Hof. Paul tells us its capabilities. It had besides, large quarries of marble.—TR.

by which he understood the declensions and conjugations, and then skip at once to the reading of an author. Paul must immediately make the leap, high over Langen's *Colloquia*, into Cornelius—and he went. The school-room, or rather the school-ark, contained A, B, C-shooters, alphabetiers, latiners, great and little maidens (who, like a scaffolding of steps in a greenhouse or an old Roman theatre, led from the ground to the ceiling), rector, and chanter, and all the crying, humming, reading, and whipping. The Latin pupils formed a school within a school. Very soon the Greek grammar, with the declensions and the necessary verbs, was begun, and without further delay with the grammar, we were passed on to translating the New Testament. Werner,¹ who often in the excitement of speaking praised himself so much, that he was astonished at his own greatness, looked upon his faulty method of teaching as wholly original, although it was that of Basedow; and Paul's flying progress was to him a new proof of its excellence. About a year afterwards some few declensions and verbs from Danzen's Hebrew grammar, written in Latin, were put together, so as to form a bridge of boats to the first book of Moses, the beginning of which, the threshold of exegesis to young Hebricians, was not allowed to be read by the uncultivated Jews.

I shall immediately proceed chronologically with the life of my hero, as soon as I have thrown an eye cursorily over the present time, that you may see how much he had at once to do and to know.

The Greek and Hebrew Testaments he must translate verbally into the Latin, like a Vulgate-maker. While Paul was translating, (he was the only Hebrew scholar in the school,) the rector had a printed translation at his elbow. The present romance writer loved the Hebrew grammar and analyzing trumpery and trifles, especially as it was a secret feature of his predilection for domestic life; he collected from all the Schwarzenbach corners all the Hebrew grammars he could find, so that he might possess upon critical points, vowels, accents, and the like, all that had been brought upon the table, at the analyzing of any particular word. For this purpose he stitched together a quarto book, and began at the first word, of the first verse, in the first book of Moses, and gave upon that first word, upon its six letters and vowels, its *Dagesh* and *Sheva* such rich instruction, so many pages from all the most learned grammarians, that this very

first word *anfangs* "*In the Beginning*," (as he would have gone on, from chapter to chapter,) would have made an end of him, if he had not proceeded to the second. What is said of *Quintus Fixleins's* self-impelled hunting in the Hebrew folio Bible after great and small and reversed letters, described in the "first letter-box," may be compared exactly with the circumstance in Paul's own life."*

Immediately after the arrival in Schwarzenbach, (I yet go on cursorily,) he received instruction upon the piano from chanter Gressel, and here also, after some dancing pieces, he learned only the common choral accords, and general bass. I wish God would give the poor boy only once a thorough teacher, little prospect as there is at present of it. Soon, in this absence of all instruction, he began to play all the pieces that could be collected in the place, and to improvise (*phantasieren*) upon the piano. He learned the grammar of music, and general bass, through perpetual improvising and note-playing, as we learn German through speaking.

At the same time he began to read the belle-lettre literature of Germany. But in Schwarzenbach there was only the romantic to be found, and of this, the worst romances from the first half of the last century; but of these materials he formed a little Babylonian Tower, although he could only draw out one at a time for reading. Among all the histories upon the book-shelves, none (for Schiller's *Armenian* at that time only exercised half its powers over him) poured such oil of joy and oil of nectar through all the veins of his being, till it amounted to physical ecstasy, as the reading of old *Robinson Crusoe*. He knows yet the hour and place (it was evening, and at the window opposite the bridge) when this delight occurred. A second romance, "*Veit Rosenstock von Otto*," (the father read and forbid it,) repeated only half of the former excitement; but only as a plagiarist and book-thief could he enjoy it, while the father was absent from his study. Once he read it while his father was giving a week-day's sermon, lying upon his breast in an empty loft. I envy little the present children, from whom the first impression of the child's, and the child-like Robinson is withdrawn in favor of the *improved* versions by later workmen, who change the quiet, solitary island into an audience hall, or into a

* There is an admirable translation of this work of Jean Paul, by Carlyle, which has been reprinted in this country.—TR.

valley for woodcocks, and send the shipwrecked Robinson round, with a book in his hand, and a *dictatis* in his mouth, to turn every corner of the island into a corner school, although the poor, solitary man has employment enough to provide the absolute necessities of life.

About the same time, or shortly after, the young chaplain, Volkel, prayed the father to let the youth come to him two hours after dinner daily, that he might teach him geography and philosophy. What excited him, who had no particular talent for education, to think my village helplessness so worthy assistance as to sacrifice to it his hour of rest, is incomprehensible to me. In philosophy, he read, or rather I read to him "*The Philosophy of Gottsched*," which, with all its dryness and emptiness, refreshed me by its novelty like fresh water. Afterwards he pointed out upon a map, I believe of Germany, many cities and boundaries. What I saw upon the map I know not, and have sought in vain for it to-day in my memory. I trust I shall prove, that among all living authors, (which sounds indeed very strong,) I, perhaps, understand the least of the maps of countries. An atlas of maps, if I endeavor to carry them in my head, becomes, instead of a mythological heaven, a hell to me. If any description of city or country remains in my head, it is the little I have acquired in geographical courses, of which part is the statistics of the post-wagon, part what the post-jockey has cursorily told me in good gymnastic German.

But I thank the good chaplain so much more for his guidance to a German style, which consisted in nothing but an introduction to the so-called theology. He gave me, namely, the task of carrying out the evidence of a God or Providence, without the assistance of the Bible. For this purpose, I received an octavo sheet upon which the propositions were barely hinted, and the proofs and indications from Nösselt and Jerusalem in the same manner. These ciphered indications were explained to me, and from this leaf, like Goethe's botany,* my leaves were developed. I began every essay with warmth, and the glow continued, for I always

* See that exquisite poem of Göethe's, the *Metamorphosis of Plants*, where he expresses his idea, that all parts of the plant are only a modification of the leaf, and are evolved in succession till the circle is complete, and a new leaf springs again from the ripened germ. Mr. J. S. Dwight has given an accurate and very poetical translation of this poem.—TR.

came finally to the end of the world and of life, to the joys of heaven, and to all that exuberance in which the young vine, in the warmth of its spring, gushes out, although in harvest only it shows its spiritual power. To whom belongs the praise and the merit, that these writing-hours were not hours of toil, but of joy and liberty, save to him who gave the flower and fruit-bearing theme? For one might think and maintain, that the filling up of these exciting propositions may be too difficult; but only on account of the custom of school-teachers to give such diffuse and undefined themes, so uncongenial to the heart of youth, or extending so far beyond the limits of their circle of ideas, such as in the note,* of which I could mention a thousand,—so that I earnestly wish a man, who understands youth well, would set himself to write (notwithstanding the good thoughts and investigations that he may have formerly delivered) for the present nothing, but, after the measure of innumerable dissertations upon the Sunday's text, a volume of prize-questions for teachers, that they might among them choose themes for their pupils.

Yet better than all subjects for themes are perhaps *none*. The youth will choose for himself, as he would a beloved mistress, the matter of which he is full, and with it alone he can create that which is vital. Leave the young mind in freedom with its time and its themes, as older writers require, and he will speak out, undisturbed by *your* touch; otherwise he is like a bell that rests upon the ground; it can emit no sound until it hangs untouched in the free air.

But thus are men through all offices, up to the highest. They find higher renown in forming from free spirits merely servile machines, and proving thereby their creative mastery and business powers. They believe they shall prove in this manner, that they can make of a spirit a higher machine,

* From such common, cold, empty, all and nothing-demanding themes, as "the praise of industry," "the importance of youth," &c., could scarcely the ripest and richest mind draw any thing lively or original. Other themes, such as "comparison of heroes and poets," weighing of "forms of government," &c., are ostrich eggs, upon which the poor pupil sits and broods with his two short wings, and makes nothing warm but himself. Between both, historical themes are the best, such as the description of a fire, a plague, a flood, and proofs that they are not common, &c., &c.

and from this produce an intermediate, and upon this intermediate another may appear to be hooked, so that at last a mother *marionette* appears, who leads a *marionette* daughter, who on her side is able to raise a little dog on high. All accomplished by one hooking-together of the same machine-master. God, the purely free, educates only the free; the devil, purely servile, educates only his like.

My weekly exercises I would not exchange for any modern ones. These may do much to educate the world; but the old way was best for me, as it expanded the limits of my philosophical impulse, and suffered it to outrun itself—an impulse that found its way out from my own head into a small octavo book, in which I sought logically to establish the philosophy of seeing and hearing. I related some of it to my father, who blamed and misunderstood me, as little as I did myself. Can we too often say to the teachers of youth,—very often indeed have I already said it—that all hearing and reading does not half as much strengthen or delight the mind as writing and speaking.

Do not life-long translators of the most spiritual and sententious authors (such as Ebert of Young) write their prefaces, notes, and poems with their original wateriness? And yet some improvement might be expected to result from the repeated readings of a work, by which its delicacy and peculiarities are better understood; and every translator of a genial work understands and enjoys it better than a mere reader. Reading may be called gathering into the school-money chest, or poor's purse; writing is to found a mint; and the die that stamps a dollar makes richer than the jingle of the poor's purse.*

Writing is like the Socratic art of midwifery, which they exercise upon themselves to learn to read, as they do speaking to learn to hear. In England, language is formed by the court and by people of the world, and is rarely helped by reading.

These hours at the chaplain's were to end with chess-playing. That is to say, sometimes the chaplain proposed to unite a lesson in geography with one in chess; but in this, as in every thing else, I remained only a beginner; for

* *Klingelbeutel*, a purse or bag with a long handle and ball attached to it, used in the church to collect alms during divine service, or the mass.—TR.

although I went at the appointed hour, notwithstanding the head-ache, as a game of chess was promised me, it was forgotten by the chaplain, and I never went again. One circumstance I can hardly understand, that my father never by a single word induced me to stay away, but suffered it in silence; but I can understand this: I was a fool to run away from the chaplain, while I still continued to love him. Indeed, I joyfully remained the little foot-post messenger between him and my father; and looked at him with love-glances and pulses of joy after every child's baptism (the baptism-bell rung a joy-mass in my ears), when he came in to see my father, while I read or worked not far from the table where they gossiped away the half or the whole evening; but I had, as I have said, the chess-board in my head, and remained at a distance.*

Heavens! how can men gather into the best honey-cells of mine and of so many poetic and female natures such summer honey, or honey-vinegar of love and jealousy, such a contradictory mixture, by which too often the fairest days, yes, perhaps the tenderest hearts, are poisoned and fretted with wounds? Truly the warmest hearts have often only half a grain of brain or understanding:—I knew of nothing but the warmest love; and so the sweet soon settled down to acid lees and sediment.

MY FIRST KISS.

As earlier in life, on the opposite church bench, so I could but fall in love with Catharine Bärin, as she sat always above me on the school bench, her pretty, round, red, small-pox-marked face,—her lightning eyes—the pretty hastiness with which she spoke and ran. In the school carnival, that took in the whole forenoon succeeding fast nights, and consisted in dancing and playing, I had the joy to perform the irregular hop dance, that preceded the regular, with her in the play. "*How does your neighbor please you?*" where, upon an affirmative answer, they are ordered to kiss, and upon a contrary, there is a calling out, and in the midst of accollades all change places, I ran always near her. The blows were

* Richter means to say, that, on account of the chess, he made no more advances to the chaplain, yet his affection remained the same as before.—TR.

like goldbeaters', by which the pure gold of my love was beaten out, and a continual change of places, as she always forbid me the court, and I always called her to the court, was managed.*

All these malicious occurrences (*desertiones malitiosæ*) could not deprive me of the blessedness of meeting her daily, when with her snow-white apron and her snow-white cap she ran over the long bridge opposite the parsonage window, out of which I was looking. To catch her, not to say, but to give her something sweet, a mouthful of fruit, to run quickly through the parsonage court down the little steps, and arrest her in her flight, my conscience would never permit; but I enjoyed enough to see her from the window upon the bridge,—and I think it was near enough for me to stand, as I usually did, with my heart behind a long seeing and hearing trumpet. Distance injures love less than nearness. Could I upon the planet Venus discover the goddess Venus, while in the distance its charms were so enchanting, I should have warmly loved it, and without hesitation chosen to revere it as my morning and evening star.

In the mean time I have the satisfaction to draw all those, who expect in Schwarzenbach a repetition of the Joditz love, from their error, and inform them that it came to something. On a winter evening, when my Princess's collection of sweet gifts was prepared, that needed only a receiver, the Pastor's son, who, among all my school companions was the worst, persuaded me, when a visit from the chaplain occupied my father, to leave the parsonage while it was dark, to pass the bridge and venture, which I had never done, into the house where the beloved dwelt with her poor grandmother up in a little corner chamber. We entered a little alehouse underneath. Whether Catharine happened to be there, or whether the rascal, under the pretence of a message, allured her down upon the middle of the steps, or, in short, how it happened that I found her there, has become only a dreamy recollection; for the sudden lightning of the present darkened all that went behind. As violently as if I had been a robber, I first pressed upon her my present of sweetmeats, and then I, who in Joditz never could reach the heaven of a kiss, and never even dared to touch the beloved hand, I, for the first time, held a beloved being upon my heart and lips.

* This game is unknown, I believe, to American children.—Tr.

I have nothing further to say, but that it was the *one* pearl of a minute, that was never repeated; a whole longing past and a dreaming future were united in one moment, and in the darkness behind my closed eyes the fireworks of a whole life were enveloped in a glance. Ah, I have never forgotten it—the ineffaceable moment!

I returned like a *clairvoyant* from heaven again to earth, and remarked only that in this second Christmas festival Ruprecht* did not precede, but followed it, for on my way home I met a messenger coming for me, and was severely scolded for running away. Usually after such warm silver beams of a blessed sun, there falls a closing, stormy gust. What was its effect on me? The stream of words could not drain my paradise, for does it not bloom even to-day around and forth from my pen?

It was, as I have said, the first kiss, and, as I believe, will be the last; for I shall not, probably, although she lives yet, journey to Schwarzenbach to give a second. As usual, during my whole Schwarzenbach life, I was perfectly contented with my telegraphic love, which yet sustained and kept itself alive without any answering telegraph. But truly, no one could blame her less than I, that she was silent at that time, or that she continues so now, after the death of her husband; for later, in stranger loves and hearts, I have always been slow to speak. It did not help me; that I stood with ready face and attractive outward appearance; all corporeal charms must be placed over the foil of the spiritual, before they can sufficiently shine and dazzle and kindle. But this was the cause of failure in my innocent love-time, that without any intercourse with the beloved, without conversation or introduction, I displayed my whole love bursting from the dry exterior, and stood before her like the *Judas-tree*, in full blossom, but without branch or leaf.

JOKE WITH THE RECTOR.

As the *joking companions*† knew that the rector read the newspapers in his school, and that in his school-room

* Ruprecht may be called the Father Nicholas, who comes on Christmas eve, and plays all sorts of tricks.—TR.

† “*Schraubgenossenschaft*” may be translated *mystifying society*, hat consisted of the acquaintance of the rector, who permitted among each other such practical jokes as the one related.—TR.

sermons he made use of every passing occurrence, they sent him, from the *Erlangen* commercial newspaper, which he took, an old sheet of the seventieth year, describing, in the most terrible manner, the frightful famine that prevailed in Italy, especially in Naples. The date of the newspaper was concealed with some well-stamped ink spots. The school-boys listened attentively in their places as the rector, kindled by the veracious sheet, could scarcely wait for the retreat of the chanter, to break out into explanations; and as with glowing colors (the *Erlangen* newspaper-writer had used only water-colors) he brought so near before the *Schwarzenbach* school-boys the hungry beggars, the shrieks, the fainting and sobbing in the streets of Naples, it is doubtful which was hottest, their tears or their hunger, as they went home. And, in fact, in such cases of description men scarcely believe that there is any thing more to eat upon the earth.

Through what triumphal arch, or upon what bed of honor, in the evening, the good herald of hunger was conducted by the jest-shooting society, for his exciting and stirring news, —as the said shooting society saw and questioned the school children,—every one may imagine; but I cannot inform you, as it was dark and late when I first learnt the contradiction of the newspaper story. Old, well-meaning rector, be not unduly ashamed or angry, that birds of jest or of prey descend upon thy dove chancel—the sacred dove has already with warm outspread wings hovered and brooded upon our hearts; and it is the same thing for a heart already warmed, whether it be for an old or a near famine, that it trembles with the pulses of compassion.

THE LORD'S SUPPER.

The Lord's Supper, as it is observed in the country, or among true Christians, is not merely a Christian moral *toga virilis*; not, as in cities, is it assuming less the garment of nuns than of virgins; but it is the first and highest spiritual action, it is becoming a citizen of the holy city of God. Now first is the earlier water-baptism a true baptism of fire, and that first sacrament becomes through the second full of life and meaning. Being the children of a clergyman, and frequently eye and ear witnesses of the preparation of others for this sabbath of the heart, we approached it ourselves with the greater reverence. It arose yet higher in me

through the delay of a year, as my father thought the legal age of twelve years was not completely attained until the 21st of March.

As the rector held glowingly before our souls the peculiar conditions of this religious act,—that the impenitent, partaking of the holy supper, like a perjured soul, instead of enjoying heaven was swallowing hell, and that if a Redeemer and Holy One drew near to an impure sinner, the power of his presence to bless would be changed to poison,—streams of hot tears, which he himself helped to swell, were the least that his heart-eloquent address produced from me and others. Glowing repentance for our former lives, and warm resolutions of a blameless future, filled the breast and wrought strongly in it when he closed. How often I went, before the Sunday evening of confession, into the garret, and kneeled that I might repent and confess! And how sweet was it on the day of confession, to pray all the people that we loved, parents and teachers, with stammering tongue and overflowing heart, to forgive all our faults, and thereby to purify equally themselves and us.

But, after the evening of confession, there came a gentler, lighter, purer heaven of peace into the soul; an inexpressible and never again to be repeated bliss, namely, that of feeling one's self wholly pure and free from all sin, and a cheerful, far-extending peace established both with God and man. And yet I looked from these evening hours of mild, warm peace of soul, with ecstasy to the morning hours of excitement around the altar.

Blessed time, when men have thrown off the foul past, and stand, pure and white, free and fresh, in the present, and enter so courageously upon the future!

Who would not become again a child? For in the happy time of childhood the full peace of the soul is so easy to win, as the circle of sacrifices it demands is so much less, and the sacrifices more trifling. The weighty, intricate and extended relations of older men, through breaks and delays, leave the heavenly rainbow of peace imperfect; and not as in the spring-time of life, when it bends into a complete arch. In the *twelfth* year, but not in age, enthusiasm can create one wholly pure.

The youth, like the virgin, finds, through all his warm impulses, less in their circle to conquer, and may gain the highest purity of manners by a nearer and easier path, than

the man and the woman by their cold and selfish exertions through cares, and plagues, and toils. The pure and upright man is always, once, in the earliest time, a diamond of the first water, transparent and colorless; then is he one of the second water, and many and various colors play in its beams, until finally he becomes as dark as the stone which grinds the colors.

Sunday morning the boys and girls, already adorned for the altar, collected in the court of the parsonage to form the festival procession to the church, amid the sound of ringing bells, and hymns sung by themselves. All these festive appearances, the wreaths of flowers, and the dark, perfumed birches that ornamented the house and the temple, completed the powerful emotion in those young souls, whose wings were already stretched on high. During the long sermon the fire kindled and increased in the heart, and the only contest was against thoughts that were too worldly, or not holy enough for the occasion.

As I at last received the sacrament bread from my father, and the cup from the now entirely beloved teacher, the festival of my heart increased, not through the thought of what they were to me,—but my heart and soul and warmth were for heaven. It was the bliss of receiving the Most Holy, that would unite itself with and purify my whole being, and the bliss arose even to the physical sense of an electrical touch at the miracle of the union.*

I left the altar with the purity and the infinity of heaven in my heart. But this heaven manifested itself in me through an unlimited, gentle love, which no fault could impair, which I felt for every human being. The recollection of the happiness I felt, as I looked upon all the church-goers with love and took them all into my heart, have I preserved till this hour, living and fresh in my memory. The female partakers with me at the holy table were to me, with their bridal crowns, like the brides of Christ, not only beloved, but holy, and I inclosed them all in a love so pure and wide, that Catharine, as I recollect, was not at that moment dearer to me than all the others.

The whole earth remained, through the whole day, an

* Every reader of Jean Paul's works will recollect how often, and with what affecting recollections of childhood, he dwells upon these simple ceremonies of the Lutheran church.—TR.

open, unlimited festival of love, and the whole woof and web of life seemed to move before me like a softly gentle Æolian or wind harp, through which the breath of love was breathed. If misanthropy can find an artificial satisfaction in an antipathy limited by no exceptions, of what inexpressibly sweet satisfaction is a universally loving heart susceptible, in that beautiful period of life, when, unfettered by circumstances and uninjured by age, although the field of vision is narrower and the arm shorter, the glow is so much deeper ! And shall we not give ourselves the joy of dreaming our dream of that overflowing heaven which must at last be ours, when, in the higher and warmer focus of a second world of youth, loving with higher powers, embracing a larger spiritual kingdom, the heart from life to life will open wider to receive the *All* ?

In susceptible and impulsive men, every thing remains more easily at the top than the purest and best qualities, as in quicksilver all metals remain on the surface except gold, which sinks to the bottom. Life will allow of no pure white, as Goethe says of the sun. After a few days this precious consciousness of a state of innocence stole away, and I believed that I had sinned, because I threw a stone and wrestled with one of my school companions, and in neither case from enmity, but from a blameless love of play.

Every festival is followed by a working day ; but we go from the one fresh clad to the other, and the past leads us again to new ones. These spring festivals of the heart became, later, in the years of youth, only calm, cheerful sabbaths, when for the first time the ancient great stoical spirits, from Plutarch and Epictetus and Antoninus, appeared before me, and took from me all the pains of earth, and purified my heart from all anger. From these sabbaths I hoped, perhaps, to have brought together a whole sabbath year, or to have borne on with me what belonged to them.*

* The Autobiography here abruptly terminates.

PART SECOND.

LIFE OF JEAN PAUL.

CHAPTER I.

REMARKS UPON THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY.—REMOVAL TO SCHWARZENBACH.—SELF-EDUCATION.—LOSS OF CHILDISH FAITH.

A PECULIAR characteristic of Jean Paul was the transparent light in which his childhood and boyhood were reflected in memory, even to his latest age. The peculiarities of his birth-place had less influence upon his character and writings, than the *remembrance* of them, which in after life he wove into a wide romantic picture. He left Wonsiedel before the time when spiritual consciousness is usually unfolded; but his fancy created later, from remembrance, pictures that he refused to disturb through the reality, and therefore he never again would visit his birth-place.

The beginning of his self-biography furnishes the means for understanding how in this he is distinguished from so many other geniuses; and before we proceed in his Life, we would recall those peculiarities which caused him to be regarded by the Germans as "*Jean Paul der Einzige*."

He is in this remarkably distinguished from Goethe, to whom the memory of his childhood presented only outward circumstances. In his "*Dichtung und Wahrheit*" Goethe recalls only the outward events of his boyish years; the workings of the spirit were forgotten, or had never been observed. Jean Paul, on the contrary, traced to his boyhood all his poetic feelings, and those acquainted with his works will find, that in his first novels they have only repetitions of his early life under the humble roof of his parents. He goes back even further, and poor as he was, Providence gave him a rich source of poetic enjoyment in the *time* of his

birth. He came into the world on the twenty-first of March. He was born with the Spring. He was the child of this white-robed season ; and all who are familiar with his works will remember that they are an apotheosis of this delightful season, and that he remained the poet of the Spring, the chosen priest in her temple, to his latest age.

But this circumstance not merely excited and nourished his poetic fancy ; many of his aphorisms, whether uttered in jest or earnest, show that he really believed in the physical influence that such a circumstance as the equal division of day and night, and other equinoctial phenomena would have upon his birth. It led him to observe all astronomical and meteorological signs and prognostics that could have any influence on the coming seasons. Sun, moon, and stars, and all the appearances in nature touched him nearly, and were all dear to him. The ever-changing clouds upon the Fichtelgebirge were not watched merely with the eye of a poet or painter ; he was the listener and interpreter of Nature in all her relations with man, and his acute and deep observation and knowledge are expressed in many humorous and many serious aphorisms.

Another circumstance of his infancy, as he says, breathed an ever-increasing breath of poetry through his life. It was the dying blessing of his old grandfather. The bystanders said, "Let the old Jacob lay his hand upon the child, and bless him," and he was placed in the bed beside the dying man. The wondering and innocent babe remembered the cold blessing hand, and in after life the man recalled it, "when Destiny led him from dark into brighter hours."

An incident also in his fourteenth month resembles the pale blossom of the snow-drop out of the dark wintry earth. A poor pupil of the school carried him in his arms, and gave him milk to drink, and cherished in him the fondest affection. This poor pupil remained ever afterwards a type of one of the characters in his novels.

Of not less consequence was the memory of his poor and pious grandfather, and the bench where he kneeled to pray, and the poor apartment, still known in Neustadt, where he contended with sharp poverty, and where the harvest of the day and the spiritual seed that were to be sown on the morrow were carefully collected.

The elevated spiritual position of the father, who, in the consciousness of his own worth, bowed down with servile

reverence before no one, had a still more significant poetical influence upon the son. The passionate love of music, that consoled the father under poverty and solitude, and filled him with a holy religious peace, excited also the imagination of the son. But I will mention only one of the peculiarities of the father.

"He came," says the son, "on Christmas morning into our light and festive apartment from his own, as it were with a mourning veil. No one had courage to question him; our mother even was silent over this annual mourning. But he entered into all the joys of the children, and distributed the *Christkind* gifts with more delight than any one—with tears of joy for us, but with sorrow over the life which most of the sons and daughters of men had to endure." This inward mourning of the father is repeated every year by the son, and holds a prominent place in his romances, although concealed by outward joyfulness and activity. It was, in both, the melancholy comparison of the autumn of *reality* with the childlike spring and bloom of the *ideal*.

The solitude in which Jean Paul was educated, deprived of the village school, and cut off from so many childish joys, was the fountain of that deep, continued, unappeased longing for fellowship, that runs through his life and all his works; the reason that he embraced every man with equal love, for every man seemed to him worthy of equal love, and no deception in his boyish years had laid the foundation for the conflicting emotions of love and hatred. His exclusion from the village school and the society of his equals was his severest boyish affliction; therefore this village school remained through his whole life in the rose-light of memory. The thin, consumptive schoolmaster, whom he helped to hang out the cage to take the rising goldfinch, and spread the net over the cherry-trees, has held his place, with the halo of memory around his pale forehead, in all his works.

His domestic education had the same influence upon his predisposition to domestic still life, to "spiritual nest-making," as upon the direction of his genius. As a boy, he considered the young swallows happy because they could sit so secretly in their walled nests; and he preserved the same taste to his old age. A few years before his death he said, "The good domestic simpleton can sit completely contented in a coach, and looking out of the side windows at the villages and gardens, say, 'a pretty, quiet, fire-proof apartment.'"

The enlightened spirit of his father remained always a rich legacy to the son, and his disinterested human love fell as a mantle upon him. "When I think," he says, "that I never saw in my father a trace of selfishness, I thank God ! He stripped off his own garments to clothe the poor ; the bread for the bond peasants was cut larger than he could afford ; and he sent the schoolmaster, spite of his own poverty, a part of every thing he had." When he went from the little village of Joditz to Schwarzenbach, he was followed by the tears of the whole parish, who had become for many years as his own family.

Yet one other circumstance I would mention before we follow the poet to Schwarzenbach ; what he calls his "first love." A mere fancy, awakened by the blue-eyed peasant girl, who led the cows to the meadows. He lived long upon only one pressure of the hand ; but it served to add the charm of memory to the sound of the cow-bell, which, he says, was to him through life "the *kuhreigen* from the high, distant Alps of childhood, and like the sounds from the wind-harp that came from afar off and melted into more lovely distances, till he wept from pleasure and regret."

A. D. 1776,
aged 13.

In January, 1776, Paul's father removed to Schwarzenbach-on-the-Saale, to a larger and more respectable parsonage, and a not less agreeable parish. For some time, Paul's life was without shadows. He says in his journal, "no season had trouble for me, I remember only the bright side of every thing."

Yet there was hanging on his youth's horizon a dark cloud, which soon he was obliged to observe, for already in Schwarzenbach the day began to darken. The improvement in his father's situation did not continue long. Paul allows us a glance into the domestic affairs of his parents. He says, "my father had already incurred debts in Joditz, which were afterwards increased in consequence of the imagined, rather than the real, improvement in his fortune, and the time for cancelling them was always too short."

Then came, to torment his old age, continued bodily pain, and inseparable despondency of mind. This despondency spread over the whole family, and Paul himself did not escape. Although with the same filial piety he touches lightly on the faults of his parents, he yet expresses the painful apprehension that he shall at last be obliged to love

his father less ; and, on this account, he somewhere exhorts parents always to preserve the esteem of their children, that they may never lose their affection.

In his journal he says, " Our father now sat alone in his study, and could think only of himself, or he rode alone to the neighboring parishes ; all our joyful pedestrian journeys to visit his brother pastors were over ; we were without teachers and without spiritual food."

Paul was now permitted to attend the common school ; and while the poetic charm attached to the friendship of numbers was thus destroyed, that heartfelt thirst for *one* with whom he could sympathize awoke, that followed him through life. " In the school," he says, " there was not one industrious, or noble, or talented. Wolfmann was the only boy with whom I could associate, and he was distinguished only for beautiful penmanship." From him Paul learned that exquisite handwriting, like print, in which he wrote his immense extract and manuscript books, that gave him the *soubriquet* of the *Dr. Faustus of the parish*.

The want of that highest happiness of a sensitive youth, the sympathy of a friend, which thrusts all expansion of feeling back upon his own heart, was of deep significance to the unfolding of his genius. In each of his elevated characters—Victor, Albano, Gustavus—he paints the longing for friendship, in colors as true as he afterwards describes the thirst for love ; he is the poet of the one sentiment, as he is the high priest of the other.

From this time Paul dates the loss of many childish feelings, and also of his faith in that, the most beautiful illusion to German children, the real and actual *Christkind* gift at Christmas. He regrets also the decay of that religious enthusiasm that opened to him the gate of heaven at his first communion, and laments that, after his thirteenth birth-day, he became too indifferent to the return of such seasons.

But from this time he also dates the beginning of his self-instruction. He began to understand the inefficiency of his old master, Werner, and took his education into his own hands. It is a fatal period for the influence of the master, when the boy discovers that he can be no longer his guide to the temple of Science ; and Werner lost his influence from the moment Paul discovered that he used a German printed translation, when hearing his lessons from the Hebrew Bible.

The chaplain Volkel,* whose instructions have already been mentioned in his self-biography, and whom Paul loved, notwithstanding his angry and splenetic temper, introduced him to the study of philosophy, and led him to the belief that, even without the Bible, a God and a Providence could be proved.

Another young man, Vogel, a friend of Volkel, had perhaps more influence upon the formation of his character than any other person, for he encouraged him in being his own self-teacher, and the industrious pupil of his own exertions. Both wondered at the boy, and admired, not only his unlimited zeal for knowledge and science, but acknowledged his extraordinary talent and the ripeness of his mind. By admitting him to an equality of intellectual rank with persons so much his seniors in years, they strengthened his belief in his own powers. In youth, great humility is almost invariably the attendant of superior genius. The future prophet knows not that his face is radiant as that of Moses when he descended from the mount, until it is reflected from another. It is necessary to make a young mind *believe* in itself, before it will trust to its own success. Paul was happy in the encouraging esteem of these friends, and he wrote afterwards to Vogel in these terms: "The praise that you add I will not contradict, nor mistrust, except that I may hear it again. Be you my guide in the path to truth and happiness. Lead the youth who is so willing to follow. Your applause will be impulse enough to make me industrious, and your censure will spur me on to improvement. I am much indebted to you; yes, truly, I am much indebted to you. It is my good fortune to have known you. Gratitude and love will never be extinguished in my heart."

This friend possessed, and increased daily, an extensive library, that was equally valuable for the number and the importance of the books on many sciences. This was a rare thing in a country parish, and an extraordinary happiness for Jean Paul, or rather a work of Providence that, through these dead teachers, he should enjoy the means of self-education.

His thirst for knowledge constrained him to read books of every species, and of the most heterogeneous contents;

* The reader will recollect, Volkel was the friend who proposed teaching Paul chess and philosophy.

hence the origin of that wonderful universality in knowledge, as the Germans call it, which indeed all richly gifted minds seek, and of that power of illustration, which, to the readers of Jean Paul, is a perpetual subject of wonder and astonishment.

To the boy of fifteen years these books opened a mine of knowledge and of new ideas; he could not make them all his own, and they must be returned; therefore he adopted his plan of extract-books, that afterwards became a rich library by itself. Before his seventeenth year he had made many thick volumes, each of more than three hundred quarto pages.

In the beginning, his extracts were from philosophical theology; then from books of natural history, medicine, poetry, jurisprudence. In his fifteenth year, one of his extracts is entitled "On the eternity of hell punishments."*

We may form an idea of the penetrating judgment and discrimination with which he read, from the following extract of a letter, in his sixteenth year, to his friend Vogel.

... "Adding so much benevolence to the old, makes it difficult to find words to express sufficient gratitude, and yet more difficult to be bold enough to ask for more. Shall I venture to ask for more books? Your goodness gives me courage, and I pray for the third part of *Semler's Investigation of the Canon*, *Goethe's* works, the second part of *Lavater's Journal*, *Helvetius*, and *Lessing's Fragments*. I do not distrust your willingness to serve me, when I humbly pray a second time for a book, from which I promise myself the most valuable views.

"The following proposition appears to me at all times safe: either this book contains truth or error—if the first, nothing should prevent me from reading it; if the last, it will not convince me if the errors are too obvious, and then it cannot injure; or it does convince. But in the last circumstance, what danger have I to fear, if I exchange a *truth*, of which I am not convinced from reason, but which is merely an opinion with me, if I exchange this, I say, for an *error* that enlightens me. Dare I once more ask for it? Yet I would rather want a hundred books, than in the small-

* That Jean Paul was intended by his father for the study of theology, may account for his earlier extracts being upon subjects of theology and controversial divinity.

est degree make myself unworthy of your benevolence and love."

The sophistry of the youth of sixteen, and the reluctance of his friend Vogel to lend him "*Lessing's Fragments*," will not permit us to pass over the change that had taken place in the poet since the celebration of that first communion which in his autobiography he describes with such elevation of religious enthusiasm. At this time he had exchanged the tenderness of a devout heart for "the most zealous heterodoxy." Such experiences as these have often been observable in minds of the highest order; with the intense fervor with which the mysteries of religion take hold of these young hearts, do they pursue the painful doubts that afterwards arise, till they are led back, through faith and love, to the clear atmosphere of truth.

Jean Paul's Schwarzenbach life had at this time a powerful influence upon the direction of his mind and studies. He found no time and no object to satisfy the wants of the heart, and no food for the imagination. The little, round, red, pock-marked face of the little girl could scarcely have filled his fancy, and all his efforts were directed to the cultivation of the reason and intellect. A perfect cultivation consists in the equal unfolding of the affections, the imagination, and the reason; but he was entering that cold epoch of the understanding, when his only desire was to heap up knowledge, and the warm lava-world of glowing feeling was for many years built over with a heavy crust of earth. A powerful genius will sooner or later recover the complete harmony of its nature; but that Richter injured the faculty of poetic creation, by filling his mind with the sciences, is certain, from the wonderful self-deception with which he expresses the doubt, whether he had not been created for a philosopher rather than a poet. In Goethe only, the complete harmony of all his powers seems from earliest life never to have been disturbed.

CHAPTER II.

HOF GYMNASIUM.—SCHOOL ANECDOTES.—DEATH OF THE FATHER.
—DOMESTIC TROUBLES.

A. D. 1779, aged 16. AT Easter, in 1779, the father of our poet took an important step, and placed him at the Gymnasium, or town school, in the little city of Hof.* The examining rector would have placed him in the *first* division of the *Primaner*, or first class; but his father, to protect him from the ill will of his companions, chose to have him placed in the middle division of the first class.† It depended on the talents and industry of the pupil to bring his place to honor, and his companions were a silent jury, who decided upon his merits. Paul was placed under peculiar disadvantages; for to preserve his rank he had only two years to stay in the school, while the others remained three years without exception. So great a difference brought Paul into a false position, and he soon remarked that he stood alone among his companions. He has left a humorous description of his appearance when he entered the school, and the ridicule it excited in the city pupils.

The stuff and the form of his clothes were of village manufacture, probably woven by his grandfather, made by his mother, and negligently put on. With a self-possessed inward look, which seemed wholly unconcerned at outward circumstances; yet with penetrating glance, and true-hearted, unconstrained confidence, he met those who gave him only ridicule in return. Two instances are mentioned, which, although trifling in themselves, must not be omitted, as they threw a pure light on the boyhood of the poet.

There was one among the boys, that took a malicious pleasure in tormenting him; one, too, from whom Paul, in his warm-hearted and generous confidence, looked for sympathy, as he had been a previous acquaintance, and belonged

* Hof is a little city of about five thousand inhabitants, and, beside its Gymnasium, is distinguished for woollen manufactures.

† To understand many particulars that occur in the Life, it will be necessary to bear in mind that a gymnasium consists of eight classes, and that the *Primaner*, or first class, is instructed by the rector.

to a family connected with his own. The French master was an indifferent, and poorly-paid instructor, who had been a tapestry-worker. He had but one book, which he carried in his pocket; and when he laid this book upon the long table, at the head of which he sat, only one, of twenty or thirty pupils, could look over to translate a passage. The mischievous boy, already mentioned, told Paul that it was an established custom for the pupil, when he first entered the French school, to kiss the hand of the master. This seemed to Paul but a suitable custom, and by no means extraordinary, as in his own family it was an established expression of reverence from the young to the old, and Paul, whenever he went to his grandfather's, kissed his hand behind his loom. When he entered the French school, therefore, he approached bashfully to the master, and, with honest faith, carried the brawny hand to his lips.

The poor Frenchman, suspecting some mystification or insult, broke out into the most violent anger, and Paul barely escaped a blow from the hand on which he was imprinting his loyal homage. The mirth of the class broke out into loud jubilee; and, between them both, Paul stood confused, ashamed, and in the highest degree mortified.

In this instance, he was taken by surprise, and betrayed by his loyal nature; but in another attempt to impose upon him, he asserted his rank as a scholar with firmness, nay, with a dignity that compelled them ever after to respect him.

Every week, two of the pupils among the *under* Primaners were called out in succession to bring in the bread with which they were regaled between the lessons when the teachers were exchanged. As before mentioned, his companions were determined not to acknowledge the rank of Jean Paul as a *first* Primaner, and therefore called on the village boy to be their purchaser of bread. But the village boy, who would have sacrificed every thing to them in honest love, stood firm in his rank as Primaner. When they pressed the creutzers upon him for the purchase of the bread, he let his arms sink down with his closed hands, and stood firmly in that position. Thus, without complaint to the teacher, or a word of contest with his companions, he gained forever that ascendancy which a firm will asserts over the wavering multitude.

But if Paul was always victorious, he had many dark

hours to conquer, that left a life-long impression upon his mind. Although his companions unwillingly acknowledged his first rank in almost all branches of knowledge, it is impossible they could have appreciated the splendid gifts of his mind, or the extent of his already acquired knowledge. He overcame with his mighty power the difficulties of his school life, though he felt keenly the want, of what he says in his notes, Heaven had denied to his youth, "*teachers and love.*"

Between the conrector and Paul no good understanding could exist. However judicious may be the arrangements of a school and the prescribed method for teaching, every thing depends on the talent of the instructor for teaching. This talent, like every other, must be native or original, and united with a cheerful, unsuspicious and hopeful disposition, that strives for nothing so much as to be always young, that it may enter into the sympathies of youth, anticipate and help its efforts to rise into the higher regions of knowledge and wisdom. This talent is alone able to excite pure scientific zeal, and to awake a grateful disposition in youth.

Sometimes this honorable aim is found in men who have devoted the whole life from free choice to the art of teaching; but it can scarcely be expected of those scantily-paid teachers who have stepped into the office as a passing resting-place, while they are waiting upon Providence for something better, and their compelled and reluctant instruction can hardly fail to disgust an ingenuous youth.

Neither of the instructors of Paul in the Hof school possessed the great and generous art of teaching, and, from the conrector's method alone, the elevating science of history became absolutely disagreeable to Paul.

As, through the accident of his birth, theology occupied much of his attention, and his mind had been so early turned to philosophy, he followed the critical judgments of the age, and looked upon the heterodoxy of the time as the companion of philosophy. History, in as far as it is a collection of names and dates and places, without claiming the exertion of any particular talent, or of any faculty except that of memory, had no charm for him; but as his theology or his skepticism led him to study the history of the church, which introduced him to the general history with which it is inseparably connected, his aversion yielded, and some years after, he wrote thus to a friend. "History has the highest value.

in so far as we, by means of it, as by the aid of nature, can discover and read the infinite Spirit, who in nature, and in history, as with letters, legibly writes to us. He who finds a God in the physical world, will also find one in the moral, which is history. Nature reveals to our heart a Creator; history a Providence."

When Paul entered the Hof gymnasium, he was taken under the roof of the honest cloth-weaver, where a little "chamber in the wall" was prepared for him, and where he was soon furnished with a complete suit of clothes woven by his grandfather. The situation of the house, and the comparative abundance of his grandfather's means of living, had for Paul's mind a peculiar charm; for we cannot forget how the old errand woman, in his childhood, coming from Hof to Joditz, laden with his grandmother's presents, was anxiously looked for, and when after any delay she arrived, all the joyful family were collected in the common apartment to receive her. His romantic walks also from Hof, when he returned secretly laden with presents, and the reflection of the setting sun upon the Saale, awoke those vague longings in the boy, that were never appeased, but that could not be forgotten.

Soon after Paul entered the Hof school his father, who had long been an invalid, died, leaving to Paul, the eldest of his children, the care of his mother and the payment of his debts; and he had not been many weeks under the roof of his grandparents, when both, within a short period of each other, paid the debt of nature. The favorite daughter, Paul's mother, had the misfortune to be invidiously distinguished in their will, and that which might have been a blessing, became, through her character and the envy of the other relatives, a perpetually increasing evil.

His mother, however tenderly loved by Paul, appears to have been a weak-minded and obstinate woman. She was, however, no less the favorite of the grandmother, and the presents she used to send to her under the pretence of *payments*, gave offence to another daughter, who was less favored by the grandmother. This injudicious partiality was continued after death, as already mentioned, by leaving to Paul's mother the house and estate at Hof. Envy and displeasure were now no longer silent, and a lawsuit was instituted by the other relations to break the will. Meantime, as the produce of the small family estate was contested, the ground was left uncultivated, and became every day

less and less valuable ; so that Paul, when he was scarcely eighteen, was called upon to be the adviser and guardian angel of his mother, and, as far as it was in his power, the protector of his family.

His mother, notwithstanding the earnest dissuasion of Paul, and the advice of friends whose countenance and support she enjoyed there, determined to leave Schwarzenbach, and remove to Hof, where she was drawn by the possession of two small houses, and her love for the grave of the buried parents. In Hof, she was wholly isolated, without friends or advisers, as Paul had already gone to Leipzig. The successor of the pains-taking cloth-weaver, whose whole life had been spent in gaining and saving, could hardly escape the charge of extravagance, if she only *spent*, in the most frugal manner, what had been so industriously gained and so thriftily hoarded. The proverb was soon applied to the poor widow: "The sparer will have a spender." With debts which she could not pay without incurring new ones, and in contest with her nearest relations, while the house that she inherited was fast going to decay for the want of repairs, which her wasted funds prevented her from making, the situation of Paul's mother was far from enviable. Added to all this were the reproaches of her neighbors, who did not fail to ascribe to her own unthriftiness and incapacity the decay of such a long-honored family, so that she soon learnt the truth of the adage, "the unfortunate stand alone."

But not alone stood the mother of Jean Paul. Her widowed, deserted and humiliating position seemed only to excite the generous and self-sacrificing affections of Paul, and to stimulate his filial piety.

From this glance into his domestic circumstances we see how much Paul's youthful years were darkened and oppressed by the cares and sorrows of his mother, as well as by his own sharp contests with actual want.

CHAPTER III.

YOUTHFUL FRIENDSHIPS.—WERTHER PERIOD.—FIRST BOOK-
MAKING.—“ON THE PRACTICE OF THINKING.”

A. D. 1780, I HAVE anticipated the time of our narrative, to
aged 17. give the reader a glimpse into the domestic circumstances of Paul's family. We return to the gymnasium at Hof, to mention the youthful friendships of one, of whom it has been said, “his writings would have created friendship, if it had had no existence before.” We find that although his friendships ripened slowly, they were life-long, living in his memory even after the death of his friends, and cherished as the memorials of buried love to the day of his own death.

His acquaintance with John Bernard Herman began at the gymnasium in Hof. He was the son of a poor tool-maker ; and his late appearance every morning at the school was reluctantly consented to by the teachers, because he was a mechanic's apprentice, and had daily a prescribed quantity of sheep's wool yarn to reel off and prepare for his younger sister's knitting, before he could think of the necessary preparations for the hour of school. The generous nature of Paul led him to be the friend and helper of one more indigent than himself, and to offer him not only his personal assistance, but the use of all his extract books and manuscripts.

But Paul must have been irresistibly drawn to a character like Herman, who had the power of rising above the discouraging circumstances of his life, and of devoting himself to elevating pursuits ; and Herman's influence upon the moral and spiritual being of Paul was so much greater, as his present devotion to philosophy and the natural sciences coincided with the bent of Herman's genius. It is to be regretted that scarcely any thing remains, by which we can know the influence which so remarkable an individuality of character, as that of Herman's, must have had upon Jean Paul. We know only that his was the germ of a character often introduced in Paul's later works.

The next in time, but perhaps the first friend in confidential intercourse, was Adam Lorenzo von Oerthel, the eldest son of a rich merchant, who possessed many estates

in the neighborhood of Hof. Topen was his place of residence, after he left off business; but for his son he had built a small garden-house in Hof, and devoted it to the use of the young man while he was at the gymnasium. This retreat, situated in the bend of an arm of the Saale, and surrounded with lofty trees, looked upon rich meadow-grounds, which were terminated by a beautiful lake. Delightful must it have been to the youthful friends, after their school duties were over, to wander here in the moonlight, and with harpsichord or singing, or listening to the music in the neighborhood, (for all Germany is musical,) to have passed their confidential hours. Had Paul continued his autobiography to this time, how would he have delighted to describe this place, and to recall the friendship here knit so closely with Oerthel.

This was the remarkable *Werther* period, when every youth was infected with sentimentality. Paul also passed through this period, and was only slightly, and for a very short time, touched with the disease. His slight symptoms were more from sympathy with his friend, than from a real infection. One fragment only of a remarkably sentimental letter remains, which should be literally translated.

"Ah! thy few lines have caused me tears—*me*, who have so few joys! and these also I shall soon miss, for I perhaps shall be absent. I shall imagine thy walks in the garden at night, when the full moon shines, and think how we formerly looked together over the flashing water! how we raised our eyes, filled with warm tears, to the universal Father! Ah, the days of childhood are passed; soon, with both of us, will these of the pupil be completed! soon the whole of life!

... "At this moment you came in and interrupted me. I read the paper you gave me; and now I can write no longer. My tears flow! Yet something more—distinct thoughts of death occupy me now—perhaps you also. Now shimmers the moon calmly. Peace sinks into the troubled soul! How awful, under the pale shimmering of the moon, to imagine all the neighboring hillocks turned to graves, and *there* to wander, to watch!

"How awful the death-stillness that surrounds me, and the immeasurable feeling that seizes upon me! How elevating is it nightly to visit the graves of sweetly slumbering friends, and ah! the trusted heart that now the worm feeds upon!

“Read, in Yorick’s journey, where he was by the grave of the monk! But of this description speak not a word! You can write at any rate!”

From this fragment we see how, at this time, Jean Paul was ashamed, even before his most intimate friend, of his own emotions, and could only trust himself to speak of what interested him on paper. He who at a later period had the courage to give to the world the tenderest, most touching, and most enthusiastic emotions, without even the veil of rhyme or verse, and without seeking to conceal himself behind the mask of a fictitious character.

These emotions, that at the same age in Goethe took the form of poetry and were embodied in the romance of Werther, were guarded with the strong armor of science in Jean Paul. But the deep fountain was in his breast, gathering fulness from every little rill, and from every summer shower, till the time was ripe for it to be unsealed, and to pour its streams around.

The reason that Werther, and the sensation which the publication of so remarkable a work produced, made so little impression on Jean Paul, appears to have been that his mind at this time, together with his friend Herman’s, whose enthusiasm for the *natural sciences* was boundless, was turned to subjects of natural history and philosophy, as the titles of his Essays in his manuscript book show: “Is the world in perpetual motion?” “What is universal in Physiognomy?” “How are men, animals, plants, and still smaller beings, made perfect?”

Although Jean Paul had not at this time found the true direction of his genius, yet that spiritual activity was thoroughly awakened, that never permitted him afterwards to be idle, but continued unwearied till his death, when the pen dropped from his hand, and an unfinished work was borne on his coffin to his grave. As a child, he played at book-making; he now, as a school-boy, made a book for his own benefit, “on the practice of thinking.”

It is remarkable, that in this book there are none of those peculiarities of expression which have been called affectations, which make his books the despair of English students. On the contrary the style is clear, concise, and remarkably simple. The limits of this work will allow but a few short extracts.

After the title-page he writes :

"These essays are merely for myself. They are not made to teach others any thing new. They are not ends, but means ; not new truths themselves, but means to find them. I shall often contradict myself ; declare many things truths *here*, and errors *there*. But man is man, and not always the same."

The passage, in which Paul speaks of florid and ornamented writing, is remarkable, as he condemns a style that was afterwards so singularly his own.

"The writer who produces many comparisons, who composes in an ornamental style, appears to me to have little depth ; at least, comparisons and figures cannot occur when he thinks severely. Whoever reflects, places the subject upon which he thinks alone before him ; all his views are turned to that alone ; there is room for no ideas but such as immediately concern it. On the contrary, when he revises his work, he can bring comparisons and figures to illustrate the subject. But is that useful with heavy materials ?" . . .

"Many think themselves to be truly God-fearing, when they call this world a valley of tears. But I believe they would be more so, if they called it a happy valley. God is more pleased with those who think every thing right in the world, than with those who think nothing right. With so many thousand joys, is it not black ingratitude, to call the world a place of sorrow and torment ?"

In the next extract, Paul differs widely from the practice of the present day.

"Many theological propositions that the enlightened consider false, may have their use, their manifold use, with smaller and less enlightened people. They are spurs to certain actions, that would not be done without them. To people who believe them, because they have not power to investigate them, they have their use ; but to the wise the benefit ceases, for he believes them not, and cannot, because he is too enlightened. In the world, truth and error are as wisely distributed as storm and sunshine. Thou rejectest certain dogmas that are false : but canst thou substitute truths in their place, that will be as useful as the errors ? Perhaps an error has more useful results than a truth in its place. . . . In God's best world is there no

error without useful consequences? Wherever an error is, it is not in vain. It is, in its place, better than a truth!"*

"Leave the ignorant an error of which he is himself convinced, and bring no truth before him whose proofs he is incapable of understanding. Observe, especially, what promotes the piety of thy brother, and do not mix with the benefit of his faith the proofs of its truth, but observe its good or evil influences. The wise love truth, for truth itself, as they delight in reason; the unwise, as it is of use to them. Take away the usefulness of truth, and, as they are no philosophers, they have nothing left." . . .

"We do not discover our weaknesses to those whom we believe to have none themselves. For this cause geniuses appear to form friendships most readily with those who are in understanding far beneath them.

"Weak people live more in confidential friendship with each other, than geniuses." . . .

"Words never can express the whole that we feel; they give but an outline. When violent affections press, the word is never found that can paint the circumstances of the soul. We say only that something is there, but not what, and how it is. Only he whose soul is equally tuned, feels the same; but he feels not merely what the other expresses, but what he *cannot* express. He paints out the picture that the other has only faintly sketched in outline. Two words are often enough to place a soul in a situation that no added words can paint. But the better the sketch is that the full soul makes, so much easier is it for the reader to complete the picture. Goethe is such a sketcher. He touches the sympathizing heart at every point. Has not all Germany wept with him?"

"Writings, where the author has thought, please us; but those please us more, that excite thought in us. We appropriate to ourselves what the author has found, and flatter ourselves that we have already known what he has done for us."

"Every one is pleased when a writer is humble, when a genius says he is none. We praise this apparent blindness to one's own merit; but, I believe, with injustice. Wherefore should a man that feels his own greatness, not acknow-

* The reader must bear in mind that this was written by a youth of sixteen years.

ledge it? Wherefore should a wise and enlightened man appear before the public making a leg,* like a dunce? Perhaps this is the cause: We allow such a one to be a great man, but we will not learn it from himself; our self-love is too much offended. If a man says of himself, that he is great, it is as much as if he said, *we are little*. But geniuses, in seeking to recommend themselves, show too much humiliation. They can be just, but they need not on that account lower themselves. Man is just, when he does not appropriate to himself more merit than belongs to him, or rob another of what is his due.

I have given these extracts, not so much for their intrinsic value, but as private memoranda of a youth of sixteen, at the time he was contending with poverty at home, and with enemies at school.

The pastor Vogel, to whom he had lent the manuscript, sent him the day before his departure for the university of Leipzig, a letter, that would be injured without a literal translation.

"Excellent young German! from whom I promise the world *much* in future: My dear friend: You go, then, in the morning to Leipzig? Go, then, in God's name, and come not again until you are *THE*—that you must and shall be. My good wishes follow you. I know your mind, I know your heart. Upon mine you have, with your goodness, impressed the most grateful emotions; and you may yet acquire more desert with me, than I at present possess with you. *Fulfil only my prophecy!* and, yet once more, farewell!"

The university of Leipzig was chosen for Jean Paul, instead of Erlangen in his native principality, in a mistaken idea that a youth needed nothing in Leipzig but a certificate of his poverty, and free tables and free lectures would be open to him.

The fame of the professors, especially in theology, to which Paul had been destined by his parents, offered another inducement; and the great mercantile activity of the place presented a theatre where a young man could, with most facility, by the exertion of almost any species of talent, gain the means of support for himself and his indigent family.

* The German word is *Bucklingen*, which means literally to make a leg.

CHAPTER IV.

RICHTER ENTERS THE UNIVERSITY OF LEIPZIG.—LETTERS FROM LEIPZIG.—CHANGE OF STUDIES—LETTERS TO HIS MOTHER.

A. D. 1781,
aged 18. ON the 19th of May, Richter entered the University of Leipzig, and was on the same day matriculated. He soon found himself deceived in almost all his hopes. At this time, without any especial choice of his own, he was designed to the study of theology, as it was understood by others as well as himself, that the preacher's son must follow in his father's footsteps; but before he entered the university, the philosophical theology and the heterodox critical direction of the age had had much influence upon his mind, and the lectures he heard there were only aids and accessories to his own self-instruction. Yet he perseveringly attended the philosophical lectures of Platner, the exegetical and dogmatical instructions of Morus, and the lectures upon morals by Wieland. He listened with attention, and when the proposition of the teacher excited an idea, or awakened an objection, made a minute of it in his common-place book.

At this time, also, he began to learn English; but his only instruction in that language was a two hours' public lecture, once a week; the rest he gained by private reading.

But his life at Leipzig may best be learnt by extracts from his letters; premising that the enthusiastic youth found himself alone, without friends, in a noisy and expensive city, where he had gone with the mistaken idea that he could live without money.

In his first letter to the rector Werner he had not been wholly undeceived.*

“Leipzig.

“The city is beautiful, if a city can be called so, that has only great houses and long streets. The splendid places that you promised I find not! Every where an eternal uniformity,—no valleys, no hills; it is completely without the

* In these letters, as in all that I have translated, I have selected merely such passages as will throw light on the biography, as they are too long for entire insertion.

charm that makes our native region so agreeable. In many things it is as you promised, in others not. I can dine for eighteen *pfennige*.^{*} Further, I have been presented by the rector Clodius to all the colleges.

"For my beautiful room at the Three Roses, Peterstrass, No. 2, in the third story, precisely where Oerthel lived, I have to pay only sixteen rix dollars;[†] but I must leave it in the time of the fair. The students also are as courteous and polite as you led me to expect. In the following particulars alone your information appears to me incorrect. The *informazioni*[‡] are rare, or the number of those who *inform* is immensely great. In the great houses they take only those who have a recommendation, and a good one is rare. From every one I have heard that not very consoling proverb, *Lipsia vult expectari*; and that *expectari* is so undecided, that if one has lived fifty years in Leipzig, and all this time has received no office, they yet preach to him "*to wait*, they will give it to him."

"Herr M. Kirsch is with me from Hof; his presence has helped me much, and he has written me a right good *testimonium paupertatis*. I need only produce this to receive presents from the colleges. This testimony has helped me also with Professor Platner, who loves philosophy so much."

Paul wrote again soon after, "My conjecture of the *expectari* is not contradicted, it is rather strengthened. I have yet no *Informazion*, no free table, no acquaintance with students, in truth, nothing! It is not easy to obtain an introduction to the professors. The most renowned, whose esteem would be most useful to me, are oppressed with business, surrounded by a multitude of respectable people, and by a swarm of envious flatterers; so that those who are not distinguished by dress or rank, approach them with difficulty. If one would speak to a professor without an especial invitation, he incurs the suspicion of vanity. When I think of the multitude of students who are particularly recommended to them, of the numbers of bad students who get the ear of the professor, and prejudice him against the better, the whole phenomenon is explained. But do not give up your hopes. I will overcome all these difficulties. I shall receive some

* About two pence English.

† A rix-dollar is sixty-seven cents.

‡ *Informazion* appears to be giving private lessons.

help, and at length I shall not need it. *Here I touch upon a riddle, whose solution you must wait for.* To my mother I have only darkly hinted it, for at present it has no solution; only this will I say to you: it is neither stipendium, nor table, nor *informazione*, nor any thing of the kind. It relates to something that I cannot speak of until my expectations are answered.

"But know you what especially impels me to industry? Precisely what you have said in your letter—*my mother*. I owe it to her to endeavor to sweeten a part of her life, that otherwise has been so unfortunate, and to lessen, by my help and sympathy, the great sorrow she has suffered through the loss of my father. It is also my duty to do something for the happiness of my brothers. Were it not for this, my studies would be wholly different. I would only work at what pleased me; for what I felt strength, power, inclination. Were it not for my mother, I would never during my whole life take a public office. This assertion, which perhaps surprises you, did you know the whole circumstances of my situation, the disposition of my mind, and the strange direction my destiny has taken, would appear to you reasonable.* . . .

"Dr. Ernesti was buried on the 15th of September. He will allow himself many hours in heaven with Cicero. His noble Roman head now moulders in dust. His fame flutters over his grave, but he hears it not. Truly, Pope is right: Fame is an imagined life in the breath of others. Thus the blow of death scatters all the frippery of our follies. The wish falls often warm upon my heart, that I may learn nothing here, that I cannot continue in the other world! that I may do nothing here but deeds that will bear fruit in heaven! Enough."

"And you—O! a thousand thanks for your excellent letter; a thousand thanks for the love you express to me. But I wish more than merely *to say* my thanks to you for all that I owe you; for the foundation of my mind and heart. In that for which a pupil can never repay his teacher, I can only shed a tear of gratitude, and offer up a wish to the All Good!"

"I write to you very differently from what I write to

* Paul no doubt hints at the skepticism under which his mind was now struggling.

others. Every where else I may put on a little mask, or paint, at least a little; but with you I do it not; I show myself to you as I am. You know my faults, and I give myself no trouble to conceal them; therefore will you let no one see my letter, for every body will laugh at one who is honest enough to let his heart be seen at the expense of his understanding. There are people who take every one for a fool, who is not as frivolous as themselves."

"Fashion is here a tyrant under whom all bow. Beaux cover the streets, and in fine days they flutter about like butterflies. One like the other, they are all puppets, and none has the heart to be himself. These gentlemen flutter from toilette to toilette, from assembly to assembly, till they sleep from weariness."

In another letter to the same friend, we find Paul's views upon the present direction of his reading, and that he had already thought of relinquishing the study of theology as a profession.

"In permitting me to answer with frankness and candor the questions that your kindness has led you to ask respecting my present employments, my only fear is that I shall appear like an egotist. . . . I have heard, and still hear, many exgetical lectures upon John, and the Epistle to the Hebrews. Many on Paul's letters, and the history of the apostles by Morus. Lectures on logic and metaphysics by Platner; æsthetics by the same; morals by Wieland; upon geometry and trigonometry by Gehlar, and the English language by Hempel. When I tell you what I study, you will understand the reason why I have first heard these college lectures. The languages are now my favorite employment, merely because I have acquired a love for certain sciences.

"It is difficult for me to say certain things to you, that I can scarcely say to myself, without the appearance of self-pride and ostentation; but it becomes easier to say them when I recollect that you know me too well to suspect pride where it cannot be, or to find it where it is not.

"I have made it a rule in my studies, not to force upon myself that which is decidedly disagreeable to me. That for which I am unsuited I find already useless. I have sometimes deceived myself when I have followed this rule; but I have never repented falling into an error that—"

* There is something left unfinished.

... "To study what one does not love ; that is, to contend with ennui, weariness, and disgust, for a good that we do not desire ; to lavish the talent, that we feel is created for something else, in vain, on a subject where we fear that we cannot succeed, is to withdraw so much power from one where we could make progress.

"But in this way can you earn your bread ? This is the miserable objection that is made against it. I know nothing in the world by which bread cannot be earned ; I will not therefore say that he can never succeed, who has for the end of his studies merely the relief of his pressing necessities.

"In the one case there will be more, in the other less success.

"Granted—and I know not whether I shall gain my bread by that for which I feel no power, in which I find no pleasure, and make no progress ; or in that in which enjoyment stimulates, and my talents help me.

"One must live wholly for a science, sacrifice to it every power, every enjoyment, every moment, and busy one's self with the other sciences, only as they are accessories to the favorite. If, through adverse outward circumstances, the insignificant reward of common inferior talent should be lost, it will be repaid tenfold by the exquisite enjoyment that springs from the pursuit of truth, the charm that is found in the exercise of a favorite talent, and perhaps the honor that sooner or later may be acquired. This is my defence.

"Formerly I read only philosophical writings ; now I read in preference the witty, elegant, imaginative authors. Once I did not love the French language, now I read French books rather than German. The wit of Voltaire, the eloquence of Rousseau, the ornamented style of Helvetius, and the ingenious remarks of Toussaint, all these impel me to the study of the French language. I do not believe that I learn much from them, but they please me. With the impression of the finest passages, and the witty, the remembrance of the art with which they were composed remains also.

"I read Pope—he delights me ; so does Young. There is undoubtedly nothing more splendid in the English language ! I learn it now chiefly to read that excellent weekly paper, the Spectator, of which we have in German but a miserable translation.

"The eloquence of Rousseau enchants me. I find eloquence also in Cicero and Seneca. I love both these now, above all things, and prefer reading them to the best German authors. I love the ancients, and have given up many of those foolish judgments by which I was misled, through the poor instruction of my Latin master.

"Will you allow me a little digression, upon reading the ancient authors in school? What I say may be false, but with me it was true. To imitate an ancient author, to find him beautiful, to love him and occupy one's self with him, a boy must have taste."

Here Paul breaks off his digression about the ancients, and his account of his own studies. We find no more letters upon the subject at this time.

Paul's correspondent objected to this estimation of fame in the case of Ernesti, and answered him thus:

"If you believe that Ernesti has taken nothing with him but his reputation, and that this is only an imaginary possession, it appears to me you err, and would, like Pope, depreciate this imaginary life in the breath of others. Is it, then, not desirable that our memory should be honored, that other minds, even after the lapse of centuries, should enter into union with our own? If man looks upon Fame with indifference, he will not wish to be great himself, and the world will become poor in splendid deeds."

Paul, in his next letter, sought to explain, rather than to excuse, his assertions upon Ernesti's reputation.

"What you say of fame is just; what I have asserted thereon is not just. I have never looked upon reputation with indifference, never considered it an imaginary good; for what is more probable, than that in eternity we shall enjoy its richest and most enduring fruit? At the time I wrote my letters to you, I was, through the recent death of Ernesti, through the idle pomp of his funeral, and the comparison of his former and present circumstances, exactly in the temper to assert an erroneous opinion.

"But perhaps they valued the departed Ernesti more than he deserved.* He spake Cicero's Latin, but he had not his eloquence. He had good Latin words, but not splendid thoughts; he was astonishingly learned, with moderate powers of understanding. He was more indebted

* Ernesti was called the German Cicero.

for his reputation to his industry than to his genius, more to reflection than to penetration. He was a great philologist, but not a great philosopher. Even this made him perhaps not half as great as a Lessing, or even as a Platner. But wholly to paint the last, Platner, I must be himself, or more. One must hear, or read him, to know how to admire him. And this man, who unites so much sound philosophy with so much grace, so much knowledge of mankind with such extensive learning, so much knowledge of the ancient Grecian with the modern literature; who is equally great as a philosopher, physician, æsthetic, and learned man; and who possesses as much virtue as wisdom, is as much endowed with sensibility as penetration—even this man is not only the envy of every inferior mind, but the object of the persecution and secret slander of every blockhead.

“He was once called before the consistory at Dresden to defend himself against the charge of Materialism. There is nothing of which he is less guilty. No one can have read his *Aphorisms* without perceiving that he is the most enlightened enemy of Materialism.*

“I have often made the remark, that a great man, to preserve his reputation, must not live long. New monuments of his greatness are constantly expected of him. By making his past actions the heralds of his future, they raise him to an unattainable point. They turn always their eyes forwards, and seek what he is going to be, and forget what he has been, ceasing to admire when they have nothing *new* to admire—he has overlived himself. After his death, they go back with the great man over the whole course of his path; but before, they refuse to give him unlimited praise, because they would allure him to greater actions, and not, through too great appreciation of the present, prevent him from striving for perfection. Thus it was with the great Young, in England; and thus it has been with Ernesti in Leipzig. A great spirit may only first attain that existence which unites him with the whole of humanity, when he has laid down the present.”

From the above extract relating to Platner, we cannot

* I have not been able to find any account of Platner. Menzel says, “his *Aphorisms* do not contain so ingenious a selection of thoughts, as Rochefoucault’s, but very much that is striking, and worthy to be taken to heart even now.”—TR.

avoid the inference, that he exerted a powerful and long enduring influence upon Richter. He says, many years afterwards, that "Platner's manner in reading the lines from Shakspeare,

‘ We are such stuff
As dreams are made of, and our little life
Is rounded with a sleep.’

created whole volumes within him." Platner thought and wrote in *aphorisms*; and, as this became Jean Paul's own manner, we cannot avoid the conclusion that the pupil imitated the master, especially as it cannot have escaped the most careless reader, that Richter's letters and journals are at this time entirely free from his later acquired peculiarities.

He appears to have approached no nearer to Platner than the lecture-room. Paul's poverty and modesty held him in obscurity; the warmest wish of his heart, the deep thirst of his soul to become personally acquainted with intellectual men, was wholly disappointed in Leipzig. But that he might not fail in every thing, he then turned with renewed ardor, with more intense industry, upon books. His studies had taken a new direction; foreign literature, the French as well as the English, particularly Rousseau, held captive the youth of eighteen years. Richter must have found in many of the characteristics of Rousseau a reflection of his own nature.

It is remarkable, that, in the copious extracts he made from Rousseau, he copied not the sentimental and impassioned passages, but rather rules of practical wisdom and directions for good manners; from the *New Heloise*, a long description of social life in Paris;—the reason is obvious—at this time he longed to become acquainted with the more refined forms of social life in Germany.* He could see little of life in Leipzig, except what he observed in the streets, at the theatres, and in the public gardens. So strong was his desire, that he says "he stood hours at the door of the hotel of Bavaria, to see an ambassador enter, that he might be able to describe one."

At this period, his *intellectual* activity alone was cherished,

* The inmost poetic impulses of his nature were kept in subjection by his social desires, and the impassioned eloquence of Rousseau sank deep, but left no *outward* trace in his mind.

to the exclusion of the emotions of the heart, and this too united with the coldness of a heterodox theology; added to all this was his admiration of Pope and Boileau, and the study of the French philosophers. But his heart was still full of the tenderest sympathy for his mother, as his letters A. D. 1781,
aged 18. to her at this time will show. Speaking of her lawsuit, he writes to her in November, "a day will perhaps come, when your enemies will not be as happy as they now are, and when you will enjoy more rest, more satisfaction, more joy. If you are a Christian, (and this you must be!) truly then I cannot understand how things that concern only this short life can make you so uneasy. Do you suffer from the little vexations that now afflict you, remember *Him* also by whom the smallest good deed will not be left unrewarded, who looks upon every one of his creatures with love, who has formed for all a heaven, and will give one to all. Pray! If you have no friend to whom you can complain, complain to Him who is the friend of all men! Wait from him the help, that, however long delayed, never fails. Remember that our greatest troubles can rob us of nothing but life, and that death will give us that sweet rest that life has denied; that hereafter our sorrows will sleep calmly, till we awake from slumber to that blessed day when an open heaven will receive the pious; when friend shall meet friend; the wife the husband; the child shall find the father that he has so long lost, and eternal happiness shall stream through the heart of the blessed."

Paul writes again, on the first of December: "I daily hope and expect to receive news of what passes with you, and the help I have so long prayed for; but I learn nothing from you. You leave me between hope and fear. I have lately written to inform you that I have already been trusted; and as I have no longer any funds, I must continue to be trusted. But what can I at last expect? Be so good as to give me some counsel. I must eat—and I cannot continue to be trusted by the *traiteur*. I cannot freeze—but where shall I get wood without money? I can no longer take care of my health, for I have warm food neither morning nor evening. It is now a long time since I asked you for twenty rix dollars; when they come I shall scarcely be able to pay what I already owe. Do you believe that I would ask you unnecessarily for money to spend extravagantly? Ah! I know how indispensable it is to you! If you can

help me *now*, I trust you will not, with God's help, be called upon to assist me again. Perhaps the project I have in my head will enable me to earn for you and for myself. But at present I know not truly what I shall do if you suffer me to wait longer."

He writes again: "Now tell me of yourself. Are you already in Hof, and how are you pleased? and how stands it with your lawsuit? Do you win or lose? I expect bright news from you. I pray only that you be not melancholy. Take care of your health. Be steadfast, and bear the sorrows that you may yet expect in greater number, with increased resignation. Keep my brother industrious!"

After Paul had received the money, wrung with so much difficulty from his mother, he writes: "I thank you so much the more, as it cost you so much trouble to collect it. Oh, how gladly would I refund this, and never receive more of that which you need so much yourself."

At this time also, his mother wrote to him, in great distress, that his idle brother had enlisted as a soldier. Paul answered,

"I am much less troubled that my brother is a soldier, than that you are so anxious about it. Indeed, it would have been better had he remained at his craft. But when you think how unsteady he was, and that no master could keep him long, the evil is not so great. You err, when you think of the soldier's situation as any thing contemptible. Are not noblemen's, counts', and even princes' sons soldiers? Is not the son of the old Frau Pharrarinn in Koditz also one?"

"Adam may be promoted, and, in any event, a soldier is better than a barber. Write to my brother, to conduct himself well—for the rest God will care. Do not trouble yourself so much about it, and, above all, dismiss that contemptuous notion you have of a soldier's life. The state could not exist without him."

"I would gladly send you some coffee, but my want of funds is as great as yours. If only my expedient succeeds as I hope, in four weeks it will be decided,* and I shall certainly know whether I shall be able to earn money by it or not. *Guten Mutter*, trouble yourself not so much; for with

* This was his intention of becoming an author.

all your anxiety you cannot alter any thing, and your cares will injure your health."

Paul writes thus to her on the death of the relation who had contested the will and the inheritance of the cloth-maker: "Leave R—— to rest in peace. He is in his grave—hate him then no longer! Death ends all! even our enmities. Has he been unjust to you? he has now failed like other men."

His poor mother was much dissatisfied that Paul should think of writing books, instead of preparing himself to tread in his father's footsteps, and occupy the pulpit in Joditz or Hof. She had flattered her imagination with the thought of sitting a devout hearer under his pulpit, and listening to the pious eloquence of her gifted son. Paul wrote to her:

"You ask what kind of books I write? They are neither theological nor juridical, and if I should tell you the titles it would signify nothing. They are satirical or droll books. Indeed, I cannot but smile when you make me the edifying offer to listen to my preaching in the *Spital Kirche* in Hof. Think you then it is so much honor to preach? This honor, however, can any poor student receive, and it is easy to make a sermon in one's dreams; but to make a book is ten times more difficult; besides, you do not know that a poor student like myself dare not preach in Hof without gaining a permission from Baireuth, which costs fourteen gulden.*

"You think that I lay up my clothes. How can I do this when I have no new ones? I have indeed worn-out garments, but no new ones. Now, dear, good mother, I must speak of myself. If you only knew how unwillingly I do it! But can I do otherwise? Yet I will not ask you for money to pay my victualler, to whom I owe twenty-four dollars, nor my landlord, to whom I am indebted ten dollars, or even for other debts that amount to six dollars. I can let these rest till Michaelmas, when I shall undoubtedly be able to pay these, and other future ones. For these great sums I will ask no help from you, but for the following you must not deny me your assistance. I must every week pay the washerwoman, who does not trust. I must drink some milk every morning. I must have my boots soled by the cobbler, who does not trust; my torn cap must be repaired by the tailor, who does not trust; and I

* A gulden is forty cents.

must give something to the maid-servant, who of course does not trust. I know not indeed what I shall do, if you do not lend me a helping hand for these things. Can you believe that I would plague you thus if I could help it? I need not, indeed, much; eight of dollars Saxon money will satisfy all, and then I shall need your help no longer. Good mother, you must not believe my project for gaining money is good for nothing, because nothing is yet decided. Ah no! I trust even to maintain us both, but all depends upon the beginning."

The project which Paul, with so much mysterious confidence, imparts to his mother, were his hopes of emolument from the books he was writing, and so sanguine was he of success, that he not only hoped to pay all his debts, but to have the means of making a journey to Hof.

. . . "When I come to Hof at Whitsuntide, I shall not only bring myself, but all my old linen, and you may send my stockings and shirts after your recruit. I have indeed no whole stockings, only some few that are patched. But what is that? Do not be angry that I am so merry, for I write the whole day nothing but amusing books. Yet more; I am not in my old chambers, but in the summer-house of a beautiful garden. The garden belongs to the same gentleman to whom my former lodgings belonged."

His poor mother, whose character bore a strong resemblance to that of *Lenette*, in his novel of "*Siebenkas*," was not at all pleased with her son's writing all day nothing but amusing books, for Paul answers:

"You have sent me a reprimand, in order that I should preach a penitential sermon in Hof. Do you think then that it is so very easy to write a satirical book? Do you believe that the ministers in Hof understanding one line of my book, would wish to silence it, and that the pastor in Rehau does not understand the thing that he praises so much? If I had studied theology only, by what should I support myself? Yet once more, the permission to preach costs fourteen gulden. I do not despise ministers. I have no contempt, and shall never have, for linen-weavers. Good mother, I trust yet to write books, little as I have received for this, by which I shall gain three hundred Saxon dollars. Besides, is it not right that I should write facetious books, when you write facetious letters? Over the conclusion of your last I could only laugh."

CHAPTER V.

EXTRACTS FROM JOURNAL.—FIRST LITERARY EFFORT.—GREEN-
LAND LAWSUITS.

A. D. 1781, I HAVE rather anticipated the course of events, in
aged 18. order to place the extracts from Paul's letters, written while at the university, *together*, to enable the reader to understand the difficulties he had to encounter, and the constant demands made upon his patience and sensibility by his mother. I give a few extracts from his journal to show how he brought his philosophy to act upon his daily life.

“ August 11, 1781.

“Thou wouldst learn thy faults from thy friends! Thou errest much. Their sincerity goes not so far as to discover to thee the undeniable spots upon thy character. Their sincerity goes not so far as to tell you of faults that you cannot excuse in yourself. The best means to learn our faults is to tell others of theirs. They will be too proud to be alone in their defects, and will seek them in us, and reveal them to us. A friend cannot be easily seen in his true form. We see him as in a glass, that our warm breath renders opaque. An enemy is often the truest discoverer of our faults. Our bosom friend, who loves us, tells us of our virtues; our enemy, who hates us, of our faults. Both often say too much, but it is easy between these extremes to discover the truth. I believe the faults of many lively men have more merit than the virtues of the cold and unexcitable, that cost them no trouble. . . . Our century is tolerant to opinions and intolerant to actions. We dare express every opinion freely, but practise no virtue without the fear of ridicule. We dare judge without knowing the opinions of others to guide us, but we dare not act without seeing what others do. We tolerate all sorts of free-thinkers, but not all sorts of saints.”

Every extract from this journal would show how much Paul's thoughts dwelt upon the manner of thinking and being, and the outward relations and appearance of gifted and

great men. It anticipates that longing after sympathy and fellowship with the beautiful and good, that he afterwards describes so beautifully in the life of his *Walt*.

"We have had great spirits," he says, "but not great men. All our geniuses raise themselves by their understanding too far above this earth. We look sorrowfully after their flight, and regret that we are only men. We reverence, but we do not love them. Rousseau alone is an exception. His talents made him great as an individual; his heart allied him to all humanity.* We love him the more because he discovered his faults to us, and was not ashamed to be our fellow-creature. . . . We know more of the heads of celebrated men than of their hearts; they have sketched the former in their works: their heart is found in their secret actions, and they would more certainly please if they represented their thoughts, opinions and feelings, with less disguise. . . . There are certain men that we do not willingly thank—those from whom we expect—even receive good with reluctance. We feel deeply humbled when another makes use of our misery as a staff to raise himself to higher honor. It is insupportable to be obliged to acknowledge good in wickedness, and through our ingratitude encourage the vice of pride and vainglory."

"The learned man is only useful to the learned; the wise man alone is equally useful to the wise and the simple. The merely learned man has not elevated his mind above that of others; his judgments are not more penetrating, his remarks not more delicate, nor his actions more beautiful than those of others. He merely uses other instruments than his own; his hands are employed in business of which the head sometimes takes little note. It is wholly different with the wise man. He moves far above the common level. He observes every thing from a different point of view. In his employments there is always an aim, in his views always freedom, and all with him is above the common level."

"The great man is *proud*, for he would not have attained the perfections he possesses, if he had not seen their worth and felt their value. But as he has acquired true advantages; as his excellencies compel his own applause, sometimes even his own admiration, he feels it unnecessary to beg the miserable praise of fools, and to attain greatness through

* Literally, His talents made him a great man; his heart great men.

humiliation. He is indifferent to the applause of others; his own is sufficient for him; for this reason he appears humble when he is entirely the opposite; he is only modest. He seeks his own deserts, not in hearing it said that he is great, but in proving it. He does not boast of his views in the preface; in the book, alone, he sketches his image, and if he often speaks of his weakness and imperfection, it is not to place those above him who have the perfections that he wants; but in proportion as he is great, he knows how much he needs to attain the greatness that he has held before him in his *ideal of perfection*."

It is obvious from Paul's letter to the rector Werner, that he was only withheld from giving up theology as a profession, from a sense of duty to his mother, and the fear that his project of becoming an author would involve her in deeper distress. A passage in his journal shows the dread he had of being indebted to a patron, and no doubt he felt as his father did, that the *Spirit* only, should call the laborers into the vineyard of the church. He says, "at length, oh God! if I must suffer, grant only this, that I have not to thank foolish and wicked men, that through our misfortunes make demands upon our gratitude."

At length, after long struggles, Paul decided to give his thoughts to the public through the press, rather than the pulpit, to write, rather than to speak; and, his resolution once taken, he never wavered.

The history of the first creation of every genius is very interesting. He hears the whisperings of the Muse, that assure him of his future power, but he conceals them as a precious secret, till from his own consciousness he has accumulated the materials of his future fame; but Richter's first works were not written to lighten the laboring mind of the riches that weighed upon it, as the *Werther* of Goethe is said to have been. The pressure came from without; the necessities of his mother prompted his invention, and sharp hunger impelled the industry of his pen. This pressure from without, solves also another enigma. It has appeared incomprehensible, that an author of so much tenderness, and afterwards so full of sentiment, should have begun with works of satire; but Paul enhanced the splendid gifts of his genius by a distrustful humility. Speaking of himself, he says, "I am richer in a receiving than in a creative imagination, in what may be called a negative poetic talent, in

opposition to the positive, which is the power of creation. I possess only a lower order of imagination, that of being penetrated and excited by the creations of others. In youth it is dangerous, but very easy, to mistake the one for the other, and imagine that a day of *pentecost* has given us the power to speak with inspired tongues."

Paul was a philosopher before he was a poet, and his French and English studies determined the character of his first book. He judged humbly and wisely, that his mind was not sufficiently furnished with materials, and his imagination not ripe enough for great creations in the regions of poetry. In his French and English reading he had found a multitude of *Essays*, that without characters or action, enjoyed the highest celebrity. They demanded only wit, satire, irony, and poetic illustration, and he felt himself capable of producing a book of this species. His studies of late had been almost wholly confined to works of this kind; and although Rousseau was his favorite, yet with the wit of Voltaire, the satire of Pope and Young in his memory, he could play with the poverty of his materials, and reproduce the same thought almost without end. The pressure of reality, the chill and wet cold of outward life, had closed, and sequestered in the bud all that rich bloom of imagination, that afterwards, when opened by the sunbeams, became so beautiful and luxuriant.

In a letter to his friend the pastor of Rehau, to whom he sent the manuscript of his first book, *Die Lob der Dummheit*, (*Eulogy of Stupidity*.) he says: "You know, perhaps, that I am poor, but perhaps you do not know that no one has lightened my poverty. If you would gain a patron, you must not let it be understood that you need one—that is, if you would be rich, you must not be poor. Yet more, God has denied me four feet, to enable me to look up for the favorable glance of a patron, and creep for a few crumbs from his superfluity. I can neither be a false flatterer, nor a fashionable fool, nor win friends by the motion of my tongue and the bending of my back. Think of all these things, and you will know my situation, but you will not know how I am going to improve it. It came into my head at one time, I will write books, to be able to purchase books; I will teach the public, (pardon the false expression for the sake of the antithesis), to be able to learn at the university; I will put the horse behind the wagon, to

get out of this wicked hollow way. I altered only the species of my studies. I read witty authors, Seneca, Ovid, Pope, Young, Swift, Voltaire, and I know not what. Erasmus's '*Encomium moriæ*' gave me the notion of eulogizing prosing stupidity. I began—I improved—I found difficulties where I did not expect them, and none where I expected them most; and I ended my book the very day I received your letter. You will exclaim, 'wonderful!' if you do not exclaim 'foolish!'

"Here you have my *experiment*—the experiment of a man of nineteen years. A professor, whom the manuscript reached through a third person, did not wholly deny me his applause. Dare I hope for yours? Perhaps you will review it in the following manner: 'The author can easily substitute *himself* for the book—certainly the Divinity that he praises, inspired him.'

"I will owe you the utmost gratitude, if, before I hand the manuscript to the publisher, you will give me some information with regard to its value, and yet more, if you will point out its frequent faults. But enough; or I shall write a bad letter over a bad book."

Vogel answered with all the delight and pride of one who had discovered and prophesied Paul's future distinction.

"I praise not your folly—but your splendid, wonderful wisdom! Confess! did not Wisdom herself appear to you in person, and with her veil thrown back, reveal to you her divine beauty? Nevertheless, I fear, if it is published, half the world will quarrel with you, if not the whole."

After waiting a year, and being unable to find a publisher for his *Lob der Dummheit*, Paul wrote to the same friend:

"I left Hof last year (at the end of the vacation) full of hope followed by the beautiful and variegated dreams with which a too-easily trusting phantasy brightened my future plans. No one, thought I, is happier than myself; my *Essay* will bring me a hundred dollars. With that I can live one summer, although the book will scarcely live so long. But I can write another for the next fair, with fewer faults, that will bring me more money. Herr Professor Seidlitz will have already disposed of this satirical abortion, and at my next visit will undoubtedly hand me the author's reward.

"But—Herr Professor Seidlitz had not disposed of my satire, and of course could not hand me the author's reward. Yet had the gentleman so long and so kindly patronized

the book, by letting it lie on his desk, that the time when it should have been published, at Michaelmas fair, was half over. Now, I had the book, but no publisher. I read it through to quiet my ill-humor, and thanked God that I had found no publisher. 'Lie there in the corner,' I said, with paternal expression to the little *Richter*, 'together with school exercises, for thou art thyself no better. I will forget, for the world would certainly have forgotten thee. Thou art too young ever to have been old, and the milk-beard upon thy chin would never suffer me to believe that thou wouldst have gray hair.'

"From this fit of angry enthusiasm my right hand awoke me, that had accidentally come in contact with my empty purse in my breeches pocket. The hand afterwards struck my stomach, that through its murmuring *veto* gave a wholly different direction to my resolutions. In short, I undertook again a wearisome work, and created in *six months*, observe, not in six days, a bran new satire, such as I now send you. Perhaps you will think I have said nothing to excuse myself; permit me to think I have said *all*. Think only of the anxiety with which one strives after a good, for the want of which the future is armed with greater terrors, than even embitter the present. Think only of the melancholy discord between laughter at strange follies and discouragement over one's own future." . . .

While Paul was so occupied in preparing for the press his second book, "*The Greenland Lawsuits*," he neglected to write to his friend Vogel. After answering his reproaches, he says :

"I thank God this steep mountain is passed now; I can write again to my friend with my former freedom. Now I believe myself to be, by a sweet deception, not in my own, but in your apartment. Again I believe that I press your hand, and that you read in my moist eyes the remembrance of your past benevolence, and I read in yours the forgetfulness of my past faults. But enough of letter-writing, and something of book-writing.

"My book has a thousand faults. It is overladen with comparisons, as the *Eulogy of Stupidity* was with antithesis. I could collect out of it a regiment of six hundred comparisons. My satire commands, with its scourge nothing but thoughts, from which every one may furnish himself with a comparison, as in the Persian camp every

soldier had a mistress, and the king as many mistresses as soldiers.

"You think, perhaps, I am wise to blame myself, lest I should be blamed by others, as prisoners, for fear of being hanged, hang themselves in prison, and instead of the gallows, use a nail, and for a rope, a garter; or through previous criticism defend myself from every other, as the peasant, to secure himself from the thunderbolt, carries one that he has picked up, about with him in his pocket.

... "I acknowledge that an excess of comparisons is really a fault; but can cold criticism subdue the charm of rich intemperance? Does the wine-bibber, with the red nose, know the poisonous effect of excess? He knows it well; but he cannot fly from it. Even so consists the *cold* disapprobation of lavish ornament with the warm love of the same. There was a time when truth charmed me less than its ornament, the thought less than the form in which it was expressed. I was like the young painter who sketches a picture on the canvas from Nature, and then gives it the features of his beloved.

"But how I *radotire*! I cannot even lay aside my faults while I condemn them. A book without beauties is certainly a bad thing, but one without faults is not therefore good. *Toussaint* asserts that such, even if it could exist, would possess only moderate merit. Besides, it is of little consequence whether my *kindlein* dies, and is gathered to its brothers, with a quick apoplexy or a slow consumption; that is, whether the book is forgotten, with its ten or its twenty faults. To prevent literary death, no herb has yet grown, perhaps not even the laurel.

"There are always many objections to the value of self-criticism. Who can protect his ears from the grating of his file? The file shapes, but begets no beauties. Not the poet merely, but his *poem* is born, not made. Jupiter begets the gods, but those who are not immortal, he makes; these are the work of his hands, but Minerva sprung ready-formed from his head. Besides, Genius, like Love, is winged, but blind; it feels, like the polypus, the critical light, but sees it not. The self-critic lessens indeed the number of faults, but also of beauties; for the *time* that would improve Genius, shortens that in which it would create; as the one child nursed too long, robs the embryo of nourishment. *Ohe jam satis est*, will you exclaim!

"I send you my book, not merely to remind you of your kindness, but to invite your criticism; that is, perhaps, I am so selfish as not to requite your kindness, but to hope for more. In your criticisms, or, which is the same thing, in your censure, I shall rejoice, because they are not more painful than instructive, as Herr Cantor Grossel in Schwarzenbach used to teach his pupils their letters with the same stick with which he whipped them.

"Decide further—if the satire is not too bitter, though I believe satire, like beer, derives its value from its bitterness; but the bitterness should not be heightened, like that of the Bohemian beer, by the mixture with the hops of soot and gall. Decide finally, whether shimmering modish bombast does not too often take the place of genuine strength of imagination; and whether the whole thing is not too much like certain birds, the penguin, with shining feathers but little naked wings. This is certain, that if the book is a bad satire upon others, it is the best upon myself. But I shall I write a book upon a book, as *Martenelli* emptied ever an ancient inkstand—I know not how many inkstands, for he wrote two great quarto volumes upon it."

The *Greenland Lawsuits* were a collection of moral, satirical sketches upon life, under the titles of "Literature," "Theology," "Family Pride," "Women and Fops;" of these last, at *this time*, the author could know little.

Paul had at this time gained sufficient courage to present himself personally, manuscript in hand, to the Leipzig booksellers. It was refused by all, and he sent it to the bookseller Voss, in Berlin. While he was waiting the answer from Voss, he learnt well the severest experience in physical existence, that of a cold stove and an empty stomach. But a sunbeam soon entered his cold and desolate apartment. On the last day of December, as he sat shivering in his chamber, a knock at the door brought him the joyful intelligence, that Voss would receive and furnish out, this his first birth of love, so that it could appear with the other *enfants perdus* at the Easter fair in Leipzig. Through his whole life Jean Paul looked back to this moment with the deepest emotions of gratitude—the moment when he received fifteen louis d'ors,* the first fruits of his industry and genius.

* A louis d'or is four dollars and fifty-seven cents

Vogel, to whom he sent it, expressed the utmost delight and approbation of the book, and Paul answered :

" Truth commands me to admire your letter, but I must not listen to it alone, as you praise my book too much. Did you forget that the same perfume that stimulates the nose so agreeably, brings clouds and tears into the eyes? Your judgment of my book needs the other half, the blame. You send the silver only *earlier* than the pill, and the vapor of vinegar that perfumes, comes only a little *earlier* than the vinegar that bites.

" You ask after the plan of my life. Fate must first project it. My prospects furnish none. I swim upon occasion without rudder, but not without sails. I am no longer a theologian, and I follow no science *ex professo*, and *all* only so far as they promote my authorship. Philosophy itself is indifferent to me, as I doubt of all. But my heart is here *so full—so full* that I am silent. In future letters, and when I have more time, I will write to you of my skepticism, and of my disgust at this foolish masquerade and harlequinade that they call life.

" My Sketches have brought me fifteen louis d'ors. The second part will be stronger and better than the first, and will sell dearer. Farewell! I know not why, I am so melancholy that I could weep! Oh! we never weep more sweetly than when we know not why we weep. *Love your friend.*

J. P. F. R."

This last extract allows us a glimpse into the real feelings and difficulties of Paul. He was writing facetious books, comic and satirical essays, while before him, in the future, stood the grim spectre of Want. He was trying to make others laugh, when he was so melancholy that he could himself weep;—like that poor comedian who was dying with melancholy, while he was exhausting his brain to amuse the world.

We see also the origin of his peculiar manner of writing. It was not the spontaneous pouring out of an over-full mind; but his antitheses, and comparisons, and illustrations were sought to embellish his ungrateful themes; his sparkling crystals were distilled with much care and pains, and the poverty of his canvas thickly overlaid with jewels and ornaments.

CHAPTER VI.

EXTREME POVERTY.—FIRST SUCCESS.—COSTUME CONTROVERSY.

IN the last extract I gave from Richter's letters, A. D. 1787, aged 19. the reader is made acquainted with the real state of his finances, and his painful struggle with actual want. His giving up all thoughts of a profession, was as much a matter of necessity as choice. The question was not now, how he should live, but if he should exist at all. As Carlyle expresses it, "he was at hand-grips with actual want." But at nineteen years of age, when he wrestled with poverty single-handed, there were added to these outward difficulties also moral pains, partly over the melancholy fate, partly over the sad and reckless incapacity of his brothers to take care of themselves. The most hopeful threw himself, from despair, into the Saale, and was drowned. Adam, the barber, left his mother, as we have seen, and listed for a soldier, and Richter had to reconcile her to a profession, that at that time was looked on with fear and aversion. But there lay within him a giant's force, and stern unbending resolution. "He shook off the little evils of poverty, and contempt, and pain, as the lion shakes the dew-drops from his mane."

With the fifteen louis d'ors, after paying his debts, he was enabled to change his lodgings to a summer-house in the garden of his landlord, consisting, indeed, of only one small room, but where Paul could indulge the passion he carried through life, of studying in the open air. This little circumstance led to a curious episode, which his biographer calls his "costume martyrdom." Although it continued through many years, it began about this time.

Partly from necessity, partly from fancy, Paul had adopted a peculiar style of dress, entirely at variance with the fashion of the day. He writes to his mother—

"As I can make my vests last no longer, I have determined to do without; and if you send me some over-shirts, I can dispense with these vests. They must be made with open collars *à la Hamlet*; but this nobody will understand; in short—the breast must be open, so that the bare throat may be seen. My hair also I have had cut. (It was the day of cues and powder.) It is pronounced by my

friends more becoming, and it spares me the expense of the hairdresser. I have still some locks a little curled ”

As already mentioned, he had hired a small room that opened into the Kornerchen garden, with the privilege also of walking in the garden at all times, night or day. The magister Gräfenheim had also hired the principal building in this garden, which brought him into near neighborhood with Paul. Paul, with good reason, supposed that he had an equal right to enjoy all the walks in the garden, and felt no disposition to imprison himself in his little apartment. But the magister was not of this opinion; he chose to have the garden wholly to himself, and complained to the proprietor, requesting him to restrain Paul's walks, and, moreover, complaining of the offence against fashion and propriety in the bare throat of his plebeian neighbor.

Paul defended himself with much condescension in a letter to the magister, in which he tells him, “that he will no longer approach so near to his dwelling as he did yesterday; that he will visit the garden only at morning and evening, so that he shall rarely be offended with a dress, that his convenience, health, and *poverty* oblige him to wear. Moreover, he would, when walking in the garden, cover his throat, and that he should not be annoyed by other students, as he had only one friend who visited *him*, and not the garden.”

The magister was not satisfied with these four conditions, and soon complained that they had been infringed, and that Paul had actually passed a certain statue, that stood without his limits.

At this, Paul's patience vanished. He wrote again, “that he revoked what he had said before; that the statue had nothing to do with his promises; that he had hired the privilege of walking in the garden and had paid for it; and that he would walk *whenever* and *wherever* he pleased, without fear of Herr Korner, or the magister.” And he closed with these remarkable words: “You despise my mean name; nevertheless, take note of it, for you will not have done the *latter* long, before the former will not be in your power to do.” But, at the same time, with a generous spirit of accommodation, Paul made this proposal: “I will freely consent to leave the garden, where the satisfaction of one disturbs the enjoyment of another, on condition, that I pay for an apartment that I had hoped to enjoy for half a

year, the rent of three months only. It depends on you, therefore, whether you will constrain Herr Korner to accept these conditions." They were accepted; and Paul evacuated the garden, and returned to his old room at the *Three Roses*, *Peterstrass*.

Paul's martyrdom was not at an end. He went down to Hof, to visit his mother, where his family were not in great favor, and his appearance made the most astonishing impression, not only upon the inhabitants of the little city, but upon his own family. So important, indeed, was the matter considered, that his firm friend, the pastor Vogel, remonstrated most earnestly in letters, that are yet preserved, against this singularity. Paul seems to have been partly sensible that it was affectation, and, mild-tempered as he was, he would not yield in this particular, but went about *à la Hamlet* for seven years.

Some *extracts* from letters of this period will show the course of this costume controversy.

Vogel wrote to him: "You value only the inward, not the outward—the kernel, not the husk. But, with your permission, is not the *whole* composed of the *form* and the *matter*? Is one disfigured, so is the other. You condemn probably the philosophy of Diogenes, that separated the hero so much from other men, that it placed him in a tub? How can you justify yourself, if your philosophy serves you in the same way? No, my friend, you must open your eyes and see that you are not the only son of earth, but like the ants in their ant-hills, you live in the tumult of life. . . .

"Would you not hold that painter unwise, who should offend in costume—paint his Romans in sleeves and curled hair; the person of a man with petticoat and open bosom? Oh! that is not to be endured! Yet, a couple of proverbs—'Swim not against the tide.' 'Among wolves, learn to howl.' 'Vulgar proverbs! will you say. Yes, but elevated wisdom. The true philosophy is, not for others to adapt themselves to us, but for us to adapt ourselves to others. Whoever forgets this great axiom, advances few steps without stumbling. But what do you seek? In the midst of Germany to become a Briton? Do you not in this way say, 'Put on your spectacles, ye little people, and behold! see that ye cannot be what I am.' Ah, to speak thus your *modesty* forbids! Avoid every thing that in the smallest degree lessens your value among your contemporaries."

To this gentle remonstrance Paul answered, "I answer your letter willingly, for the sake of its argument, which your good heart, rather than your good head, has dictated. Your proverbs are not reasons, or if they are, they prove too much—for if I would swim with the stream, this stream would often make shipwreck of my virtue; the kingdom of vice is as great and extensive as the kingdom of fashion; and if I must howl with the wolves, why should I not rob with them? 'If the shell is injured the kernel suffers also,' you say. But wherefore? Let us decide what does injure the shell. You consider that an evil to Diogenes that others hold an advantage. Did the so-called injury rob this great man of his philosophy, his good heart, his wit, his virtue? It robbed him not—but it gave him peace, independence of outward judgments, freedom from tormenting wants, and the incapacity of being wounded; and with this consciousness he could venture upon the punishment of every vice. Great man! Thank God that thou wert born in a country where they wondered at thy wisdom, instead of, as at present, punishing it. Fools would commit the only wise man to a madhouse; but, like Socrates, he would ennoble his prison.

"The painter would be ridiculous in offending against costume.' This is true, but more witty than applicable to me. I need only say, that the painter of costume is not the greatest in his art; he is great whose pencil creates, not after the tailor, but after God; paints bodies, not dresses. The painter's creations can only please through form, which is the shell; and am I designed for that? Is it my destination, with my organized ugliness, to please? Scarcely—if I would.

"But enough. I hold the constant regard that we pay in all our actions to the judgment of others, as the poison of our peace, our reason, and our virtue. Upon this slave's chain have I long filed, but I scarcely hope ever to break it."

This humorous controversy was kept up for some months on paper, as games of chess are played in Holland, without either party saying check to the king. At last Paul consented, as he called it, to *inhull* his person, and put an end to this tragi-comical affair, by the following circular, addressed to his friends.

“ADVERTISEMENT.

“The undersigned begs to give notice, that whereas cropt hair has as many enemies as red hair, and said enemies of the hair are likewise enemies of the person it grows upon; whereas, further, such a fashion, is, in no respect Christian, since otherwise, Christian persons would adopt it; and whereas especially, the undersigned has suffered no less from his hair than Absalom did from his, though on contrary grounds; and whereas it has been notified to him, that the public proposed to send him into his grave, since the hair grows there without scissors: he hereby gives notice, that he will not willingly consent to such extremities. He would, therefore, inform the noble, learned, and discerning public in general, that the undersigned proposes on Sunday next to appear in the various important streets of Hof, with a false, short cue; and with this cue, as with a magnet, and cord of love, and magic rod, to possess himself forcibly of the affection of all, and sundry, be they who they may.

J. P. F. R.”

CHAPTER VII.

LOVE PASSAGE.—SECOND VOLUME OF GREENLAND LAWSUITS.
—PRESSING POVERTY.—FLIGHT FROM LEIPZIG.—DOMESTIC
CIRCUMSTANCES IN HOF.—BOOK OF DEVOTION.

IN the summer of 1783, after the publication of the first part of the “Greenland Lawsuits,” Paul went to Hof, to pass the vacation with his mother, and there occurred there a little love adventure, which must not be omitted in a full account of his life.

A. D. 1783,
aged 20.

Instead of a universal acknowledgment of the value of his book, it received only partial admiration, and from *one* especially, who appears under the name of Sophia. This she expressed with so much enthusiasm, that Paul’s susceptible heart was instantly warmed, although, instead of propitiating his beloved, as formerly, with sugared almonds and drawings of kings, he sent her volumes of rare extracts,

which he had made out of the latest literature. Some love billets were exchanged, and it went even so far that the young lady presented Paul with a ring; but he was too poor to offer her any thing in return but his empty *silhouette*.

Upon his return to Leipzig, he waited nearly a month, and when he wrote, the letter was filled with trivial excuses for not writing sooner. The young lady remonstrated, and demanded back her ring. Paul answered: "Every sort of dissimulation is hateful to me, therefore it shall be wholly removed from the *answer* to your late letter. The letter that punishes my negligence, pleases me better than the one that pardons it, and you appear to love me better when you are angry with me, than when you are reconciled. The letter contains the *silhouette* of your head, but not that of your heart. The light of the one has taken the place of the warmth of the other, and I hear your reason speak in it, but not your love. Shall the warmth of your love depart with the warmth of summer? This suspicion your next letter will destroy or confirm. The ring that I sent back yesterday, and the want of which you so sadly regret, you need not send me again. Not the *ring*, but the form it gilded, was valuable to me, and such an image, yes, a better likeness, you can always present me."

This letter remained unanswered; and Paul, whose fancy represented the good he was losing in more charming colors, or who perhaps felt, that he had not met the young lady's love with the warmth it deserved, wrote again:

"The curtain is torn upon which so many hopes were painted, and our love will fade with the flowers that put forth their short bloom at the same period. This, and nothing else, can I understand from your neglect to answer my last letter. . . .

"We will not part from each other with reproaches. I will leave you as we leave the grave, that we love, and must ever love! You can take your love from me, but not your image. *that* will endure longer in my heart than mine in yours. You cannot deprive me of the happiness I *have* enjoyed, for the recollection of it will daily be repeated. May he who has taken my place, or who will take it, reward you for the happiness that you have given me, and may you reward him by loving him better than you have him who now is nothing more to you, than,

Yours, &c,

J. P. F. R."

Thus philosophically, after asking for the return of his letters, and telling her she could use his *silhouette* for *papillottes*, ended the love passage between Richter and the maiden of Hof, called Sophia. How different from his later loves! His letters to her are stiff, cold, and poor in thought compared with letters to his male friends; and when we recall that childish love for that little peasant girl, whose first stolen kiss seemed ever to glow in his memory, and when we think of the glowing, but pure light in which he could paint a higher and more spiritual love, so that he kindled the hearts of the German youth, and made himself the idol of the women of Germany, we cannot avoid the conclusion, that the attachment was chiefly on the side of the lady, and that Jean Paul suffered very little from the disappointment of his hopes.

We can easily understand why the mother of Sophia—for she was so fortunate as to have a mother—should cut short the course of a love that promised only starvation to both parties. But that the young lady still cherished a lingering attachment for Paul, appears, from her refusal to give up the book of extracts, that he had only intended to lend her. In December, he writes to his mother:

“In Hof is a blue bound writing-book of mine, with extracts from the latest authors. I gave it to Sophia to read. Pray forget not to demand it “back.” His mother did not succeed. The book was retained, and Paul wrote again. “My book in Hof, is only one copied out of other authors. I will ask no more for it. I present it to Mademoiselle with all my heart, and she knows well, I would also present myself.”

Paul returned to Leipzig after the summer vacation, with the most extraordinary hopes as to his literary success, and consequently his introduction into the elevated circles of Leipzig society. The absence of a court, and of an arrogant aristocracy, together with the independence of the commercial class, and the great number of young literary aspirants, produced more equality of condition in this, than in many of the German cities. Successful talent, or distinction in any art, was then in Leipzig, as it is with us at present, a passport to the most distinguished society; and music, the passion of the Germans, was the medium of union in all classes. The circumstance, also, that the public offices were generally held by learned men, created a rare esteem for literature in a mercantile city like Leipzig.

Paul had seen only the outside of concerts, balls, the theatre; he had marked the charming exterior of the beautiful women of the upper class, and his fancy painted all these objects in ever-changing and ever-glowing colors. The touching naivete with which he had described the longing for the enjoyment of these scenes, in one of his novels, does not exceed the vividness of his own desires to be admitted to them.*

He had sold the second volume of his *Greenland Lawsuits* to Voss, at the Michaelmas fair, for one hundred and twenty-six dollars, and he was at this time zealously employed upon the third.

The singular infatuation of Richter, in imagining his genius adapted to satire, was not yet enlightened, although this second volume suffered more than the first, from poverty of materials. Strange, that Richter should believe, that with the limited knowledge of mankind that a secluded village at the foot of the Fichtelgebirge, and a student's garret could yield him; without characters, without action of any kind, he could write satires that would interest the reading public. Even Montaigne could not carry out his satires without living examples, and dramatic conversations with himself; and Carlyle, in our own day, has introduced a shadowy *dramatis personæ*, in order to give a local habitation in the memory, to his beautiful satire of the *Tailor*.

Paul, as usual, sent his second volume to his friend Vogel, assuring him "that, as it was smaller and dearer than the other, it must be better." Not so, thought Vogel, and he had the honesty and candor to answer:

"Your second part will be read only by critics, and will not be relished or understood by the rest of the world. Whatever gives us trouble, that we are obliged to see through a telescope, or to dig out of the depths of the earth, fails to please. It may be heavy gold; but the tinkling money that gives us our inheritance in the easiest way, is more desirable." And it must be confessed, that the dearest lovers of Jean Paul, of the present day, who read these satires as the first spiritual embryo of their favorite, find them heavy and uninteresting.

For his third volume, which was now finished, Paul could find neither editor nor publisher. He presented it to book-

* In the character of *Walt*, in the *Flegeljahre*.

sellers' fairs, and literary collectors, in vain. Necessity at length suggested the only alternative, to send it, with letters stating his necessities, to distinguished and learned men. But he had not the good fortune that Crabbe has so well described, when he presented his poems at the door of the magnanimous Burke, and walked the whole night in anxious uncertainty as to their reception. Paul received no answers to his letters, or was repulsed, unheard, from every door. He wrote short essays for periodicals and magazines; but there was a singular virtue in the readers of that day in Germany, and Jean Paul could create no taste for satire.

While his fond expectations, and unripe hopes, were fast falling to the ground, the money he had received for the second volume was consuming also, and the poverty of the youth was again as pressing as ever. In this necessity he had no other alternative but to return to Hof. Under the same roof with his mother, their united housekeeping would be less burthensome to Paul than their separate expenditure. He had long since given up his evening meal; and his supper of dried prunes, he ate walking in the Kuchen garden.

For about half a year, Paul had been in debt to his victualler for his mid-day frugal meal, and she gave him not a moment's peace, but seasoned his small pittance with the daily demand, "Now, Herr Richter, has not your golden ship arrived?" At last, in despair, he resolved to fly. His friend Oerthel bore his packed trunk to the spot where the post-wagon would pass; and Paul, who imagined that, on account of his peculiar dress, and especially the manner of wearing his hair, he was known to the whole city, purchased, with his last grotchen, a false cue, which he attached carefully under his hat behind, and withdrew himself from the city, where he had been nearly lost, as Munchausen drew himself from the swamp.

In the manner in which Paul left Leipzig, he created the only real adventure of his youth, and the simplicity of his proceedings, shows the remarkable naïvete of his character. He thought it necessary to disguise himself in a city where scarcely ten persons knew him, and in the twilight, to follow his friend, who carried his portman-teau. Even to his last days Richter loved to relate his flight, as he called it, out of Leipzig.

As soon as Paul found himself under his mother's roof, he wrote to his friend Oerthel, who remained at the univer-

sity: "I send thy mantle back; and, merely on account of the cold wind, of which in Leipzig I had formed no idea, do I owe thee more gratitude for this, and for the over-hose, than I could have believed possible. Speaking without hyperbole, to them I owe it that I was not wholly congealed, instead of having only my right hand frozen, on my arrival. I can scarcely write, and should this inflexibility, like that of all frozen limbs, return every winter, I shall be constrained to put off writing satires until the summer, and be like those porcupine men in London, who can only embrace their friends in moulting time. I journeyed under Herman's name, and first gave my own at my own door. I heard, on the way, one peasant say to another, who was under the strict government of his wife, 'You have found your *Mann* in her.'* I took it merely for a bon mot.

"Nothing can embellish a beautiful face more than a narrow band, that indicates a small wound, drawn crosswise over the brow. I saw this on a beautiful girl on the way. One should try, from time to time, to give his wife a little wound on the forehead, that she might be obliged to bind her brow with this pretty ornament."

A. D. 1784,
aged 21.

The darkest period of our hero's life was when he fled from Leipzig and went down in disguise to Hof. The lawsuit had stripped his mother of the little property she inherited from the cloth-weaver, and she had been obliged to part with the respectable homestead where the honest man had carried on his labors. She was now living with one or more of Paul's brothers, in a small tenement, containing but one apartment, where cooking, washing, cleaning, spinning, and all the beehive labors of domestic life must go on together.

To this small and overcrowded apartment, which henceforth must be Paul's only study, he brought his twelve volumes of extracts, a head that in itself contained a library, a tender and sympathizing heart, a true, high-minded, self-sustaining spirit. His exact situation was this: The success of the first and second volumes of his *Greenland Lawsuits*, had encouraged him to write a third—a volume of satires, under the singular name of "*Selections from the papers of the Devil*;" but for this we have seen he had strained every

* *Mann* is German for husband.

nerve in vain to find a publisher. This manuscript, therefore, formed part of the little luggage, which his friend Oerthel had smuggled out of Leipzig. It was winter, and from his window he looked out upon the cold, empty, frozen street of the little city of Hof, or he was obliged to be a prisoner, without, as he says, "the prisoner's fare of bread and water, for he had only the latter; and if a gulden found its way into the house, the jubilee was such that the windows were nearly broken with joy." At the same time, he was under the ban of his costume martyrdom; this he could have laughed at, and reformed; but hunger and thirst were actual evils, and when of prisoner's food he had only the thinner part, he could well exclaim, as Carlyle has said,

"Night it must be ere Friedland's star will beam."

"Without was no help, no counsel, but there lay a giant force within; and so from the depths of that sorrow and abasement his better soul rose purified and invincible, like Hercules from his long labors."

"What is poverty," he said, at this time, "that a man should whine under it? It is but like the pain of piercing the ears of a maiden, and you hang precious jewels in the wound."

The very day of Paul's arrival at home, the sixteenth of November, he made known to his friend Vogel, the pastor of Rehau, his return. He seems to have felt some timidity about presenting himself at his house, as he had been a negligent correspondent. But there was no reason. Vogel answered immediately: "I am so rejoiced at your arrival in Hof, that for joy I cannot contain myself, much less write a letter. Hof is only two hours distant from Rehau, and in the morning I shall see my best friend there, unless in the morning, at right early daylight, you step into the old apartment."

The intercourse of the two friends was immediately established on the most familiar footing. Vogel was himself an author, and his manuscripts were sent to Paul for his criticism and correction. In one of them Paul accuses his friend of stealing five comparisons from him—fifty would scarcely have been missed from Richter's, at this time, exuberantly ornamented style.

As Vogel's library had been the place where Paul had become his own instructor, he immediately resumed his

rights there, and there was a continual sending backwards and forwards of books, manuscripts, and letters, and Paul's younger brother was the Mercury. Paul was also a favorite with the Frau Anna, the wife of Vogel, and as the philosophy of hunger was studied so thoroughly at home, we may easily imagine that she took a womanly interest in providing for Richter, when he visited them, something more than the intellectual food of the library. That he had more pressing wants, the note of the 25th of December will show.

"You are the Pope from whom the destitute souls in Hof receive a dispensation from fasting. You go further than the Pope. You give yourself the food that you permit. This time I pray for the *Hæreticorum Catalogus*. *Belisair obreach Lightfooti horæ Hebraicæ*, &c. Solomon asked for wisdom, rather than riches, and received both. I imitate him in this letter—may I also receive his answer!

"My mother is in the greatest perplexity. This festival's gifts and the tax falling at the same time, have wholly exhausted her. Ah, dear friend, if I could only help her! I mean if *you* could do me and her so great a favor! If from your church income you could lend us about twenty-five gulden, secured upon a safe mortgage! Dear friend, if you can—Do not desert me!"

The request must have been granted, for, soon after, Paul wrote in this sportive manner:

"I have no news, except that the destruction of Hof by an earthquake has been prophesied, and appears to be confidently expected. It is to be hoped, in this short room for repentance, we may be all truly converted. I shall be well satisfied, if I do not arrive in heaven so soon, for I would willingly, before, enjoy one more visit at Rehau, where I live in such freedom, that I am not obliged from politeness to speak, if I would rather be silent. If we are neither swallowed nor shaken, I will visit you next week, and frizzle the heads of your spiritual children. . . .

"Locke! if thy spirit should overlook this letter while the Herr Vogel is reading it, influence him for the best, and induce him to send me thy work upon the Human Understanding, to improve my own; for I know well *thy* spirit powerfully inspires *his*. (If I were in your place, I would not turn the leaf, for, dear heaven! what can come now but something that will not please you.)

"Having done with Locke, I must turn to some one else,

and it is happy for me that the Saint Anna* comes to my help, who, according to the Catholic faith, can enrich. Truly, Saint Anna, tell me thyself, is it suitable for me to pray again to the Herr Pastor Vogel, (who has already done so much for the nourishment of the two elementary parts of my existence,) to promise me again in the name of my mother, eight or ten gulden from the revenue of God's house? At least it is more suitable for the Saint Anna, that she should present such a prayer in the name of benevolence. Thou art far holier than I, a poor satire writer, and he can hardly deny *thee*. It is enough that thou art a woman!

"If now the ill-humored church fathers should step into the room, use all thy power, whatever may be the reliques, to work a miracle. Give to my mother, in the eyes of the old fathers of the church, the form of the Herr Pastor; this is very easy—you will only have to draw upon her a pair of *hosen* and a morning gown, and furnish her with a good stock of *heterodoxy*, reason, and gayety.

"P. S. Should the Saint Anna forget to say to you, that the whole thing is on account of an extremely pressing circumstance, that will last only as long as the the moon, I do it herewith."

I have quoted these letters, that the reader may see in what friendly relations Richter lived with the family at Rehau; and although there was an attempt to poison this mutually confidential intercourse by the slanders of some evil-minded persons in Hof, Paul's noble character was too well appreciated by the pastor and his wife for them to succeed.

The distance from Hof to Vogel's house was only a two hours' walk, and the protecting Saint Anna would not fail on a Sunday or holiday, when she expected the welcome Hofer friend, to offer those graceful and kind attentions, that only a woman, let alone a saint, knows how to bestow. Thus Paul continued almost without a momentary interruption of his cheerfulness, to study and write, never giving up the hope, the trusting confidence, that what he so painfully wrought out in concealment and poverty, would one day appear in the full light of fame.

Two books of this period, equally curious for the strange circumstances under which they were produced, remain.

* The sportive title of the Frau Vogel

The mother's record of her gains from spinning cotton, which she carried far into the night, and no doubt often wetted with her tears;”* and Paul's "Little Book of Devotion,"† composed also in the solitary night, when he strengthened his high-hearted resolution by self-communion and humble resignation to the will of God. A few extracts will show the spirit of this book.

OF PAIN.

Every evil is an occasion and a teacher of resolution. Every disagreeable emotion is a proof that I have been faithless to my resolutions.

An evil vanishes, if I do not ask after it. Think of a worse situation than that in which thou art.

Not to the evil, but to myself, do I owe my pain. Epicetetus was not unhappy!

Vanity, insensibility, and custom, make one steadfast. Wherefore not virtue still more?

Never say, if you had not *these* sorrows, that you would bear others better.

What is sixty years' pain to eternity?

Necessity, if it cannot be altered, becomes resignation.

OF GLORY.

Most men judge so miserably; why would you be praised by a child?

No one would praise you in a beggar's frock; be not proud of the esteem that is given to your coat.

Do not expect more esteem from others because you deserve more, but reflect, that they will expect still more merit in yourself.

Do not seek to justify all thy actions. Value nothing merely because it is thy own, and look not always upon thyself.

Do not wait for extraordinary opportunities for good actions, but make use of common situations. A long continued walk is better than a short flight.

Never act in the heat of emotion; let reason answer first.

* Of this hard-earned money, twelve shillings, nearly half, went to pay for Samuel's new boots.

† Andachtsbuchlein.

Look upon every day as the whole of life ; not merely as a section, and enjoy the present without wishing through haste, to spring on to another lying-before-thee section.

Seek to acquire that virtue in a month, to which thou feelest the least inclined.

It betrays a greater soul to answer a satire with patience rather than with wit.

We never think of the sorrow of our dreams ; wherefore should we in the dream of life ?

If thou wouldst be free, joyful and calm, take the only means that cannot be affected by accident—Virtue.

This little book, which should be called a manual of practical philosophy rather than a book of devotion, strengthened Paul's cheerful stoicism, to which he added devout prayer and strenuous exertion. "Evil," said he, "is like the nightmare ; the instant you bestir yourself it has already ended." His strength and energy, and at last his trust increased, and was established on the immovable foundations of faith and truth.

CHAPTER VIII.

CHRISTIAN OTTO.—STUDIES.—HERMAN.—HIS DEATH.

IMMEDIATELY after Richter's return to Hof, as mentioned in the last chapter, he formed that remarkable friendship with Otto, which continued without a moment's interruption through the life of the poet, and on the part of Otto, it did not then cease. Grief for the loss of Richter hastened his own death, and put an end to his efforts to perpetuate the memory of his friend in the memoir, that has till this time, furnished the materials for our biography.

In the midst of the hard necessities that had driven Richter from Leipzig, his victualler followed him to Hof, and presented his demand for the frugal repasts he had furnished. Paul was in the greatest perplexity. It was impossible to send the man who had come this distance on foot, empty away, and so large a demand was beyond the

A.D. 1783,
aged 22.

help of his friend, the Pastor Vogel, of Rehau. In his distress he turned to the only men in Hof, who would not have repulsed him from their doors; these were the two brothers Otto, who from this time united themselves to him with intimate sympathy. They became *surety* for the whole demand, and sent the man back with a considerable sum. This tormenting spirit, however, did not inform Paul that the brothers had become *surety* for the debt, and *they* had too much delicacy to mention it; so that every fine day, this inexperienced debtor was alarmed with the dread of the appearance of his inexorable creditor.

Christian Otto was the son of the Vesper preacher* in Hof, who, from his ascetic character, and the severe earnestness of his preaching, was called the *Strafprediger*. Christian had been sent to the university at Leipzig; he returned after the death of his father, and occupied the same house with his mother and sisters in Hof. He had been destined to the ministry, as "the theological books were all ready for him in his father's study;" but his taste led him to devote himself to general science, and as the circumstances of the family were easy, he was able to follow his inclination. In all other respects the circumstances of the two friends were alike, and served to knit them in the bonds of the closest friendship.

The elements of Otto's character were warm sympathy, unequalled tenderness, and self-sacrificing love, together with severe integrity and steadfastness of purpose. The penetration and discrimination of his mind, with his sympathy in all that was highest and noblest in literature and in life, singularly fitted him for the office of a critic, and in after years, when Richter had found publishers for his works, he never printed a line that had not passed twice through the ordeal of Otto's perusal and criticism.

As these years, spent with his mother in Hof, were the most uninterruptedly studious of Richter's life, it seems the place to give some account of the manner in which he pursued his studies. That plan must be a good one, and of use to others, of which he could say, "Of one thing I am certain; I have made as much out of myself, as could be made of the *stuff*, and no man should require more."

* The afternoon preacher in Protestant churches is called the *Vesper prediger*. *Strafprediger*—repentance preacher.

First in importance, he aimed, in the rules he formed for himself, at a just division of time and power; and he never permitted himself, from the first, to spend his strength upon any thing useless. He so managed his capital, that the future should pay him an ever-increasing interest on the present. The nourishment of his mind was drawn from three great sources—living Nature, in connection with human life; the world of books; and the inner world of thought; these he considered the raw material given him to work up.

We have already mentioned his manuscript library. In his fifteenth year, before he entered the Hof gymnasium, he had made many quarto volumes, containing hundreds of pages of closely written extracts from all the celebrated works he could borrow, and from the periodicals of the day. In this way he had formed a repertory of all the sciences. For if, in the beginning, when he thought himself destined to the study of theology, his extracts were from philosophical theology, the second volume contained natural history, poetry, and, in succession, medicine, jurisprudence, and universal science. He had also anticipated one of the results of modern book-making. He wrote a collection of what are now called *hand-books*, of geography, natural history, follies, good and bad names, interesting facts, comical occurrences, touching incidents, &c.

He observed Nature as a great book from which he was to make extracts, and carefully collected all the facts that bore the stamp of a contriving mind, whose adaptation he could see, or only anticipate, and formed a book which bore the simple title "*Nature*."

When he meditated a new work, the first thing was to stitch together a blank book, in which he sketched the outlines of his characters, the principal scenes, thoughts to be worked in, &c., and called it "*Quarry for Hesperus*," "*Quarry for Titan*," &c. One of his biographers has given us such a book, containing his studies for Titan, which occupies seventy closely-printed duodecimo pages.

Richter began also in his earliest youth to form a dictionary, and continued it through the whole of his literary life. In this he wrote down synonyms, and all the shades of meaning of which a word was susceptible. For one word he had found more than two hundred. Add to this mass of writing, that he copied all his letters, and it is surprising

how any time remained. He made it a rule to give but one half of the day to writing, the other remained for the invention of his various works, which he accomplished while walking in the open air.

These long walks through valley and over mountain, steeled his body to bear all vicissitudes of weather, and added to his science in atmospheric changes, so that he was called by his townsmen the *weather prophet*. He is described by one who met him on the hills, with open breast and flying hair, singing as he went, while he held a book in his hand. Richter at this time was slender, with a thin pale face, a high nobly formed brow, around which curled fine blond hair. His eyes were a clear soft blue, but capable of an intense fire, like sudden lightning. He had a well formed nose, and, as his biographer expresses it, "a lovely lip-kissing mouth." He wore a loose green coat and straw hat, and was always accompanied by his dog.

As Richter from every walk returned to the little household apartment where his mother carried on her never-ceasing female labors, where half of every day he sat at his desk, he became acquainted with all the thoughts, all the conversation, the whole circle of the relations of the humble society in Hof. He saw the value and significance of the smallest things. The joys, the sorrows, the loves and aversions, the whole of life, in this Tenier's picture passed before him. He himself was a principal figure in this limited circle. He sat with Plato in his hand, while his mother scattered fresh sand on the floor for Sunday, or added some small luxury to the table on days of festival. His hardly earned grotchen went to purchase the goose for Martinmas, while he dreamed of his future glory among distinguished men. Long years he was one of this humble society. He did not approach it as other poets have done, from time to time, to study for purposes of art the humbler classes; he felt himself one of them, and in this school he learnt that sympathy with humanity, which has made him emphatically in Germany the "poet of the poor."

Paul's solitude was suddenly enlivened by the return of Herman from Leipzig. Herman is described as singularly interesting. To the noble qualities of his mind, was added a high degree of personal beauty. His tragical contest with an ever-increasing poverty, his eminent attainments, vainly opposed to an adverse destiny, seem to have given him a

touching interest in Richter's heart. His friendship for Herman was softened by something like the tenderness of love for a feminine nature, and he says, in a sportive letter, that if Herman had a sister he should certainly wish to marry her, provided that her face was like Herman's.

The reader will pardon it, if I anticipate events a little, and place together all I have been able to collect of the history of this favorite friend of Richter's.

I have already mentioned, that the son of the poor tool-maker was always sheltered from blame by Paul's considerate kindness, when obliged by pressing work to come late to the gymnasium. He followed him to Leipzig, and there his struggles with poverty must have been as severe as Paul's. Prepossessing as he was in appearance and manner, he might have possessed the key to all hearts,* but with a glowing love of freedom, he was timid and desponding about himself. Beneath a cynical and rough expression, he concealed in the sanctuary of his mind, a tender, even a virgin purity, and an exalted sense of honor. By his talents and information he was prepared to take a high place among scientific men, but through the want of means and patronage, the bloom and fruit of his mind was doomed to wither and fall. Herman could not, like Richter, withdraw into his hermitage, and there oppose to his discouragements a waiting and persevering industry; he was obliged to wage a daily contest with the saddening realities of life. Providence seemed not to permit that Herman's spirit should find the resting-place it sought, he was therefore not master of his dejection; and Richter, at the same time he was contending with his own hypochondria, saw with bleeding heart, this friend hastening to the abyss of despair. He now first learned that deepest pain of the inward soul, the tragical contest of a noble nature, like that of Herman's, with the difficulties that social and political institutions place in the way of success; the dark riddle of the discrepancy between the mighty impulses of the soul, and the trivial and low circumstances that follow its action, and weary out its efforts in its struggles after a better existence.

Herman having gained the object of his ardent wishes, a

* Herman's person was so charming, that when Paul gave him a letter to the Pastor Vogel, he wrote on the margin "that he must take care of his wife and daughters."

a doctor's degree, came to settle as a physician in the place of his birth. But the proverb was true in this, as in Richter's case, "a prophet is without honor in his own country," and he removed to Erlangen; but there he found little alleviation of his limitless poverty, and was obliged to sell his movables and go to Gottengen, invited to give instructions there to a young Duke de Broglio, from Paris. This employment, although it had few charms for Herman, who thirsted for occupation in his beloved science, yet saved him from actual want, and his letter to Paul, informing him of his plans, is written with much cheerfulness.

Paul wrote to him about this time. "I say to others, 'Be what you appear;' to you I say, 'Appear what thou art!' Suffer like a man the Alp pressure of fate. Does one call thee by name, thou wilt open thy eyes, and instead of a crushing spectre the sun will appear. . . . You are refreshed and charmed by the most pitiful fables as well as by the weightiest truths; like the lark, now singing above the cloud, anon nesting in the damp ground. I am the devil if I do not, some time or other, evolve your whole character in a romance. But make me understand how I can persuade my readers of the probability of your cynical mania; they will say I misunderstood the character, and compelled the inconsistencies to meet.

"From excessive love for your doctor's hat, I send you Haller's Physiology. The part relating to the breath I read so hastily that I lost my own. Write to me not only all that you experience, but also what you think and what others think, either new or evil. Trust yourself upon the broad shining wings of your understanding, and make them bear you over the Dead Sea, so as not to fall spiritually dead within. Do not, as a city physician, cure others, and suffer yourself to die. Do not allow your necessities to steal away the elasticity of your soul; for if you are Herman, you will be angry that you have ever been an anti or pseudo Herman, although never to

"Your friend, R."

Richter's letters were always full of encouragement and hope, and to assist his removal, he sent him a louis d'or, which we may well suppose he could ill spare. A letter from Herman follows.

"Dear Richter,—Saturday evening, the 6th September, I departed, like a Don Quixote, in the brown vest and hose

in which I took leave of the Hof gymnasium and its plagues, which the fashion has hitherto forbidden me to appear in, and my white coat, which I was ashamed to wear in Hof, as it had already served me a year as a night frock. In the right pocket, paper, of which this letter is part, the sketch of the necessary information about Gottingen, a pocket handkerchief, and a pair of red gloves that Oerthel gave me when he read me the most touching passages out of 'Moritz's Soul Experiences.' In the left, a pair of slippers, a box with sealing wax, penknife and razor. Under my left arm an umbrella, carried more to conceal a handkerchief, in which were tied up two shirts, a neckcloth, a pair of stockings and a nightcap, than to protect me from the rain. *Omnia mea mecum.*

"As in the afternoon B., who had followed me to Bamberg, parted from me, I first took a concentrated view of my destiny, present and past. Who would have believed that on that height, where the insupportably oppressive heat of the sun made every step difficult, the Catholic images planted on the way could have consoled me? There I saw that exalted *man*, who sacrificed himself for the love of truth and mankind, represented under suffering and bitter injuries, wounded with thorns, with stripes and blows, and bowed down under the cross. . . . Found I not in this an echoing, and an appeasing voice?"

In Gottingen Herman found sympathizing friends; but the ardor with which he pursued his favorite sciences, (he had begun a universal encyclopædia of science,) soon undermined his health. The letters of the friends are so filled with local and personal references, that even if the limits of this Life would permit the insertion of them, they would be hardly intelligible.

In January, 1796, Herman wrote to his friend: "This year must decide whether I remain a physician or a patient. Should you receive no more letters before Easter, think that I am already beyond all the mountains! In spring one flies more freely! Oh, dear, good Richter, when I remember the time, those school years when I wandered with thee at midnight upon the Schlossplatz at Hof, what should I have suffered, if in the presage that assured me we should always be the sincerest of friends, I could have read and felt *what I am now*; a mere human form, that through hypochondria and opposing fate the soul threatens, some-

times under one, sometimes under another appearance, to leave. Had I foreseen this, it had been no wonder if, through madness, I had anticipated by a voluntary stroke the last consequences of so cruel a destiny. Only the hope of still for a few years pursuing my '*Elements*'* yet retains me. I must now cease, but will continue the letter in a freer moment."

The *freer* moment that came to poor Herman, released him from the burthen of life, and permits us to return to the little apartment in Hof, and to our hero.

CHAPTER IX.

ADAM VON OERTHEL.—RESIDENCE AT TOPEN.—DEATH OF HIS FRIEND.—CHANGE OF VIEWS.

A. D. 1786,
aged 23. AT this time, Richter's other school and college friend, Adam von Oerthel, returned from Leipzig to his father's residence in Topen, and his friendship soon suggested a plan to make his friend Richter's situation, as he hoped, more comfortable. He had a younger brother, and he proposed that Paul should remove into their family as his instructor, principally in French. Paul consented, as he said in his answer to Adam's letter, "to become the crutch or the wooden leg, to help the boy's halting and stumbling through the language." His letter is so characteristic that it seems wrong to withhold it from the reader.

"Leiber Oerthel,—J'y ai réfléchi. Enfin, j'ai dit à moi même: En vérité, mon cher moi, je vois, que tu n'as pas encore les ailes, qui te doivent porter de Hof. Pendant quelles eroissent, tu te peux bein faire une beau *nid* a Topen, où ton ami a le sein. Tu me feras un grand plaisir, si tu y ensieignes, ecris, et lis, c'est à dire, si tu y veux être le maitre de ton élève, du monde entier, et de toi-même. Aussi dois-tu comptu pour quelque chose que tu y es assuré de ne mourier pas de faim. Ne crains point de perdre ta

* A book he was writing.

liberté ; tu changes seulement des bornes qui t'environnent déjà."

It was on new year's day, 1787, that our Richter, with the hope of a better year than the last, entered upon his office of teacher in the house of the Herr Kammerrath von Oerthel, in Topen, not many hours distance from his mother's residence. In leaving his mother's narrow apartment, the pressure of poverty was lightened, and he was relieved from the eternal din of female labors, but he did not find a paradise of rest in Topen.

Herr von Oerthel was a man of limited mind, rough manners, and cold heart. His manner of granting a request was so ungracious that no one, with proper self-respect, could make one; and in becoming rich he had learned to love and to hoard his money. But Paul's pleasure in being with his friend Adam was great; and there was also presented to him the opportunity of opening in the depths of the innocent and hopeful soul of a child, new treasures for psychological observation, in the unfolding of the spiritual and moral germs implanted there.

Although Topen lay deeper than Hof, the place was colder, rougher, and more mountainous. Paul was also further removed from the Pastor Vogel, and his library. It required all the affection of his friend Adam to make his situation in Topen bearable, as he soon found himself wholly disappointed in the character and disposition of his pupil. He never learnt to know the worth of the instructor who opened his whole heart to *him*. Richter was unable to gain the love or confidence of the boy, who soon joined himself with his inferiors to injure his instructor. A man of Paul's sensibility would have suffered still more in such a family, had not the Frau von Oerthel regarded him with motherly care. He had the good fortune in *this*, as in every other instance, to gain the affection of the mistress of the family. Even in his latest years, Paul never forgot the goodness of this excellent woman, nor the cup of coffee which she secretly conveyed to his apartment, and the liberal hand that was only restrained by the avarice of her husband.

The painful and dispiriting circumstances in which Paul found himself in the Oerthelshen house, seem at last to have broken down his almost superhuman cheerfulness and elasticity of spirits, and to have attacked and injured his robust health. He became subject to hypochondria. His gayety

deserted him. Herr Oerthel's law library did not furnish him with the books that he loved, and the increasing illness of his friend Adam deprived the house of all cheerfulness.

At length, after much suffering, his friend expired in his arms. Paul's situation became less tolerable. His pupil possessed none of the endearing qualities of his brother, and with the father his relations were not more agreeable, especially as his manner of fulfilling the contract with Richter was harsh and miserly. He was absolutely in debt to Paul when he left his house. With this bitter experience, Richter returned with wounded and sorrowing heart, to his mother and his old apartment at Hof.

I have passed over, with great rapidity, the two years and nine months that Richter was private instructor in the family at Topen. They were, perhaps, the most unhappy of his life, rendered so by the stupidity and ingratitude of his pupil, his dependence on a harsh and avaricious principal, the death of one of his most intimate friends, and the absence and despair of another. But these years of outward mortification and sorrow were rich in their spiritual influences upon the genius of the poet. The question must have constantly recurred to the readers of *Hesperus* and *Titan*, how could Jean Paul for so many years have written nothing but bitter satires? How could talents, so consecrated in after years to all that is true and beautiful in life, have found any other expression than that of love? Perhaps one answer may be, that every healthy and eminent faculty is augmented in power through self-denial. He has himself said, "The young poet should devoutly and inwardly love, wonder, pray, and weep; but he should pass slowly from thought to expression. The emotions should shut themselves in their sanctuary ten long years from that corkscrew, the poet's pen. *Insealed*, they are condensed, and do not evaporate in the air of the market and the world."*

The fact was, that his genius had as yet found no adequate expression; but a succession of emotions on a mind like Richter's, had the serious and deep effect of great epochs in life. The image of his suffering friend, contending with the bitterest poverty and the deepest despair, turned his inward eye to the whole of suffering humanity; and at the same time that he sought grounds of consolation for his friend,

* Preface to Satires.

he looked deeper into his own soul, and there found not satire for the imperfections of humanity, but a true understanding of the *end* of all suffering, and poetical illustrations of the same. How could he avoid forming the resolution, which he soon ventured upon, instead of wounding with satire or enlivening with caricature, to use such weapons only occasionally, against the oppressor and the wicked? How could he refrain from the effort to alleviate the great sum of human sorrow, which, in the image of his friend, he found beating at his heart, by elevating views of human destiny, and the use of the rich treasures of love, and hope, and trust, his genius had placed at his command?

At this time he wrote to his friend Otto,

"When my brother died, I believed a day could not come when my heart would be more crushed. But the day came! My friend Herman died of a quickly destroying hypochondria, beloved by nature, hated by fortune! Then I read Klopstock's ode to Death, and changed my question. 'Of three friends wherefore hast thou lost two?' into 'Why, in this sad waste of humanity, hast thou *found* three friends?' and I could make no other than a grateful answer."

We have frequent indications through all Richter's works, how deeply he was shaken by the death of these friends; and, after representing the dying scene of one of them, he says, "I felt, for the first time, that upon the earth I was not *einheimisch*" (a native, or at home). These were the experiences that awoke in his bleeding and softened heart, a deeply sympathizing imagination; his spiritual nature made giant strides, and his feelings of despondency gave place to a self-consciousness of power. His book of devotion may be considered as the precursor of his serious writings. In this he first poured out, without reserve or shame, the earnest and love-needing soul of the poet. Here he first expressed those worthy and exalted aims to which he ever afterwards aspired. He analyzed his own soul, and entered upon the noble effort to acquire for himself and others, the exalted hopes, and the sure trust in God, and in human virtue, that is not shut out from the poorest and most limited relations of human life.

Among all the authors of the time, Herder was the one to whom Richter turned with the strongest sympathies. Herder's great views of the world, were as if written from

the anticipations of his own soul, and to Herder alone he unveiled the deeper and more earnest impulses of his mind, which to others were concealed beneath the light garment of wit and satire. He sent through Herder to Wieland, who was at this time the editor of the *German Mercury*, two serious essays for that publication. In this instance, as all through life, his success was decided by a woman. Herder was travelling in Italy; but the peculiar union, not only of heart, but of literary pursuits that existed between Herder and his accomplished wife, permitted her to open and read all his literary communications. She was deeply touched and interested by his essay, *Was der Tod est, What is Death?* and this was an introduction to a friendship with that charming woman, that lasted to the end of life. Richter had written—"these two essays I venture not to send immediately to Herr Wieland; they might be lost in the caravan of paper that closes around him. Perhaps they will gain by being presented by you, as disagreeable news are mitigated when brought to a king by a favorite, or a beloved. As I have absolutely nothing, and hope by these productions, born in the midst of hypochondria, heart-sinking and vanishing health, to gain something. Might you only find them worthy to be read by you! Might you through their *merits* find me worthy to have read yours."

Madam Herder sent the essays to Wieland, with the request, that if he did not insert them in the *Mercury*, to return them immediately; but, alas! they were mislaid in his caravan of papers. They were afterwards sent back, and Madam Herder wrote to Richter, "as my husband is more in connection with the editor of the *German Museum*, I have to-day sent your essays to him; and as soon as I receive an answer, or money, I will immediately forward it to you. Your second piece, *Was der Tod est*, has deeply pleased me. I had nearly placed your true name at the bottom."

The editor of the *Museum* consented to print the smallest piece, *on Death*, but sent him no money. Thus Richter's ship, freighted with hopes, came back without the expected treasure, but with one more valuable, the friendship of the Herders, to whom he was never afterwards a stranger.

Caroline Herder was the first of the German female world whose heart Jean Paul gained through a poetic work; and that, a little serious essay. This was the first acknowledgment he received of warm sympathy in his writings, and it was

a prophetic assurance that from the German *women* he should receive through life, the highest reward of Fame. It could not fail to make a deep impression upon his mind, that through a little serious and *earnest* work, he had reached in a moment, *that* for which he had been striving in vain through so many years, in volumes of witty satirical essays.

As soon at Richter had returned from Topen, to his mother's residence in Hof, he showed, by very A. D. 1789,
aged 26. decided steps, the change that had taken place in his opinions and feelings. He made those changes in his costume, which his friends had demanded in vain for seven years, covering his throat and drawing out his curls behind into a cue; but, as he could do nothing as other people did, he demonstrated his intentions by the humorous advertisement already mentioned.* These changes were necessary, perhaps, to insure his reception in the polite circles of Hof; but he entered with avidity, also, into all those families who had ever been friendly to his mother, and showed a desire to please in every way those, to whom for seven years he would not make the sacrifice of confining the natural flow of his hair. This sudden change of life proves that the plan of his literary works had changed, and that he held it necessary, at any price, to study men and character, and to gain a deeper knowledge of the human heart; especially a more intimate knowledge of the thoughts, impulses, aspirations and sorrows of that sex, who occupy so important a place in his romances, and upon whose favor he depended so constantly in after life.

This was not difficult, for one with such gifts as he possessed, and with such hearty sympathy in the joys and sorrows of others; especially, endowed as he was, with that which the French so beautifully call *politesse du cœur*, which, we have seen by his book of Devotion, was nourished and cultivated as sedulously as if it had not been the natural growth, and rooted deeply in his own virgin soul. It was easy, therefore, for him to gain admittance to a number of cheerful family circles, and the intercourse was for him so much the more charming, as he soon found in each family, one or more growing-up daughters, who discovered for his higher nature a surprising sympathy, and by their more susceptible imaginations attached themselves closely to him.

* See page 117.

Among his best friends was the Postmistress * Wirth. And to show the friendliness of the intercourse, we extract a note to her.

"I am reduced to the choice to freeze, or to write to you; and I do the last. We put off the purchase of wood until to-day, and to-day I am compelled, for want of money, to put it off a week longer. But in that time, I and my harpsichord-playing fingers must be frozen unless you send me counsel or wood. It would be well for us Hofers, if we could get some of the fire which we shall have too warm hereafter, in our stores in our lifetime."

The mention of the harpsichord-playing fingers, reminds us of one of the accomplishments with which Paul made himself a welcome guest in every society. It was his first recommendation to princely circles, and has taken deep hold upon the heart and memory of all who heard him. He played never from written, or printed notes, but *phantasied*, as the inspiration of the moment and the mood of his feelings dictated. In this manner he poured out all the emotions, images, and dreams of his soul, without the timidity that he had always, felt at expressing them in words, and excited or melted his hearers with his own emotions. "Often," said one of his charmed circle, "when we had collected ourselves about him in the twilight, and he had phantasied on the piano till the tears ran over all our faces, and from emotion Paul could play no longer, he would break off suddenly, and begin the most humorous stories of his future life; of his journeys, his wife, and children (which were always three); then he would prophesy, but always with whimsical effect, what a great man he would be—how people would come from all places to see him, and princes and princesses would envy us the pleasure of his society." A prophecy, how improbable, but how well fulfilled!

* Women, in Germany, take the titles of their husbands, as Mrs. Postmistress, Mrs. Doctress, Mrs. Pastorinnen.

CHAPTER X.

RICHTER TAKES A SCHOOL AT SCHWARZENBACH.—METHOD OF INSTRUCTION.—FEMALE PUPILS AND FRIENDS.

WHILE Richter was thus happy in the circle of youthful beings he had drawn about him, whom he was endeavoring to instruct and elevate, he was invited by many persons of high rank to enter their families as private instructor. His experience at Topen forbade him again to encounter such humiliation; but urged by his friends Volkel, Vogel, and the magistrate* Cloter, to take charge of their children, he consented to go to Schwarzenbach, and become, as he says, a pedagogue where he had first been a school-boy. He had at first a small school of six boys and one girl, between the ages of fourteen and seven; and his poetical associations were excited at the thought of beginning his school on the day of his birth, the 21st of March. Richter wrote to the *Amt*, "That on the following Monday, his allodial and feudal estate might be transported to Schwarzenbach in a child's go-cart. Inform both friends, that about the pedagogue's wages there need be no new negotiation. They should both pay less, in proportion, than yourself. Truly, it is much easier to receive presents than wages, from friends."

A. D. 1786,
aged 26.

Cloter answered: "I must remind you of one of the Sibylline rules, that when the moon is waning all fortunate things go backwards, and that Monday also is *Kindlien day* (Innocents), when nothing new should be begun. Forget not, when you enter your dwelling, to make three crosses, and place the right foot first.† Besides, on Monday I shall have no horses; and to bring the reverend theologian with oxen in a chaise, God forbid! *that* will I not."

I have given this little extract, that the reader may have a glimpse of the man who was to be Richter's future patron. We are already acquainted with Volkel and Vogel. Cloter was a man open and honorable in word and deed.

* Amtverwalter, the magistrate of a certain district.

† This raillery was no doubt occasioned by Jean Paul wishing to enter upon his new duties on his birth-day

Where he gave his hand he gave his heart, and the bond lasted as long as life.

There was need neither of horse nor oxen to transport the personal property of our hero. He wrote to Otto upon his removal: "On my entrance into my Schwarzenbach school office, I, as usual, made an inventory of boots, stockings, handkerchiefs, and a couple of kreutzers. Out of this list, failed only Nos. 1, 2, 3, and 4. I have nothing, but I hope this will be the very last request. I have been the occasion of some accidental successes, but friendship is perhaps best known to you under the form of favors, and with Herman died, as little what you did for him, as your goodness to me will die with either of us. Besides, thou knowest me, and thyself, and I hope neither the doing, nor the forbearing to do, the refusing or consenting to my prayer, can ever alter our relations or our opinions." *Lebewohl.*"

The reader will now follow Richter to Schwarzenbach, the place where, in childhood, he hungered and thirsted for instruction, and where first the dreams of future fame hovered over the friendless boy.* This last winter in Hof had blown its icy breath of cold and poverty into the poor apartment of his mother; but now, in the spring, it was cheered with the warmer breeze of approaching good fortune. At this time his biographer says, "Whoever had seen him, with his small portion of worldly possessions in his hand, his gray green woollen coat, and that noble, tender countenance, in which fate, with all its blows, had left no scars; had looked into his beaming eyes, and said, Steer on, courageous Columbus! What thou, with prophetic eye, hast looked upon, *must* be! Only a few more heavy years, and thou shalt hear and see the land. Above the blooming hills of the New World the sun shall rise for thee, and a beam will penetrate the narrow, dark chamber of thy poor mother, and will be to her the light-beam of an eternal blessedness!"

After a friendly contest with Cloter, who insisted that the new teacher should be exclusively his guest, it was decided that he should live successively with each of his patrons, changing his residence every quarter. It is pleasant to see, that this New England custom has had a prece-

* See First Part, page 60.

dent in Germany. After a few weeks, Richter found his most sanguine hopes of contentment and happiness fulfilled.

The deep and marked peculiarities of a poetic nature were never brought into fuller exercise than by Richter, in the formation and government of his little school. That, which is usually to men of rich endowments a vexing and wearisome employment, the daily routine of instruction for little children in the elements of knowledge, became to him a source of elevated and ennobling thought. His *mode* of instruction was the opposite of that, from which he thought he had himself suffered. In his little school there was no learning by heart, no committing to memory the thoughts of others, but every child was expected to use its own powers. His exertions seem mainly directed to awaken in the children a reproducing and self-creating power; all knowledge, was therefore the material, out of which they were to form new combinations. In a word, the whole of his instruction was directed to create a desire for self-study, and thus lead his pupils to *self-knowledge*. He aimed to bring out, as much as possible, the talents that God had given his pupils; and, after exciting a love of knowledge, he left them to a free choice as to what they would study; but their zeal and emulation were kept alive by a (so called) "*red book*," in which an exact account of the work of each individual was recorded; this was shown to parents and friends at the end of the quarter, and so great was their zeal, that they needed a rein rather than a spur. While he accustomed the children to the spontaneous activity of all their faculties, he gave them five hours a day of direct instruction, in which he led them through the various departments of human knowledge, and taught them to connect ideas and facts by comparison and association. From the kingdom of plants and animals he ascended to the starred firmament, made them acquainted with the course of the planets, and led their imaginations to these worlds and their inhabitants. Then he conducted them through the picture gallery of the past history of nations, and placed the heroes, and saints, and martyrs of antiquity before them, or he turned their attention to the mystery of their own souls and the destiny of man. Above all, and with all, he directed their tender, childish hearts to a *Father in heaven*. He said, "there can be no such companion to the

heart of children, for the whole of life, as the ever-present thought of God and immortality."

In "*Levana*," his work upon education, Richter has given a detailed account of his method of instruction in this little school. It cannot be denied that it was more adapted to cultivate a poetic nature, to form authors and literary men, than active and practical men of business. His instructions were directed almost wholly to the unfolding of the spiritual and intellectual nature, and to forming a creative imagination. He seems to have been in danger of forgetting, that the same sun that opens the tender bud, may close it for ever. A wise gardener will take care that a too powerful heat do not draw up from the root an excess of the vital fluid, and injure the delicate plant for ever."*

These four years at Schwarzenbach were among the happiest of Richter's life. The parents of the children were his warmest friends, and his whole heart was engaged in forming the characters of his pupils. He wrote to Otto, "that his schoolroom was his Paradise, his Peru, his Tempe, and his Prater." Every Sunday he walked to Hof, and spent the day with his mother. There he always found a party of young female friends collected to meet *him*, who was the soul and life of their intercourse. A heart like Richter's could not remain at any time insensible to female influence. The tenderness and reverence with which he always speaks of the sorrows and sensibility of women, has made him dear to every woman's heart. He did not regard them, as men of genius are too apt to do, as mere playthings for the flattery of an idle hour; or solely as idols of the imagination for poets to study, in order to heighten the effect of their own creations: he strove to elevate them in their own estimation, and place them in a moral and intellectual equality with man, and, added to this, was all the tenderness which led him to say, "To the man who has had a mother, all women are sacred for her sake."

The four young ladies with whom Richter lived in confi-

* One hour in the day was appropriated to conversation, when the children were invited and encouraged to ask questions, and make remarks. Jean Paul kept a record of this hour, which he called his "*Bon mot Anthology*." He anticipated an experiment, since made in Boston; and it is curious to see that German children and Boston children, making an allowance for difference of age, make very much the same observations. See Appendix, No. I.

dential friendship, appear under the names of Caroline, Helena, Frederica the sister, and Amonè, who afterwards married his friend Otto. He encouraged them to write to him upon all questions of taste and literature, ethics or religion, that they found difficult in solving themselves; and he fortified the resolution, or soothed the uneasiness of those who met with difficulties of any kind. He, indeed, seems to have held the double office of instructor and confessor. His intercourse with young women was also a benefit to himself; for with them he was obliged to soften the bitterness of his satire, or to clothe it in the form of the graces.

It may seem surprising, that placed in such intimate relations with women only a few years younger than himself, and susceptible as he had always been, Richter should have felt no serious passion. At this time he wrote a prize essay that probably defined the limits of his friendship towards his young disciples: "How far friendship towards the other sex may proceed without love, and what is the difference between *that* and love." His biographer seems to wish to persuade himself that the change which took place in Jean Paul at this time was the result of an individual passion. But it is plain, I think, from his journals, that his ideal of female beauty and excellence, the object for which his heart beat in secret, those exquisite creations of profound feeling, meekness and love which he has left in his writings, existed not yet to him. In all his strong emotions, in the torrent of his deepest feelings, when he bathed in the delight of a summer day, or when the setting sun spread over him rose-colored and golden clouds, and he asked for a second heart in which to pour the overflowing emotions of his own, it was always a female heart. In his journal are many passages, in which he dwells upon his hopes of one day meeting this idol of his dreams.

He writes: "I ask not the most beautiful *person*, but for the most beautiful *heart*; in *that* I can overlook blemishes, but in *this*, none." Even when his spirit was filled with universal benevolence, and he spread out his arms to embrace all the world, a small voice from his heart whispered, that among a thousand, none had yet been found for him. He writes again: "There can be but *one* beloved, that can forget all for thee, and give thee every minute, every glance, every joy, every beating of the pulse, and say to thee, 'We have chosen each other from the whole world. Thy heart is

mine, mine is thine, thou deeply, deeply loved !” But beyond the clouds of earth and the grave, a time will come when we shall not seek avariciously among the best, a better for ourselves; but when there will be but one, supremely loved, that is God, and millions loving all mankind.

“And yet, thou ! that in this dark, cold night of life remained longest with me, and pressed my arm upon thy heart; yet, if I should meet thine eye that I have so loved; if I should see again all that here so drew me to thee, ah, I should fall weeping upon thy heart, and say, ‘This is he who loved me upon earth, I must do something *here* to distinguish thee from others.’”*

There was said to be a certain Caroline, who carried Richter beyond the limits between friendship and love. It was not her extraordinary beauty that fascinated him, but the great liveliness of all her sentiments and emotions. However, this dream lasted but a short time; with the spring it melted away; and, that the lady herself dissolved it, appears from an entry in his journal. “*I alone must repeat in solitude with flowing eyes, Thou lovest her yet, eternally, eternally!*” His letters to Caroline differed very little from his letters to his other young friends. To all they were full of wise counsel, playful and humorous suggestions, delicate and penetrating sympathy with sorrows only betrayed in hints and whispers. He wrote for them fables; imaginary journeys all over the world, to teach them the customs of foreign countries; a fanciful history of the inhabitants of the moon dreams, in which he veiled the most delicate hints and instructions: and to one of his young friends, who wished for some assurance of the immortality of the soul, he sent an “*Essay upon the continuance of the Soul, and its consciousness,*” which contains the foundation and outline of the “*Kampaner Thal*.”

To another he wrote, on her-birth-day: “The soul celebrates at every good deed a birth-day. In your letter, I rejoice at your joy over a quiet day. Men are made to be eternally shaken about, but women are flowers that lose their beautiful colors in the noise and tumult of life. Since a year and a half it has been my principle (for your sex are judged by the suspicion of men or the hatred of women) to think *better* of every woman than any would think of her

* Richter refers here to his friend Herman.

except her lover. . . . Let the reward of virtue be the continuance of virtue."

It should be remembered, in reading the next extract, that Richter was writing for the young women who lived in the region of the Fichtelgebirge, where, we have learned from the *Introduction*, the females bore the burthen of life; and before Paul had diffused more liberal ideas upon the education of the daughters of families, they received little intellectual instruction, and were scarcely regarded as the equals of man. He is speaking of a young bride he had met in one of his rambles, returning to her husband's home, and was invited to take his seat in the *vis à vis*.

"I and the sun were opposite Pauline, and looked into her face with equal warmth; and at last I was touched by the sight of her patient, quiet figure. Why was it? Not that I reflected upon the common Moravian-*Hernhuttish* (marriage) lot-drawing of women, for at a certain age they have more feeling than knowledge, and in their empty hearts there is a fire for the sacrifice, but no God, as in the virgin temple of Vesta there was no image, but only fire, and at the *first appearance* of *any* divinity the altar was consecrated to him. My emotion did not come from the thought that *she*, like most of her sisters, like tender berries, were plucked from the stem and crushed in the rough hand of man; or that her female spring had so many clouds and so few flowery days; or that I compared *her*, as many other brides, to the sleeping child that *Carafola* has painted, with an angel holding over it a crown of thorns, that marriage, like the angel, would awake by pressing the thorns upon her brow. But it made my soul tender, when I looked in this sweet contented face, blooming with red and white roses, and thought within myself, O, be not so joyful, poor sacrifice! Thou knowest not that thy gentle heart needs something warmer than blood, and thy head better dreams than the pillow can bring it; that the perfumed flower leaves of thy youth must soon be drawn together to form the scentless calix leaves to protect the honey cup for thy husband, who will soon demand of thee neither tenderness nor a light heart, but only rough working fingers, feet never weary, laboring arms, and a quiet, paralytic tongue. This far, wide speaking vault of the eternal, the blue rotunda of the universe, will shrink up to be thy housewifery apartment, thy fuel chamber and spinning-house, and in thy happiest days only a visiting apartment.

The sun will be for thee only a hanging balloon stove, a room heater of the universe ; the moon but a cobbler's rushlight upon the candlestick of a cloud. The Rhine will shrink into a pool and rinsing kettle, to whiten thy household linen, and the ocean be only a herring pond. . . . Thou wert created for something better, but that thou wilt not be ; and so, thy leaves stripped away by years, and all thy sweet buds dried up and faded, death will first transplant thee to a more congenial climate.

"Wherefore should not this trouble me ? Do I not see every week how souls are sacrificed as soon as they inhabit a female body ? If, then, the richest and most gifted souls, in the morning glow of life, with unrequited hearts, wishes denied, in a single position are disdained by society, what wonder if they sink into the sheltered citizenship of marriage. They think themselves happy, if by this they escape a thousand signs of forgetfulness ; and if the husband is a gentle jailer, who could tame the Bastile prisoners, the poor soul feels her lot supremely happy. The golden mornings and enchanted castles of her earlier years fade, and fall unremarked. Her sun descends, unseen, by slow degrees, over her clouded and earthly day, and amid pain and duty the twilight of evening shrouds her humble existence ; she has never experienced *all* that she was worthy of, and in age she has forgotten all that the morning glow of life promised. Sometimes, when a long buried idol of her once devout heart, or melancholy music, or a book, throws upon the winter sleep of her heart a warm sunbeam, she starts and looks around, and says, 'formerly was it different with me, but it is long since, and I believe at that time I might have erred,' and she sleeps again.

"Truly, parents and husbands, I draw this picture, not to press from the wounded hearts who recognize their likeness, another tear ; but I represent these pictured wounds, that you may heal the *real*, and throw away for ever your instruments of torture."

A letter to Helena follows, from which I give a short extract.

"I would in this foolish letter repeat our late conversation. I will take the liberty to call you the Democrat, as you would be the protecting goddess of the freedom of women ; and I will take the title with which I was once baptized at your house, that of Chaplain. We will make

believe that we were following the democrat and the chaplain, and listening to their conversation as they walked to Krotenhof.

"The dear good democrat says, 'Can a maiden, who has preserved this name till old age, deserve every satirical arrow that is aimed at her from mouths and bookshelves, because she does not wish for fetters, or suffer them to be drawn on?'

"The chaplain answered, 'In fact, we all, or none, deserve satire, for we have all more follies than hairs. But how will your good nun defend herself?'

"'With every thing,' (and the democrat shaded herself with her parasol, as the sun with an evening cloud.) 'Ah, in the female heart envious eyes too often look, and too rarely the indulgent! Pitying eyes would there find wounds that are every day cut deeper, and a world of stifled sighs. But upon the female soul as well as the female body is bound an eternal corset. We go from chain to chain ——'

"'Suffer me to finish the picture, for so far it is true. Yes, you are right—prejudices, that are flowers for us, are thistles for you. Your teachers, your companions, and often even your parents, trample upon and crush the little flowers that you have sheltered and cherished. Your hands are more employed than your heads. You are only allowed to play with your fans—and nothing is pardoned you; at the least—a heart!'

"'Who then would be severe and satirical, if a being so opprest, so entangled in chains, has not the courage to deliver all she possesses, that best and tenderest treasure, her heart, into manly hands of which she knows nothing—knows not whether he will warm or oppress; cherish or torture the gift! What upon this earth can be more dangerous than to make an election, that can never be changed, and whose good or evil goes on increasing continually to the last day of life? May she not justify herself in avoiding this election, if she sees stretching out before her a charming unfettered life, among female friends, with light duties, and the pleasures of youth ever renewed?'

"'Complete your picture,' said the chaplain; 'and do not forget, that perhaps there may have been *one*, upon whose arm you could, nevertheless, have passed through the thorns of life, but that he is eternally parted from you, and perhaps

buried beneath these thorns. In certain years, it is difficult to forget what we have loved, and more difficult to replace it. The lacerated heart retreats into its solitary cell, and seeks, at most, only female friends.'

" ' You are, then, of my opinion ?' said the democrat.

" ' God forbid !'

" Both now stood upon a height where they could look towards Krotenhof. The chaplain opened his arms, and cried out, ' Is there in the wide world one who would be Chaplainin ? Here stands the Chaplain !—But, seriously, I have a hundred reasons to give you. In your opinion, the best maidens crook the finger, when asked to put on the marriage ring. But we will follow these best maidens into their sixtieth year, and see how it is with them then, without the marriage ring. We find them solitary, unknown, without friends, except those who would live in their testaments, but not in their hearts ; without friends, for those who were their friends in the summer years of youth, have taken back their hearts, and given them to their husbands and children. She has now no one that she can love ; instead of a husband, only a favorite cat to torment, that is not half as faithful as a husband ; and instead of children she educates canary birds. Instead of the inexpressibly sweet duty of a mother, who, like God, educates little Adams and Eves ; and the sweet employment of a good housewife, who takes from her husband all his cares and wrinkles, she has merely the duty to love or hate herself ; to cherish her ennui, and her great prayer-book, and on festivals to eat alone. In the long winter evenings she has no one but her maid, to whom she can recount the joys of her youth. . . . The good maiden thought, forsooth, she should remain her whole life long only seventeen years old ; her young friends are now all scattered far from her, upon different heights, and for thirty years she has had nothing youthful near her—and she will die alone perhaps, not missed.'

" ' She will be regretted by the poor, to whom she gave bread, and missed by the children to whom she gave education.'

" ' Educating poor children is like a bright-colored May dream. It is as though I should see my children *confessing* to another, and seek complete strangers to *absolve*. If a man, that has all the world upon his shoulders, books to write, journeys about the world, protocols, sermons, con-

quests to make, and no time to woo, can scarcely be excused from marrying—how can a woman, who has more time to betroth herself, and first at the altar receives her crown and sceptre, her power to rule, and confer happiness.—But here we are at the end of our walk, and I will send you a written contradiction and confutation.’”

I have dwelt thus long upon this part of Paul's life, because it was the season when he passed through those moral conflicts, that resulted in a deep spiritual faith, and in love and devotion. His whole nature acquired an *earnest* direction, and his works were henceforth created to elevate in happiness, to soothe and cheer in sorrow. Satire remained among his lighter weapons, but he took from it the bitterness of scorn, and henceforth his vinegar was made of honey.

These assertions are established by a remarkable passage in his journal of this year, (November 15, 1790.) He calls it “the weightiest evening of my life, for I received the thought of death. I looked through thirty years, and saw myself on my death-bed. That last dream-night will come! And because thirty years are as certain to terminate as one day, I will now take leave of the earth and its heaven! My plans and wishes shall now fold their wings. My heart, as it does not yet rest under the feet of strangers, may beat on a friendly bosom; my senses may yet, ere six boards enclose them, seize a few fluttering joys on their short passage to the grave—but I value them no more. And you, my brothers! I will love you more; I will create for you more joys! Giving up my great plans, I will limit my exertions to making you cheerful, and direct my comic power no longer, as hitherto, to torment you.”

CHAPTER XI.

RICHTER'S FIRST SERIOUS WORK.—"THE LITTLE SCHOOLMASTER WUZ."—"THE INVISIBLE LODGE."—FIRST SUCCESS.—SABBATH WEEKS OF LIFE.—"HESPERUS."

A. D. 1791, ^{aged 28.} IT must not be supposed, that by Richter's devotion to his young female friends all other friendships were excluded. His intimacy with Christian Otto, as already mentioned, began soon after his return from Leipzig; but in 1790, they began a daily correspondence, that lasted uninterruptedly for fourteen years, after which they were both established in the same city. Beside this, they met every week between Schwarzenbach and Hof, when Otto accompanied his friend back. Richter said to him, "I pray thee to be my public, my reading world, my critic, my reviewer;" and henceforth Otto filled these offices. Richter wanted such a friend, and chose Otto to fill the place. He seems to have exercised upon him a magnetic power, such as in his sixtieth year he was able to exercise upon young and powerful natures merely through the force of his will. When Richter looked at Otto with lightning eyes, but at the same time filled with love, Otto's fate was decided for life; there was nothing more in the world for him, he lived in and through his friend. He was the person that Paul needed to listen to his literary plans, to receive and answer his letters, to be the depositary of his inward and outward life. Otto was the first who whispered that applause which was afterwards echoed by the literary public. He was also a severe and faithful critic, and Richter for some years adopted his suggestions, and made with admirable docility, the changes in his works that Otto advised.

The relation between Richter and Otto was one of the most remarkable that the history of literary men has made known. Only a less gifted nature could have given himself up to another, and have submitted to the sacrifices that Otto made to Richter. But he was no Boswell; he possessed the noblest qualities, and was inferior to Richter only in genius. He seems to have loved and revered his friend with the disinterested devotion of a woman; and he had to

offer many of the mortifications that attend a female nature in connection with a man of genius. For if Richter was blinded for a moment by the splendor of higher acquaintances, Otto felt himself forgotten, and suffered all the bitterness of jealousy. Even the blessedness of calling such a man his own, was purchased with the sacrifice of much that a woman gives up to a beloved object, and with the misery that a woman feels after she has learnt to know her spiritual wants, and is thrust back into common life. Otto's humility was as remarkable as his elevation. He never even drew a reflected light upon himself, but was content to enjoy in secret the consciousness of influencing a man like Richter; and was great enough to owe nothing in the sight of the world to him. It was only after the death of both, that the publication of their correspondence revealed their relations to each other; and the outbreking pain and jealousy of Otto, over what he imagined the occasional coldness of Richter.

Almost the first production upon which Otto was called to exercise his new office of critic, was the "History of the contented little Schoolmaster, Maria Wuz." Richter had the modesty to call it an *Idyl*, the lowest species of poetic creation. *Wuz* is remarkable as being the first of his compositions to which he lent his own life. The childhood of *Wuz* is but a poetical representation of his own. Its exquisite humor consists in the delightful vanity and self-satisfaction of a limited being, in limited circumstances. It is also remarkable as the transition from the satirical works to those of an earnest and sentimental nature, or, as Paul calls it, "The bridge over which he passed from the vinegar brie where he had worked nineteen years, when he closed the door to satire, and opened it to all that loved, and rejoiced and wept with human nature."

In 1819, Richter wrote thus of this transition. Speaking in the third person, he says, "In his nineteenth year he made satirical sketches, and then nine years longer he worked in his vinegar manufactory; but at last, in December, 1790, through the somewhat honey-sour 'Life of the little Schoolmaster Wuz,' he took the blessed step over into the *Invisible Lodge*.* A long oppressed, over-full heart pre-

* I have since learned, that the *Little Schoolmaster Wuz* was not the first effort of Jean Paul in the form of narrative. He had written

serves more of moderate and just equality in its flood, than one always left open, for the ebb of the *last*, must make spring fountain requisite for the next book fair.

"The blossoms of large trees that have long been growing are small, and have usually only two simple colors, white and red, innocence and shame; on the contrary, flowers of quick-growing slender stems are broader and fuller, and ornamented with many glaring colors."

Otto's approbation of the *Contented Schoolmaster* encouraged Richter to go on to the production of a serious romance. *Wuz* was finished March 2d, and the *Invisible Lodge* begun March 15th. Paul called it his *Pedagogic Romance*, and it is based on his own experience in teaching. The plan of education in the *Invisible Lodge* is the same pursued by Richter with his own pupils. It consists in not exciting too early the warmth of emotion, but through mathematics and philosophy forming the understanding, self-activity and leading the fancy to wit; thus protecting the pupil from those moral errors, which are the fruit of too early excited imagination.

Gustavus, in consequence of his Moravian and buried youth, was brought *too late* into the hands of such a teacher to escape a moral fall. While Richter asserts that a too early excited imagination leads a *man* into moral errors, he also asserts that it preserves the *higher female* nature, raises it above temptation, and gives it a strength to contend with difficulties, before which the weaker *physical* nature of a woman is vanquished. Thus, while *Gustavus* yields, *Beate* is victorious over temptation. *Beate* is but a passing shadow of those women, made up of light and delicate touched lines, that Jean Paul, with all the glow of fancy delighted, as in his *Liane*, to paint with high, pure soul, frail, almost dissolving and transparent bodies; beautiful

before this, the diverting description of a pedantic School Rector, on a journey of pleasure with his *Primaners*, continuing their lessons through the beautiful June days, dosing them with Latin when they rested at the inns, studying the maps of other countries, instead of observing the places they passed through, and turning back before they had reached the object of their journey. *This*, together with *Freudels Kluglibell über seinem Verfluchten Dämon*, were omitted in the first collected edition of his works. I was ignorant of them, till I learned their existence from *Spazier's Biographical Commentary*, a book to which I have been much indebted in the latter part of this work.

materials for poetry, but too ethereal for *human nature's daily food*.

The other characters in this romance are made up from the limited number of the author's acquaintance, and he has worked them in with wonderful skill. *Roper* and his wife represent the Oerthelshen married pair; *Amandus*, his sick and dying friend Adam von Oerthel; and Dr. *Fenk* is a modification of Herman, destitute, however, of the singular personal beauty of his friend. In the principal characters, Richter has not only expressed his own thoughts and sentiments, but his individual experiences, his recollections, and the different epochs of the history of his soul are embodied in them. To *Ottoman* he has given his dreams and aspirations; to *Fenk* his satire and comic humor; and in *Gustav* the events of his autobiography are clothed in a poetic garment. We feel that these three characters, though with different forms of expression, compose one and the same being.

The poverty of characters in Jean Paul's novels, is the reason of his breaking the narrative with what he calls *extra leaves*. The richness of his ideas, and his poetic illustration, were in such disproportion to his invention of fable and character, that the canvas was not broad enough to take up all which his mind was full. It was not affectation, therefore, that induced the insertion of these *extra leaves*, but a superundance of thought.

When Richter sent his manuscript to Otto, he wrote with fear and trembling: "The birth-pangs of my romance are over. Think of my disadvantageous situation as a romance writer, that I can avail myself of so few living characters, as models, that I have never seen the higher ranks of life,—and be lenient."

But how should he obtain a printer? Providence seemed to lead him to send his manuscript to the Hofrath* Moritz, who had great influence with a bookseller in Berlin, whose daughter he was on the eve of marrying. Happy was it indeed for Richter, that the man, to whom he turned, was in the age, for the first time loving deeply, and exactly in a situation to be touched by the earnest and sentimental gifts of Paul's imagination. Richter wrote thus: "I would that you had already finished this page, that I might not blush

* Counsellor.

at your astonishment at the sight of these volumes. The dark canvas infolds, like the life of man, joys, sorrows, and a half-executed plan; in short, a romance. If you find, after reading, that it is worthy to be read by the few like you, I pray you to reach it a mercantile helping hand, that it may be raised from the written to the printed world."

Moritz, who was in the habit of receiving such presents, frowned, and threw it aside, with an ah! but as he read the first lines of Richter's letter, his brow cleared, and when he reached the end, there was no longer a fold to be seen on his face. As he read some pages of the manuscript, he cried out, "This is no *unknown* writer. It is Goethe, Herder or Wieland!" but as he went on, he repeatedly exclaimed "that he could not understand it—it was above Goethe—it was something wholly new!"

We can imagine Richter's delight, on returning from a little pedestrian journey, to find such a letter as this "Suffer me to tell you what has delighted me in your work and were you at the end of the earth, I would encounter a hundred storms to fly to tell you! Where do you dwell? How are you called? Who are you?*" Your work is a jewel!" &c.

Moritz wrote again immediately after the book was printed, and sent thirty of the hundred ducats† the printer gave for the work.

The heart of Richter opened immediately to such a friend and went forth to meet him in all the confidence of love but the whole fulness of his joy and success was poured out for his mother, who needed indeed this balsam of filial love. The moment he received the thirty ducats, he set out to walk from Schwarzenbach to Hof. On the way, by the light of the stars, he thought of his mother's astonishment, his joy, and her pious gratitude to heaven, and entering late at night the low apartment where she sat spinning by the light of the fire, he poured the whole golden treasure into her lap.

Whoever has read the numerous passages in Richter's works, where he describes the joy of soothing the dark yearning of aged sorrow, and lightening the debt which every child contracts at birth to its mother, will follow him in sympathy.

* Richter did not publish yet under his own name.

† About two hundred and twenty-six dollars.

thizing joy on this evening, never to be forgotten, when he transferred the first reward of persevering industry to the hands of his mother.

The unexpected success of his romance, lifting him as it were at once into fame, made no difference in the simple and inostentatious life of Richter. He immediately began his second romance, *The Hesperus*, working unweariedly at it before and after school.

In the spring of 1794, his two eldest pupils entered the Gymnasium at Bayreuth, and he returned to his mother in Hof. His first care had been, as soon as a better prospect opened before him, to take his mother from the miserable little apartment she had occupied, behind the parish church in Hof, and place her in a more cheerful, but still humble and modest dwelling, near his friend, Christian Otto. His next care was to fulfil a duty of gratitude, by repaying to his old instructor, Werner, a sum he had lent to his mother. I insert the answer of the aged man.

“Wholly unexpected was your letter to me; and yet, if possible, the inclosure was more so. Be assured I was touched by it, even to shedding tears, and that it will remain for ever unforgotten! It is to me a new proof of a Divine Providence, a new expression of your noble way of thinking and acting.

“I sat in the window deeply sunk, in consequence of the bad times, in anxiety for the support of my family, when your letter, heavy with money, of which I was wholly destitute, was brought in. Certainly it was wonderful! and that, in the midst of so much employment, you should remember me, a poor old schoolmaster; should be my friend, and wish me so much good; and that the little I once afforded your poor mother, that I had long since forgotten, should be again restored to me by the heavy sweat of your brow! Truly, it was something strange! touching!

“Thanks, above all, to the good Providence that, just at the right time, and wholly unexpectedly, led you to do this for the support of my family (for I have never found it so difficult to help them as now, when my old body will not quiesce in it). Thanks also to you, through whom Providence has chosen the means to help me. Be assured, till my apparently near dissolution, I shall be yours, w.”

The weeks that followed the successful reception of the *Invisible Lodge* were the “Sabbath weeks” of Paul’s life.

He had had the courage to speak out in the fulness of his nature, and had found a response in many hearts. In the paradise that opened before him, he determined to give full course to the flood of his genius; but he well knew, that the richest fulness of poetic thought could only exist in connection with peace of soul, cheerfulness of disposition, and firmness of purpose; and that the truth of his representations must arise from corresponding inward truth and integrity; in short, if he would be a poet in his works, he must be a poet in his life.

He carefully continued his book of devotion, his rules and purposes of life. He never awoke without reviewing the past day, and where he had been assaulted by the force of any passion, *there* he placed a double bulwark, and with quiet satisfaction celebrated the victory gained. His quick and warm fancy led him often to outbreking anger, and his ready wit to satire that was sometimes wounding, especially when his good nature was misused; but the gentlest call led him back to tenderness,—the accidental sight of a boy's face with tears in his eyes was sufficient to disarm him; he thought of his future life, of the sorrows that would draw from him still bitterer tears, and he said, "*I will not pour into the cup of humanity a single drop of gall,*" and he kept his word. Where he was obliged to assert his rights, he did it so calmly and gently, that the holy treasures of his life, love and truth, remained for ever undisturbed.

Every thing living touched his heart, from the humblest flower that opened its leaves in the grass, up to the shining worlds on high; children and old men, the beggar and the rich, he would have embraced them all in the sacred glow of his emotions, or given all he possessed to make them happy. No one went from him unconsolated; and when he could give nothing but good counsel, he gave that. Were it only a poor mountaineer or a travelling apprentice to whom he could impart the smallest present, he would dwell the whole day with delight on the circumstance. Often he would say to himself, "Now we will draw the dollar from his pocket, and reckon which of his long-cherished wishes he can first satisfy. How often will he think of this day, and of the unexpected gift, and perhaps *once* more than usual upon the Giver of *all* good." Love was the ever living principle of his character and of his writings, and before the thought of the Infinite, all differences in rank vanished away; all were

qually great or equally little. He gained nourishment for his principle from every circumstance in life. Where others would have been untouched and cold, there he heard whispered to his spirit the voice of humanity. Let him speak for himself. He says in his journal:

"I picked up in the choir a faded rose-leaf, that lay under the feet of the boys. Great God! what had I in my hand but a small leaf, with a little dust upon it, and upon this small fugitive thing my fancy built a whole paradise of joy, —a whole summer dwelt upon this leaf. I thought of the beautiful day when the boy held this flower in his hand, and then through the church window he saw the blue heaven and the clouds wandering over it; when every place in the cool vault was full of sunlight, and reminded him of the shadows in the grass from the over flying clouds. Good God! thou givest satisfaction every where, and givest to every one joys to impart again. Not merely dost thou invite us to great and exciting pleasures, but thou givest to the smallest a lingering perfume."

Above all things, his eye hung upon Nature. He lived and wrote whole days in the open air, on the mountain or in the woods; and in the midst of winter he sought from the window the evening rose color, his beloved stars, and that magic enchanter, the moon. Every walk in the open air was to him the entrance into a church. He said in his journal: Dost thou enter pure into this vast, guiltless temple? Dost thou bring no poisonous passion into this place, where flowers bloom and birds sing? Dost thou bear no hatred where Nature loves? Art thou calm as the stream where Nature reflects herself as in a mirror? Ah, would that my heart were as true and as unruffled as Nature, when she came from the hands of her great Creator!" Every new excursion in this great temple gave him new strength, and he returned laden with spiritual treasures. He loved to make short journeys on foot, where the motion of the body kept the mind in a state of activity; and the insignificant gained value by its unexpectedness. A sunny day made him happy, and the perfumes of a spring morning, or dewy evening, seemed almost to intoxicate him with their incense; but the hours of night were those of his highest elevation, when he would lie long hours on the dewy grass, looking into the opening clouds. He says in his journal: "I take my ink-bask in the morning, and write as I walk in the fragrant air

Then comes my joy, that I have conquered two of my faults—my disposition to be angry in conversation, and to lose my cheerfulness through a long day of dust and musketoes. Nothing makes one so indifferent to the pin and musquet thrusts of life, as the consciousness of growing better.”

Immediately after the publication of *The Invisible Lodge* the friend who had exerted himself so much in its favor, and whose admiration had been so warmly expressed, Moritz, of Berlin, died. The book did not attain the universal fame he had predicted for it; Paul himself was sensible of its faults, and proposed a few years afterwards wholly to re-write, and give it a more satisfactory conclusion. It remains however unfinished, and appears to me the least interesting of all Richter's serious romances, and he, before his death, called it a *Born Ruin*. Whatever the cause, for his *Hesperus*, which was finished and sent to Otto to read on the longest day of the year 1794, Richter could obtain only two hundred Prussian dollars. This is the work by which the author has been best known, out of Germany. In Germany *Titan* is THE work, the GREAT WORK of Jean Paul; but the first volume is so peculiarly *Jean Paulish*, that I presume many persons have been deterred from going beyond that.

It is, perhaps, desirable to the English reader, to learn something of the work by which the author is best known.

HESPERUS.

It was a singularly happy illustration, to compare *Hesperus* to Strasburg Cathedral; although it is full of beauty, of lovely pictures, and of exquisite passages, it is deficient in symmetry and unfinished in its details. The story is so confused, that probably many persons have read and admired the book, without even getting a clear idea of its story.

The Prince Januar, in his various travels, has left five sons in the different countries where he has rested. Lord Horion, an Englishman, after the death of a beloved wife ardently desires some employment that will lessen the void in his heart; meeting this Prince Januar, he becomes his friend, and, returning with him to Germany, makes himself necessary to him as a wise and powerful minister. Of the five sons, *one* only enters into the scenes of the romance. Flamin the youngest, whose mother was a niece of Lord Horion. After the desertion of the prince, this niece marries

Le Baut, his chamberlain. Lord Horion, fearing that his own influence will be overruled by that of his niece and her son, if permitted to return with the prince to Germany, persuades her to separate herself from Le Baut, (whose bad character is indeed a sufficient reason,) and remain with her son in England. Eyman, the chaplain of the prince, had also followed him to England, having before married a young lady of the court, who gave birth to a son just at the time Flamin was born. Lord Horion, the master-spirit and juggler of the history, and who wishes to try the experiment of educating a prince as if he were only a citizen, effects the exchange of the infants; gives Flamin, the son of the prince, to Eyman the chaplain; and Victor, the chaplain's son, (as his own son Julius, by his beloved wife, is born blind,) he determines to educate as his own son, and gives him his own name.

The three children, Flamin, Victor, and Julius, together with Julia, the daughter also of Lord Horion, are educated by Emanuel, or Dehore, a Moravian, or Brahmin, or mystical philosopher, and remain in England until their tenth or twelfth year, under the maternal care of the divorced wife of Le Baut, the niece of Lord Horion. To the surprise of every one, Flamin, the reputed son of the chaplain, but the real son of the prince, is educated for an advocate; Victor, the reputed son of the lord, but the real son of the chaplain, for a physician; and the story opens when they have all returned to Germany and are just entering upon their respective employments, Flamin as a counsellor, Victor as court physician. Clotilde, a daughter of Lord Horion's niece, born while she was the wife of Le Baut, has also returned to her father, who has been disgraced at the court of the prince, and withdrawn to his country seat, St. Lune, where Eyman is also pastor, after having been court chaplain. Lord Horion is himself absent, for the purpose of seeking the fifth son of the prince, and thinks to hold in his hand the wires that shall direct all their motions in his absence.

The scene opens under the following circumstances: Flamin and Victor, intimate friends, and brothers in affection, come to St. Lune to pass the holidays, previous to entering upon their duties at court; Lord Horion having become blind through grief for the loss of his wife, Victor operates upon his eyes and gives him back the light. Flamin, think-

ing himself the son of Eyman, had become passionately attached to his half sister, Clotilde. She had herself become acquainted with their consanguinity, by having been the reader to Lord Horion during his blindness, but she was bound by him to keep the secret. Victor, at the first sight of Clotilde, falls passionately in love with her, but stifles his passion from principles of honor, and from affection to his friend Flamin, whose relationship to Clotilde he does not yet know. Through the eccentricities and improbabilities of this plan, Jean contrives to involve the fate of his lovers, and to excite the deepest interest for their destiny.

There is another character, the evil spirit of the history, Matthew, the son of the minister Schleunes, an eccentric and wicked youth, whose rich powers of intellect are impaired through his bad heart. He possesses the art of the ventriloquist, and the power of imitating all voices and sounds. Assuming the voice of Clotilde, he is permitted, by the blind Lord Horion, to read his letters, and thus discovering the secret relationship of Flamin to Clotilde, and his real parentage, is able to infuse suspicion and jealousy into all hearts.

The limited experience of the Poet permitted him only a limited range of characters; but he represents the moral and intellectual errors in these characters, not only in their influence upon others, but as they secretly return upon themselves. Thus, mystical enthusiasm is carried to such madness in Emanuel, that he imagines he has the power, by the force of the spiritual nature, to cease to live at a *certain* time, and to leave the body. He is cured, and punished, by the accidental discharge of a powder reservoir, that occasions his death.

Lord Horion imagined that he held in his hand the secret springs, and could direct the motions of sentient beings, as if they were puppets obedient only to mechanical impulses. He left out of his calculations the will, and the passions of each individual, and failing in his objects, the world to his cold *infidelity* seems empty of every thing worth striving for. He retires to a solitary island, and there, by his own hand, falls into the grave of his wife.

But the great idea of *Hesperus*, as it was of the *Invisible Lodge*, is to unite in a powerful character all outward and inward greatness. Victor, the hero of the novel, fails to represent this idea to the reader. He rather unites the

characteristics of Jean Paul himself; the serious poetic nature with that of the humorist. To evolve his higher nature, he is educated as the son of a nobleman; but, to make him a humorist, as according to the Poet's definition of humor, *strong contrasts* are necessary, he was therefore the son of a country pastor, and destined to be a physician, "to whom the hut and the palace are equally open." Richter himself was conscious of an irretrievable failure in the character of Victor. Although full of all lovely and engaging qualities, he fails to interest the sympathies of the reader. He is the representative of a certain *period* of life, rather than a complete human being. It is the period of preparation for action, but the action which succeeds the period of high ideal love in truly great minds, is wanting. For what does he strive? For tender and generous emotions, and for an opportunity to jest. He never acts. He waits, while all around him, impelled by different passions, involve him in the consequences. Even his virtues appear like weaknesses. He is saved from seduction by a being infinitely interesting to his fancy, merely through an accident, and the reader feels that in a life of action or of trial he must inevitably fail.

The heroine, Clotilde, is the first in the gallery of female portraits, in which Jean Paul sought to embody his ideal of female excellence and loveliness. She also disappoints the reader, as she hovers, an undefined being, half angel, half woman, over the pages of the romance, and we seem never to catch a full view of the Madonna loveliness of her features, but they are immediately shrouded in clouds. Richter had not yet seen all the elements he wished to unite in woman, in any of his female friends. His own ideal, like the rainbow in his fancy, hovered constantly before, and led him on, till it became a luminous point, the highest aim of poetic exertion.

The public, and even the friends of Richter, mistook his design in the character of Dehore, or Emanuel. As he described him with all the glow of fancy, and his death with true and deep emotion, they imagined he was intended for a *model*, rather than a *warning*. Richter was wounded by the imputation, and justly complained that his critics would not take the trouble to investigate the character of Dehore, and place the public in a right understanding of his design. Goethe painted, in poetically beautiful and seducing

colors, the weakness, and the confusion of moral good and evil in the character of Werter, and others took the trouble to vindicate the moral design of the author, or to present a sufficient antidote.

Jean Paul intended to paint, in his *Emanuel*, that enervating excess of feeling, that longing after a world of love and beauty, where the perfume of flowers and the luxury of tears unfit one for common every day duties; a malady, that is apt to infect the most elevated and spiritual natures; and, as he had healed himself, he wished to heal others of that mystical disease, carried to a luxuriant excess in *Emanuel*, but of which the seeds are in every human breast.

Hesperus, although failing, as a work of art, of the aim which the author intended, is yet a temple where humanity, love and nature are revered. It is full of passages, and whole scenes of exquisite beauty, and rich to excess in the peculiarities of our author. The pages dazzle us with wit and condensed sentences of wisdom, and the reader is fatigued by a prolonged perusal, as he is by a book of aphorisms.

The whole is enclosed in a comic or humorous frame. The author mixes his own personal history with the romance, by imagining it brought to him on a solitary island, by a dog who swims across with the chapters suspended from his neck in a basket. The chapters are therefore called *Hundpostagen* (Dog-post days). The days that the dog-post fails, the author fills with essays and satires of his own. These interlocutory days are full of wit and wisdom, although, as interrupting the narrative, the reader is inclined to skip them.

The description in *Hesperus*, of the transfer of the Princess Agnola is that of a real occurrence—the transfer of the Princess of Tuscany, as the bride of the Saxon Prince Maximilian, which took place in Hof in 1793. And the portrait of the bridegroom carried in a sedan chair, and stopping whenever the princess stopped, was an actual part of the ceremony. Richter here shows what tributes he could draw from real life, and what treasures a youth, richer in incidents and experience, would have accumulated for his after years.

CHAPTER XII.

RICHTER VISITS BAYREUTH.—THE JEW EMANUEL.—THE ORIGINAL OF CLOTILDE.—“SIEBENKAS.”—LETTER FROM SEPTIMUS FIXLIEN.

ALTHOUGH, as already mentioned, the great A. D. 1794, & aged 31. hopes that Moritz had excited, of an immediate splendid fortune for our Poet, were already disappointed, and he obtained only two hundred dollars for the four volumes of *Hesperus*, he had given up his school and returned to his mother's still humble dwelling; but he found himself obliged to resort again to teaching, and received the young sisters of his friends as daily pupils in his own house.

He says, “very little remained after dividing the two hundred dollars with my mother and brother; and I am yet compelled, like the bird, to learn to sing in a darkened cage.”

His next work seems to have grown out of the circumstances of his present life, in which he sought to solve the Xerxes riddle, not to create new joys, but from the enchantment of fancy to bring out the infinite riches of the old. *Quintus Fixlien* is only an enlarged and more elaborate *Wuz*, in which the poet represents the small and contented joys of the Schoolmaster, increased beyond measure by rising a step higher in the scale of social life, and becoming a Pastor. The poet knew no situation more depressed than that of school-teachers, in so far as a higher education made them more sensitive to the poverty and limitations of their actual life. In no situation *in Germany*, are the discouragements and deceptions of life more apparent. At the same time he could attain the other aim of all his writings, to contend for the oppressed against the original causes of oppression, *the institutions of the state and the privileges of birth*, and so, in a double sense, be the advocate of the poor.*

The *pecuniary* reward that Paul received for the *Hes-*

* As *Quintus Fixlien* is known to the American public through Carlyle's admirable translation, which has been reprinted in Boston, it is unnecessary to enter into any analysis of one of the most simple of Jean Paul's works.

perus was far the least of his compensations. After the publication of that work, letters poured in upon him from every side. Vogel, who had been estranged from him, renewed his friendship and his correspondence. Even those who had known him long, were inspired with new admiration. Otto, who had judged his former works with calm severity, which was indeed the foundation of his own character, was excited by this to the most glowing expression of deep and inward joy. The joyful sense of the approbation of his friends, and the consciousness that, in striving to embody his own high ideal, he had reached a higher point, though far below his aim, made the summer of the year 1794, the most precious he had yet enjoyed.

The happiness of Richter was increased during the summer by a visit to Bayreuth. He was drawn there by his acquaintance with *Emanuel*, a Jewish merchant, whose genial and benevolent character attracted Richter's esteem. Emanuel had been, like Wordsworth's *Matthew*, in early life a travelling merchant to the different villages in the Fichtelgebirge, until through his activity and extreme honesty, he had gained the confidence of every one, and became a wealthy banker, or what we call an estate broker. The knowledge of the world gained by such a life, the union of integrity and feeling, originality and truth, acquired for him unlimited confidence, which was increased by a singularly noble and interesting exterior. His peculiar business opened to him an extensive correspondence, especially with accomplished women, in which all the bloom of his mind and heart was expressed. A sight of this correspondence had attracted Jean Paul to the writer.

Emanuel met him with the reserve and self-respect the higher natures among that oppressed people, the Jews, assume, from the notion that benevolence alone excited his interest. This, for some time kept up a reserve between them, that ceased after the publication of *Hesperus*. Emanuel was delighted with the oriental glow and richness of illustration in that work, and Richter found in his new friend treasures of observation and experience which he seized to enrich his future works.*

* Emanuel's mind was richly furnished with the knowledge and images derived from oriental poetry and philosophy ; and to Richter, who from childhood had been fascinated with these subjects, he afforded in addition, a treasure of observation and experience.

For the first time in his life, Paul found himself in a study, furnished with articles of luxury and taste, in an elegant street in the little city of Bayreuth, where ducal residences alternated with two-story houses of red sandstone, and the ornamental fountains of princely castles were intermixed with the green blinds of village houses. What was his joyful astonishment to find, twelve whole *hours** from Hof, his own writings known and read.

The friendly reception he met among the accomplished men of this city, contrasted as it was with the small value that was expressed for his poor family in Hof, gave him no doubt a predisposition for this city, and led to the resolution he afterwards adopted, after many changes, to make this the place of his future home. In Bayeruth, he had the double joy of finding himself appreciated; and, for the first time, becoming acquainted with an accomplished woman of high rank, the original from which he drew his Clotilde in *Hesperus*. She had been described to him by the pen of a friend, that might have been "cut by the god of love himself," and she had also written to him, asking for his friendship and correspondence in return; and at the same time had warned him, that he must not rely on the description that had been given of her; for her portrait, both physical and moral, had been heightened by the coloring of love. Now, when he had seen the original, he wrote thus to Otto. "Touching the beautiful Clotilde. Saturday evening, as soon as I arrived, I seized a pen to invite myself to visit her at five o'clock. She sent a billet by the return of the servant, in which she turned the hands of my watch two hours back. 'We will both,' she said, 'go about three o'clock through the Hermitage.' (This was a princely garden in Bayreuth.) I crept then into the lower story of the Rutzensteenish house, and through beautiful rooms into a third, where she sat, half concealed by a curtained and flowery window, listening to two nightingales. Could I describe her, you would have a wholly new female character in your head, or rather in your heart. She is of a majestic height, is twenty-seven years old, and has a very slightly arched, but well-formed nose. A half shadowy reflection of rose color was drawn over her face,

* *Stunde* is used in Germany for distances: thus, "*Es ist eine Stunde bis dahin*," *It is an hour's walk*, means about two English miles. Bayreuth was twenty-four miles from Hof.

which departs a little from the female oval ; with the most beautifully ennobled Berlin expression. In the beginning merely, she made with the head eight or nine and a half (I may err in the number) motions too many, but her window conversation with me was full of benevolence, decision, and generosity. When she sings, her two nightingales strike in, and altogether is as if one's heart must escape by the enchantment from the breast."

Paul had also the satisfaction in Bayreuth of having his *Hesperus* read by the bedside of the old lady Plotho, the patroness of his father, who was now on her death-bed, and who recalled the time when he used to stand at her breakfast table, and read the newspapers to her.

After Paul's return from Bayreuth, he wrote to Emanuel.

July, 1795.

"The day that I left Bayreuth, the longest day of the year, was my shortest and happiest. Since then, I hear nothing of my friends. Are you then nightingales, that after St. John's day are silent? In Bayreuth, my moments were roses, and my hours polished brilliants ; so much the more readily do these images arise, like buried pictures, and the intoxication of memory renews my thirst for the present joy cup, and joy begets *heimweh*.

It is wonderful that men, in seasons of happiness, in youth, in beautiful places, in the fairest season of the year, incline more surely to the enthusiasm of longing ; they think oftener of a future world, and more readily form pictures of death ; while the opposite takes place in want, in age, in Greenland, and in winter. Thus the best men are humble through happiness, pious, tender, thirsting for a higher happiness: misfortune makes them proud, severe, and full of earthly plans. With bad men it is often exactly the reverse. After praise, a man is modest and humble ; when blamed, he asserts an opposing pride. Thus the tear of joy is a pearl of the first water, the mourning tear only of the second. I begin a ball with gayety, and conclude it with melancholy. Prolonged sounds of music, long-continued dancing, the midnight starry heavens, soften, as it were, the heart, as melon seeds are made to swell in sweet wine, and the first shoot from this seed is a weeping willow."*

* I am too ignorant of horticulture to know whether this is truth or poetry.—TR.

In the meantime, Richter's industry was unremitting. Before the close of this year, 1796, the *Blumen-Frucht-und-Dörnenstucke* appeared.* This is a collection of pieces, one of which is the singular dream of the *dead Christ*, translated by Madame de Staël, that made Richter first known out of Germany. The longest of the fruit pieces is the history of the *poor's advocate*, *Siebenkas*, one of the most remarkable, and, at this time, the most personal of all Jean Paul's works. Under the veil of fictitious characters, he describes his own transition from the every day life of reality, to the higher ideal life of poetry and imagination. This romance is remarkable also for a description of a *Poppenshaw*, or bird-shooting, so like that of Scott's, in *Old Mortality*, that if the German novel had been known at that time, we might almost imagine Scott had taken a hint from it. The actors in Richter's are a poor's advocate, a shoemaker, and a hairdresser; with these he has contrived to keep up an unflagging interest through more than a hundred pages.

The character of *Lenette* in this work is said to have been drawn from Paul's mother. It represents a noble, but limited and uninstructed nature, in contention with all the little down-pressing circumstances of real life, and menaced with the grim spectre of actual want. Nothing can be more true, and of more universal application, than Paul's view in this novel of the sufferings of an ill-assorted union, when there is neither vice nor crime, only an unequal standard of mind, and a deficiency of culture in one of the parties. The unhappy *Lenette* is incapable of understanding her gifted husband. *Siebenkas*, full of tenderness and all noble qualities, who has married her for her innocence and simplicity, is at length worn out by her narrowness, obtuseness, and want of sympathy, and their mutual sufferings are rich in instruction for all married persons.

It is impossible to present an analysis, or even an abstract of this remarkable work. The Germans give it a philosophical and poetical interpretation. They say that Jean Paul intended to represent *Siebenkas* as dying to the actual, to the every day life of man; and in the reluctant and bleeding heart with which he tears himself from *Lenette*, is meant to be represented the great struggle of the soul to rise to a higher, an ideal life.

* Flower, Fruit and Thorn pieces.

As the *half* visible author of *Hesperus*,* Paul had drawn upon himself the attention of all Germany; but now, in Siebenkas, he represents his own and his mother's struggles with poverty in the poor apartment in Hof, and first appears with his whole and real name. The truth of his representations having their foundation in the actual experience of the writer, led irresistibly, in a new and surprising manner, to faith in himself; *only* he who had felt the want of outward blessings could describe them so faithfully, and *only* one who was possessed of the temperament of joy could rise so easily above the pressure of calamity. The breathing form of love that he gave to every thing that came from his hands, was felt in every heart, and gratitude as well as admiration induced many readers to crave a personal acquaintance with him. From every side he received expressions of gratitude, which were as touching from their simplicity in some instances, as they were flattering from the distinction they conferred, in others.

He received letters from poor country schoolmasters and pastors, the class of persons that he had described with such simplicity and naïvete, begging him to lend or give a copy of some one of his works; and perhaps more welcome yet, one morning in May of this year, the post-boy brought him a packet, containing fifty Prussian dollars and the following letter:

"You should be *poor*, Herr Richter, you! the millionaire in understanding, as such are usually poor; and this is right, for the others write no books; and as your books give me satisfaction, very great satisfaction, and nothing but satisfaction, I hold myself indebted to Herr Richter, and would give him a little proof that his readers are grateful. Many readers cannot show their gratitude, and that also is well, or Herr Richter would become rich, and write no more books.

"Your grateful and devoted,

"SEPTIMUS FIXLIEN."

The writer remained unknown until many years after, when a happy accident revealed him to Richter.*

The next is a letter from Sophia La Roche, the grandmother, that Bettine has so beautifully made known to us in her correspondence with Gunderode.

* In *Hesperus* he first signed his literary name, *Jean Paul*, without the Richter.

"It is impossible that the man whose susceptible soul and richly thoughtful mind hovers over all the leaves of *Hesperus*, can take it ill if a good *Frau* thanks him for the agreeable hours she has enjoyed through that wonderful book; if she bless him, that with so wonderful a genius he is so good a son, so good a brother. Let a mother, who has educated three sons, and has lost, in his three-and-twentieth year, the noblest, the most beautifully blooming, congratulate his mother, that Jean Paul is her son—and lives!

"He will not take it ill, and my heart would yet say something more that *Hesperus*, and the little that I have heard of its author, makes me think. I tell you frankly that I wish to know more of you, for to me your appearance is full of truth and reverence. Heaven make you as happy as it has made you precious to others, and when you read or hear my name, remember to say, 'That lady is my friend.'

"SOPHIA LA ROCHE."

CHAPTER XIII.

LETTERS FROM WEIMAR.—LETTER FROM MADAM VON KALB.
—RICHTER PREPARES TO GO TO WEIMAR.

WE come now to that period in the life of Richter A. D. 1796,
aged 33. when the silk and golden threads of love began to be woven thickly in his web of life; when, borne in triumph by eccentric and distinguished women, although with chains of flowers, he often felt the concealed thorns pierce his heart. The publication of his last works, *Hesperus*, *Quintus Fixliën*, and the *Flower, Fruit and Thorn pieces*, drew upon him the attention of women in the higher ranks of life, who were not only penetrated with his peculiarities as a writer, but began to manifest for him a deep personal, and more than friendly interest. The reader must recollect Paul's easily kindled imagination, the sentiment amounting almost to reverence, with which he regarded women, his separation from the more elevated circles of social life, and the disappointment of his former hopes, to understand the excitement,

* It was the venerable Gleim, of whom see Appendix No. II.

the fulness of joy with which he met this new manifestation of the interest his writings had produced.

Upon the first of March of this year, he received from Weimar the following letter, which bore the signature of a noble lady.

"During the last months your works have been made known to us in Weimar. They excited attention, and to many have they been most welcome. To me they gave the most agreeable entertainment, and I have to thank you for some of the sweetest hours of the past, which I willingly wooed to linger, while the images of your fancy, like lovely phantoms from the realms of spirits, wandered before my mind. Often was I so deeply moved by the charm and riches of your thoughts, that overpowered by gratitude, I would seize the pen to express it to you. But how insignificant would be such a token from one unknown to you! In a happy hour I heard your praises from men that you have long known and revere, and the wish to write was again excited. Now, it is not the solitary flower of my own admiration that I send you, but an unfading wreath, which the applause of Wieland and Herder have woven for you. Wieland has extracted much from *Hesperus* and *Fixlien* for his *Museum*. He calls you 'our Yorick, our Rabelais—the purest spirit.' He discovers in you the highest flights of fancy, the richest humor, that often displays itself in the most surprising, the most agreeable turns.

"All this he recognizes with joy in your writings. . . . You will find here yet many more friends, whose names I must mention to you, Herr von Knebel, the translator of Propertius, Herr von Einsiedel, Herr von Kalb; your writings belong to their most agreeable reading, and long have ornamented their desks. Yes, we hope, through your susceptibility for knowledge of the world and of men, and this rare talent for delicate individuality, to receive many works from your pen. Farewell! Be happy through the enjoyment of nature, and inspired through the creations of art, and continue to make us acquainted with ideals, that honor the poet and *elevate* the reader."

Richter is represented like one struck with an electrical shock upon the reception of this letter. To be known and read where Goethe, Schiller, Wieland—where Herder's elevated spirit shed an immediate influence upon all surround-

ing minds! This spot, that had lain in distant shadow, like an enchanted world before his longing fancy!

He immediately hastened to Bayreuth, where a sister of the noble letter-writer, a young, amiable and spiritual woman, lived with her husband.

I have hesitated whether to give to the English reader the correspondence of Jean Paul with this lady, Charlotte von Kalb, who entered so deeply and powerfully into his life and poetry, and is said to be the original from which he drew his Linda, in the *Titan*.

Sentiment, either in love or friendship, is like those delicate perfumes, so delicious when breathed from the plant as it grows in the sun and air of its native home; translated, it resembles the same perfume distilled and mixed with foreign substances, which, transported from its native sun and air, becomes faint or nauseous.

We must remember also, that the German language is full of expressions of tenderness that are wholly untranslatable; their domestic terms of endearment are like caresses, and their *du* and their *Ja-wort*, to use an expression of Paul's, "are as if they laid a rose in your hand."

Although much relating to this lady is, to us, involved in mystery, no one among his correspondents excites a deeper interest. She appears to have belonged to the court of the Duchess Amelia, as she went with the court to the country. She says in one of her letters, that she is older than Richter, and that she had wept the loss of two children. Her letters disclose the most zealous and disinterested friendship, and their beauty and tenderness must have kindled the warmest attachment in a heart like Richter's, had there not been to him a fatal objection—she was married, and unhappily married.

Otto looked from the first upon this correspondence with coldness and alarm, and would have prevented his friend from going to Weimar. But at the same time Paul received other flattering letters; one from Frederick von Oerthel,* expressing a glowing reverence for him, which his youth and inexperience would not allow him to conceal. The demand that Herder had made for a new poet, to be heard first, and before all, as a word from the heart, to the heart of man; a

* Oerthel was a literary character in Weimar, bearing the same name, but not related to the friend of his youth.

sound of the universal voice of humanity, an echo of the mighty spirit of the age, seemed to be answered in Richter. Still he was held back by his own timidity, or by Otto's anxiety, and answered the letter of his noble correspondent: of which I give an extract.

. . . "Now that I know woman so well, and that their masks are only veils that heighten their intellectual beauty as much as they guard it—now that I see better than a hundred others, that the female heart is as poetic and ideal as the head, and that it has little more to give to the earth than sighs and wishes; that their May of life, instead of being like ours, as beautiful as that of France, is like a German May, cold and frosty; that, like the nightingale, they must collect the wool from thorns, from which, in a thorny hedge they must prepare their nest,—what should a poet do more with the pen, than offer them, not pitiful German flattery, but morning dreams and gentler sighs than they can extract from life. If I spread, for *one* only, a rainbow over the cloudy morning of life—if for *one* heart only I have drawn the angel of love from his cloudy Parnassus to bear away the angel of death! I have lived and written enough."

Another pressing letter came from his correspondent. "Two thirds of the spring is gone, as I see by the almanac. The trees are yet unleaved in the beautiful park, the nightingales have not yet sung—you are not yet here! All signs of spring are absent—which waits for the other? *They* may come, with all their charms; the beautiful foliage, the perfume of the flowers, the love songs of the birds, the gentle fanning of the spring breezes, but for your friends they will be nothing, if you do not appear also. You are the soul and spirit of our union; we are rich only in the esteem, admiration, and hope that your writings excite; we know who are our friends by their admiration of you, and it is the first word of our greeting when we meet, Has not Richter yet come?"

He hesitated no longer. Like a travelling apprentice, he took his pack and staff, and turned his face towards the Mecca of his hopes, not as a merely modest, but as a humble pilgrim. For twelve years he had looked, longingly, from his solitary Fichtelgebirge, to this Paradise of exalted men, tender and accomplished women, love and glory, and all that in a poet's golden dream awaited him.

CHAPTER XIV.

FIRST VISIT IN WEIMAR.—LETTERS FROM WEIMAR.—GOETHE.—
HERDER.—SCHILLER.—WIELAND.

IT is well known, that at the time Jean Paul <sup>A. D. 1796,
aged 33.</sup> entered the literary circles of Weimar and its filial dependent Jena, the utmost harmony did not prevail among the great spirits of the age. Goethe and Schiller were at the head of what might be called the Conservative party in literature, at least, until after the publication of *William Tell*. Herder, although he was fettered by holding an office at court,* was opposed to them, both as a patriot and a philosopher. When Richter and his works appeared, he was received with joy and outstretched arms, both by Herder and Wieland; but from different points of view. By Wieland as a poet, by Herder as a man. The first was charmed by his glowing descriptions of nature, and his Sterne-like humor; the last by his purity of heart, and the deep religious feelings of the Poet's soul; and *both*, through the manly independence and love of freedom that breathed through every line from his pen. The absence in his works of all established rules of art, which had so offended Goethe, was forgiven by men, one of whom had read *Tristram Shandy* eighty times, and the other carried his indifference to forms of art so far as to condemn all rhyme.

In relation to Jean Paul, Goethe and Schiller stood opposed to both Herder and Wieland. Goethe, who was present in Weimar, could not be ignorant of the influence which both these authors exerted upon the cultivated men and accomplished women there. He knew, also, for he had experienced it in his own case, how important a help the enthusiasm of women is in reaching the higher and more dazzling elevations of fame, but his whole correspondence with Schiller, who was at this time living at Jena, betrays his contempt for Richter and his writings.

But with what feelings of reverence was Richter now approaching these men, who, from his earliest age, he had looked to as shining worlds in the heaven of literature. He would see Herder face to face, perhaps receive from him a

* Herder was court chaplain to the Duchess Amelia.

word of sympathy ! He would approach still nearer to the unknown writer of those flattering letters, to whom his imagination had lent every enchantment ; but his unaffected and genuine humility prevented him from forming even a faint idea of the enthusiasm with which he was received in Weimar.

Immediately upon his arrival, he visited his unknown correspondent, Madam von Kalb, and through her was his presence made known to the distinguished literary characters of the day. All wanted to see the wonderful man. The men received him with outstretched hands, the women with beating hearts. They vied with each other in attentions to him ; even the Duchess Amelia, who had given orders that they should immediately inform her of his arrival, flattered him by many expressions of sympathy and admiration. Herr von Oerthel, brother of his friend and correspondent in Leipzig, took him as a guest to his house, and supplied all those little domestic attentions so grateful to a stranger. Whoever had read his books wished to be introduced to him, and whoever saw and heard him, was compelled to love him. Contrary to the fashion of the time, he had persevered in the custom of wearing his throat open ; and his hair preserved its natural curl around his head, and fell in thin locks upon his neck ; in short, he dressed, when powder and periwigs were worn, as gentlemen dress at the present day. Although strongly and well built, he was thin, and his pale complexion had a tinge of yellow ; his eye only revealed all the enchantment of a higher world, and kindled at every thought. His conversation, like his writings, was fresh and original, his voice musical and well toned, but tender, and its Boightlandish accent had peculiar charms for the cultivated inhabitants of Weimar. Added to this, the simplicity of his nature, the truth and warmth of his emotions, his deep-grounded faith in humanity, which was to him a sacred religious belief, in a place where so many complaints were uttered over a concealed egotism, and an unconcealed infidelity, and his appearance must have been like a day of sunshine in a dark and rainy season.

Madam von Kalb did not disappoint the expectations of Richter. Her imposing exterior, the glance from her large dark eyes, the strength and elegance of her language, the exalted sentiments by which she made herself known as the pupil of Herder, the fire of her emotions, that might consume as well as

warm, marked the first impression as very powerful, and gave her the name by which he was accustomed afterwards to distinguish her, the *Titanade*, as the original of his Linda, in the Titan.

To her, Richter was more even, than with all her enthusiasm she had dared to imagine him; and from her previously kindled mind resulted the purest warmth of friendship and good will. He was furnished with every gift that the most excited imagination could desire, and filled the ideal that had hovered before her enchanted fancy. Generally, fancy is employed to heighten the real impression on the heart; but in this case, on the contrary, the heart followed the fancy, and loved where that had idolized. She was daily with him, lent him books and newspapers, and procured for him the smallest conveniences with the same solicitude that she provided the highest enjoyments of life. The day of his arrival she introduced him to Knebel. On their way, they met Einsiedel, and they were no sooner seated in Knebel's apartment, than Herder, his wife, and their two boys entered. The reader will recollect the correspondence Jean Paul had already had with Caroline Herder; as her husband and Richter met, they could neither of them speak for joy, and Knebel's eyes were also moist. They passed the evening together, and were quickly the most confidential friends. Herder soon after, in writing to Jacobi, said, "Heaven has sent me a treasure in Richter, that I neither deserved nor expected. Every time that we are together, he opens anew the treasures that the three wise men brought, and the star goes always before him. I can only say, that he is all heart, all soul; an harmonious tone in the great golden harp of humanity, in which there are so many cracked, so many discordant strings."

This little circle passed every evening together, and the confidential supper-table, at which Caroline Herder, rich in heart and intellect, presided, was the central point of their union. To Jean Paul every intellectual and accomplished woman was the sun that ripened the fruit of his intellect, and imparted the beautiful colors to the flowers of his fancy; and the presence of Madam von Kalb, who had completely captivated him by the powerful enchantment of her character, heightened the charms of these reunions.

Wieland was not in Weimar at this first visit; but from his distant Alp home, where he now was, he sent him the

most cordial greeting. Jean Paul looked forward with much delight to his introduction to Goethe and Schiller. Goethe now dwelt in his own house in Weimar, and Schiller in Jena. They had expressed different, but depreciating opinions, about Richter's works.* Richter's unbounded reverence for Goethe had already been expressed by sending him his *Quintus Fixlein* and *Hesperus*, and there was not a single work of Goethe's that he had not read and copied with infinite zeal. With this disposition he came to Weimar. The peculiar reserve of Goethe, which perhaps arose from his disposition to hold all subjects at an impartial distance, and to observe them from an artistical point of view, drew upon him among his acquaintance the reproach of coldness, and this judgment had some influence upon the disposition with which Richter approached him. Illness and domestic trouble prevented Schiller from welcoming Jean Paul with much cordiality, when he visited him at Jena. Far different was it with Herder. Striving in different paths for the highest point to which humanity can reach, there, in minds like his and Richter's, a predestined friendship, a clasping of souls before the hand is reached or met, and endures from the first moment to the last."

The reception that the Duchess Amelia gave to Richter was of peculiar value to him. When she withdrew to the country retirement of Tieffurth, where she collected around her a circle of distinguished men and accomplished women among whom was his friend Madam von Kalb and the Herders, Richter was invited in the most cordial manner to join them; and here they formed a mutual high esteem for each other, to which the Princess herself gave the name of friendship. This sentiment she extended afterwards to his family when she became godmother to his first child.†

* I cannot pretend to understand the literary or political dissensions of the time. But no one can read the correspondence of Goethe and Schiller without observing the disparaging remarks of Goethe upon Jean Paul and his works.

† This was the Dowager Duchess Amelia, daughter and sister of the Dukes of Brunswick. This remarkable woman was the presiding spirit of the court of Weimar for half a century. Married in her seventeenth year, she was left a widow in her nineteenth. She appointed Wieland governor to her son, and drew around her a circle of learned and accomplished men. Her palace at Weimar, her country-houses at Tieffurth and Ettersburg never ceased to be the rendezvous of literary men and travelers of merit. A tour in Italy, which she made in company with Goethe,

It has been said, that Jean Paul had no knowledge of courts, and that his Princesses were drawn from imagination; but here, and afterwards, he was collecting materials for his great work, the *Titan*, and the court of the Duchess Amelia imparted a deeper and richer coloring to the beings of his imagination.

But Richter must speak for himself; the reader must not be deprived of that mixture of gratified self-complacency, childlike simplicity, and warm-hearted confidence, with which he pours into the ear and heart of Otto, the delightful incidents of his three happy weeks in Weimar.

“ Weimar, June 12, 1796.

“ God saw yesterday upon his earth a happy mortal, and that was I. Ah, I was so happy, that I thought of Nemesis, and Herder consoled me with the *Deus averruncus*. I cannot put off writing till I can send a letter. I must say something. Yesterday I went at about eleven o'clock, as I had missed two of her billets, to Caroline (she is sister to the Bayreuther, and, I believe also, mine). I had in my note asked for a solitary minute a *tête-à-tête*. She has two great things, great eyes, such as I never saw before, and a great soul. She speaks exactly as Herder writes, in his letters upon humanity. She is strong, full, and her face—I would I could describe it. Three quarters of the time she smiles, but half only from nervous irritability, and one quarter she is serious, when she raises her heavenly eyelids, as clouds when they alternately conceal and reveal the moon (I do not trouble myself about the accuracy of my expressions). ‘You are a wonderful man,’ she said to me thirty times. Ah, here are women! and I have them all for my friends; the whole court, even to the duke, reads me! I dine, *for reasons*, not with Madam von Kalb. She informed Knebel of my arrival (he is chamberlain to the duchess); at three o'clock I went again, and Knebel was there.* He is a cour-

heightened her taste for the arts. From her glowing descriptions of Italy, Jean Paul derived the knowledge of that country, so exquisitely employed in *Titan*. The invasion of her country by Bonaparte broke her heart. She died in 1806, a few months after.

* Knebel was tutor to the second prince, Constantine. After the early death of his pupil, he received a pension for life. He remained in Weimar, an ornament of the circle which made that little court the resort of the intellect and genius of Europe; a friend of Wieland, and Herder, and Jean Paul; living in philosophical serenity in his little garden, a

tier as to the exterior, but so much warmth and knowledge, and so simple! All my *male* acquaintance here (I would it were not these alone) meet with a cordial embrace. There is none of the pitiful affectation of Hof; none of the fear of being out of fashion. I wish I had brought my green gown, or even the blue short coat would be allowed. Towards five o'clock, we all three went to Knebel's garden; on the way Einsiedel* met us, who took me immediately by the hand but he could only say three words, as he must follow the duchess to the comedy. After some moments, Knebel said 'How gloriously it all happens; here comes Herder, his wife and the two children.' We went to meet him, and under the free heaven I threw myself into his arms. I could scarcely speak for joy, and he could not embrace me enough. As I looked around, Knebel's eyes were almost moist. With Herder I am now as familiar as with you. He will write to me when I return, and when he journeys through Hof with his wife, who loves me heartily, (she is a modification of von Kalb,) they will visit me. I wish it were possible to tell you all without blushing. He praises *all* my works, even the *Greenland Lawsuits*. He looks as noble, but yet not exactly as I thought, but speaks as he writes. He says, 'whenever he reads the *Hesperus*, he is for two days unfit for business

"As we all sat together, I said, 'If only my Otto were here, and heard us!' Herder loves satire infinitely, and has twice as much irony as seriousness in his conversation. He asked me the occasion of many places in my books, and gave me oppressive praise. Your Paul ventured sometimes to speak, although at intervals, in the five hours the evening lasted.

"They all said that I received scandalous payment; that for the *Meister* and *Horen* the booksellers gave five louis d'ors a sheet; that I was read every where in Germany, and that in Leipzig all the booksellers received commissions for me. Wieland had read me three times, and Herder said Gleim continued to read all day and all night. He spoke

stranger to artificial wants, a contented sage of the school of Aristippus. He died in 1834, at the age of 90.—MRS. AUSTEN.

* Herr von Einsiedel united the most amiable and agreeable character with engaging exterior and manners; qualities that were surpassed by the integrity and kindness of his heart. He was chamberlain to the Duchess Dowager Amelia. He wrote several pretty tales.—MRS. AUSTEN

Kant's system with the highest degree of displeasure. Of his own works Herder spoke so slightly, that it cut me to the heart to hear him, so that I had scarcely the courage to praise him. 'What I erase,' said he, 'is the best, as I dare not write with freedom.'

"In the evening we supped with the Kalb. They have the most liberal manner of thinking. I made as many satires as at Hof, in short, I was as unrestrained and as lively as I am with you. By Heaven! I have become courageous, and could trust myself to talk with twenty gentlemen, and yet more, with the Burgomaster and all his kindred. I have not told you one third part, but the bitterest drop, Otto, swims in my Heidelberg cup of joy. What Jean Paul wins, humanity loses in his eyes. Ah! my ideal of great men! All my acquaintance with them only increases the value of my beloved brother Otto.

" June 17.

"The late date will inform you of my joy-intoxicated life. I have lived twenty years in Weimar in a few days. I have wholly incomprehensible, unheard of, but not disagreeable things to tell you,—*but to you alone*. I see no possibility of sending you more than a duodecimo of my universal history. I shall need as many days as I now should employ pages, to tell you only this division of my life. I am happy, Otto, wholly happy! not merely beyond all expectation, but beyond all description, and I want nothing in the whole world but you! only you!

"I went yesterday with Caroline to visit the Duchess mother at Tieffurth, and I shall dine with her next time. The Duchess is worthy of her Wieland and her beautiful Tieffurth. Of our conversation I will tell you verbally. Madam von Kalb is in correspondence with all the magnates in Germany, and in connection with all in Weimar, and I could see every body that I wished at her house, but we both remain every evening alone together. She is a woman like none; with an all powerful heart, incomparable firmness, in short, a Waldemarin.*

"On the second day I threw away my foolish prejudices in favor of great authors. They are like other people. Here, every one knows that they are like the earth that looks from a distance, from heaven, like a shining moon, but when the

* See the novel of Waldemar, by Jacobi.

foot is upon it, it is found to be made of *boue de Paris* (Paris mud). An opinion concerning Herder, Wieland, or Goethe, is as much contested as any other. Who would believe that the three watchtowers of our literature avoid and dislike each other? I will never again bend myself anxiously before any *great* man, only before the *virtuous*. Under this impression, I went timidly to meet Goethe. Every one had described him as cold to every thing upon the earth. Madam von Kalb said, he no longer admires any thing, not even himself. Every word is ice! Curiosities merely, warm the fibres of his heart. Therefore I asked Knebel to petrify or incrust me by some mineral spring, that I might present myself to him like a statue or a fossil. Madam von Kalb advised me above all things to be cold and self-possessed, and I went without warmth, merely from curiosity. His house, palace rather, pleased me; it is the only one in Weimar in the Italian style—with such steps! A Pantheon full of pictures and statues. Fresh anxiety oppressed my breast! At last the god entered, cold, one-syllabled, without accent. ‘The French are drawing towards Paris,’ said Knebel. ‘Hem!’ said the god. His face is massive and animated, his eye a ball of light. But, at last, the conversation led from the campaign to art, publications, etc., and Goethe was himself. His conversation is not so rich and flowing as Herder’s, but sharp-toned, penetrating, and calm. At last he read, that is, played for us, an unpublished poem, in which his heart impelled the flame through the outer crust of ice, so that he pressed the hand of the enthusiastic Jean Paul. (It was my face, not my voice, for I said not a word.) He did it again when we took leave, and pressed me to call again. By Heaven! we will love each other! He considers his poetic course as closed. His reading is like deep-toned thunder, blended with soft whispering rain-drops. There is nothing like it.

“They contend here, whether *Flachsenfingen*,* on account of its location, is a sketch of Vienna or Mannheim. Wieland, who takes it all for sport, said, ‘*Flachsenfingen* lies very much scattered about Germany.’ I send you, without shame, these signs of canonization that they draw around my bald pate, that you may relate what you please to our friends in Hof. I tell *you* all, for you have esteemed

* The location of *Hesperus*.

ne too much, but do not disgust with the long story in Hof, where they have so often done me injustice, that if you were not there, brother, I would remain here.

"My good Caroline has taken care for all my needs. Ah, you do not yet know that I lodge with Oerthel in a more elegant apartment than I ever had in my life. On Wednesday I came to his house, near the trees of the heavenly park. I have two chambers, better furnished than any in the fashionable journal; ready prepared letter covers; the newspaper, of which I inclose one as a proof: lights in both chambers. In short, every, even the smallest thing is cared for, and I and he live like brothers. We laugh ourselves dead, at each other's peculiarities. I sat yesterday with his mother and sister, who created two heavens for my two ears, with their singing and playing; in the afternoon I was introduced for the first time to a circle of beautiful girls. There is not in Paris so much freedom from *gènè* as here. You introduce no one; there is no kissing of hands; you merely make a silent bow; you say nothing before or after dinner. This is the fashion of the world, that country people think as stiff and starched as their neckbands. What one might complain of here, is painted egotism, and unpainted skepticism; for this reason a soul that has neither, is like a summer's day.

"Unite the *Fantasie* and *Hermitage** in one park, and it will give you no idea of the simple majesty of *this*. It is a *Handel's Alexander's Feast*, and Tieffurth is an *adagio*. The devil is in me, but I cannot get away. I count the days no longer. Ah, I am so happy, so happy! as you alone deserve to be! . . .

"I went yesterday to see the stony Schiller, from whom, as from a precipice, all strangers spring back. His form is worn, severely powerful, but angular. He is full of sharp cutting power, but without love. His conversation is nearly as excellent as his writings. As I brought a letter from Goethe, he was unusually pleasant; he would make me a fellow-contributor to the *Horen*, (a periodical,) and would give me a naturalization act in Jena."

Notwithstanding this courtesy, Richter did not repeat his visit to Schiller, and his intimate union with Herder excluded all hope of his being drawn to the party of Goethe.

* The *Fantasie* and *Hermitage* were public walks and gardens in Hof.

The latter wrote to Schiller, "I am glad you have seen Richter. His love of truth and his wish for self-improvement, have prepossessed me in his favor; but the social man is a sort of theoretical man, and I doubt if Richter will ever approach us in a practical way, although in theory he seems to have some pretensions to belong to us." They were never friends. Richter could not conceal his disappointment at the character of Goethe's latter poetical works, and soon after his return to Hof he wrote to Knebel in relation to one of them, "that in such stormy times we needed a Tyrtæus rather than a Propertius." The remark reached Goethe's ears; and Goethe, usually so indifferent to censure or criticism, showed himself deeply susceptible and offended at this so-called "manifestation of arrogance in Herr Richter."

CHAPTER XV.

MADAM VON KALB.—LETTERS.—CLOSE OF RICHTER'S INTIMACY
WITH MADAM VON KALB.

It would perhaps have been excusable, if the humble author, who left his house with his pack, on foot, and found himself in less than a week a courted guest at the table of princes, invited and caressed by the most accomplished men and the most beautiful women, had been seized with a little giddiness. But his principal danger arose from his intimacy with Madam von Kalb. She was somewhat older than himself, and at that age when an accomplished woman can exercise the utmost power over the mind of an imaginative man. She was living in an unhappy union,—or rather disunion for they were rarely together,—with a husband much her inferior, and at a time when revolutionary ideas in domestic manners had infected Germany, almost as much as Paris itself.

A daily exchange of notes took place between Madam von Kalb and Richter. The morning after his arrival in Weimar, she wrote, "Have you slept well? Friendship has prepared a home for you, and I am indeed glad that you are no longer in a *gasthof* (inn). Ah! are we not always

in inns and pay-houses, where every thing is done for us from interested motives, that kills all heart? You have told me that you could not live where they did not sympathize with you as a human being. I understand you, among the good we are good, among the loving—happy. Write me the very moment that you will come to me, that I may not wait. All waiting destroys me; I would rather suffer pain of body than of soul—that of waiting. I have much to tell you of the Duchess; 2d, that I must read your last letter to Otto; 3d, that I am jealous, &c.; 4th, that Herr von Oerthel shall be my guest to-day if it is agreeable to him; and pray him to say to my sister that she must come in the afternoon. I believe they will not allow you to leave them to-day; but I will let you, and all is with me like the laws of nature—life and death. Life, and your

“CHARLOTTE.”

Paul answered, with his longing desire to meet again. The next morning Madam von Kalb sent the following note:

“I awoke this morning; I awoke about dawn; as soon as I could distinguish the colors around, I longed for your answer. But I could write before it came—Ah! my God, there was your billet! But for God’s sake do not show yourself to others as you do to me, or all who understand you, will die for you. . . . You are as if in an apartment of glass, from which you can overlook all with the power of your intellect; but we—we are no glass, so smooth and cold. None! none! The soul loves an ideal representation, the heart an ideal man, and would appropriate him. . . .

“To-morrow you will go with Bottiger to the theatre, to Herder, to Einsiedel. All the world will have him—all the world? No! all shall not have him—or I shall die! I shall be destroyed. Then can they have him! How often I have been wounded! how often! Ah, only the most refined refreshment for the soul, the purest, the warmest enjoyment, can again renew and freshen my existence!”*

Richter and his devoted friend continued to write to each other every day during the three weeks he remained in Weimar. The notes that are preserved, are upon the pass-

* I give only extracts from these billets.

ing events of the time, and could only be interesting to one intimately acquainted with the spirit of the age, and the eminent characters in Weimar.

The influence of Madam von Kalb upon Richter was happier for his works than for himself. He was indebted to her for that knowledge of more powerful female characters, which he has displayed in his *Titan*; and he seems to have been impatient to hasten back to his solitude, that he might treasure his impressions in his book.

The first letter, after he left Weimar, was from Madam von Kalb.

"To-day are four weeks since you came to Weimar, and what I so long expected is finished. Finished? Ah, no! If I never see you again, yet I shall know where to find the being to whom I can impart my most secret thoughts and sentiments; that which, like the ephemera, existed only with the sun, and in the evening was gone, holds now a second and longer life, and I can say to those who misunderstand and correct me, to me also the treasure of his mind is confidentially imparted.

"On Monday evening we were, as I have already written to you, at Herr von Knebel's. I spoke little, and yet too much. There are very few men, that, when I talk with them, elevate and improve my spiritual nature; and with these it is better that I should not speak; and by others I cannot make myself understood. Knebel talked much of annihilation.

"I came to Jena in the middle of the week to visit Schiller, who gave me his poem for you. I believe it has wounded him that you did not visit him again. I have yet received no letter from you, and to-day is Monday, the 11th. Say many beautiful things of me to Otto. Farewell! How often have I thought of you—how often! for to you I can say all I think, and even my anticipations will be like certainty. Farewell! how will be the first letter I shall receive from you?"

Paul had waited eight days. How *was* his answer to this letter: "Time has crept over the last eight days with cold, wet wings, without one swift feather. I cannot forget my friend, I cannot do without her; I cannot bear that a heart I would hold as my own, should be melted without individual form, into the whole transparent mass of the public heart. . . .

"Nothing makes me so indulgent and mild as a fault. I am not accustomed to have my inmost soul wounded, therefore its bleeding imparts a new and more tender life. Distance consecrates the soul and warms the heart anew. If my eye should again sink into thine, if I should again dare to shed tears in your presence, yet our hearts and souls shall remain unveiled to each other.

"Upon your birth-day I will ascend a high mountain, and looking upon the sun that sinks down in the direction of your plain, I will think of your life. Look you at the same moment upon this glowing, sinking orb, and be certain that I am thinking of you, that I count the clouds of your shadowed life, and weep anew for all your deep sorrows. I will pray, when I think of your heart so crushed as if it had been thrown from rock to rock in the past.—O, good Destiny! will I pray, give this weary soul a tender, green repose; rend not asunder again the hardly yet united parts of her wounded heart. Give her calmness of soul, and a gentle life's course, accompanied by congenial beings, and rest—rest! Oh, I shall be eloquent on your birth-day, and my tongue shall stream as my eyes, and overflow with wishes; and when I am silent, and sink down with panting heart upon your beloved hand, my heart will be fuller, not lighter.
R."

It appears from this letter, that Richter felt for this lady the most profound pity, as well as the more enthusiastic sentiment of admiration; but he had the strength of mind to leave her, and to resist what has been so often fatal to genius of the highest order,—the seducing fascinations of rank and wealth, in the midst of intellectual refinement and luxury. He returned to his poor home, and to his narrow-minded mother, but rich in new ideas and materials for his great work.

He was followed by so many letters of admiration and interest, that the wish, expressed earlier, that all the world would correspond with him, seemed almost literally fulfilling. The individuality of character is so strong in the works of Jean Paul, that every reader feels as if they were written expressly for him, and wishes to thank the author, as if for a personal favor.

Among the letters that touched him most deeply, was one from a Madam Fisher, who told him she had sent her copy of *Hesperus* to the state prisoners in the fortress of

Spandaw; and described, in lively colors, the consolation they had derived from it. The same lady, with her husband, visited his mother's house, with the hope of seeing him, while he was absent at Bayreuth; and we need no longer blush for the American habit of pilfering relics, when we learn, that this enthusiastic pair secreted, and carried away from Paul's writing-table, his worn-out pens.

Another letter is from the pastor of Anhalt-Zerbst, inclosing a letter, and a purse beautifully netted with gold thread, from a lady who wished to remain unknown. The unknown was afterwards discovered to be the Princess Anhalt-Zerbst. Paul's answer is too characteristic to be omitted.

. . . . "May some good genius open the cloud through which your *hand* only, although full of gifts, has been reached to me, and show me the concealed angel. Your sex and your worth predict to me the common fate of a tender exotic belonging to a warmer climate, whose root and stem are planted in the winter of reality, and whose beautiful flower only the forcing-house of Poetry can bring to blossom. Is it so? Then only the wish remains, that all your blossoms may find their spring, all your fruit its sun. . . . The inward nature finds all that it longs for in hope and virtue, and if it seeks more in the present, and in reality, it finds only wounds." . . .

Richter was aware that a strenuous industry was necessary to banish that longing for Weimar that was beating at the bottom of his heart, and that was kept intensely alive by his letters from Madam von Kalb. But there was a voice of warning as well as of wooing in these letters. She wrote to him in November of this year, 1796:

"It is well that you not only come in a short time, but that we should decide upon your *residence* here. The Herders' life is turned within themselves, and become altogether recluse; but with what joy will they admit you. Your residence will bring them new refreshment. Wieland will rejoice, and there are many others. I think of the spring like a bird that is then to be released from prison. Herder, Wieland, Knebel, Einsiedel, and my *Littleness* will form your society. What need you more? A dwelling? *That* your friends will furnish you; they can do it without trouble. Yes, you can have a house already furnished, either Knebel's dwelling in the market, or his garden house. For your coffee, the

waiter will furnish it; and if you will dine at home, as the food from a restorator's, if long continued, would injure your health, you will permit me the pleasure of sending you your dinner. I have thought it all out; and even if you pay for your house, I can promise you that three months will not cost you more than ten rix dollars. If at present you are without money, your friends here can lend you some hundreds of dollars. And what if it were for ever! Of what use is our trumpery, if our friends cannot enjoy it with us? I despise those that are wooed by princes and pensions, but I despise those much more, who have not the heart to take any thing from a friend.

"I pray you go to no court, or the like. Hold yourself high, and avoid all situations of the kind. Man is oppressed there, and learns that all is empty, and at last repents. Princes esteem only those who can do without them. But *I* do not, therefore, esteem those who make satires upon courts, for it is not possible that it can be otherwise. . . . What have I yet to say? Ah, not much. Be wise as Minerva and happy as Apollo! Do not smile—you smile too beautifully! The tones that your spirit yields are sweeter without words, than the sounds of the harmonica."

To this truly feminine letter, Richter answered:

. . . . "Your letter brought your sofa and our evening hours into my apartment,—May into December! It is right, perhaps, that a *poor* friend should be as rich as his richer, while both have but one heart and one purse; but the friend should divide his *bread* only, but not the ornaments of his table, with his poorer friend. I might indeed borrow money for my *fast days*, but not for my festival joys." . . .

At the conclusion of the preface to the new edition of *Quintus Fixlien*, Richter inserted a species of myth, called the *Mondsfinsterness*, which his biographer asserts had direct reference to Madam von Kalb. He expresses very fully his opinions and feelings upon female purity, and his abhorrence of all but the most legitimate unions; and considers every marriage in which the purest love fails on either side, as no better than a work of seduction.

Richter sent the preface in manuscript to Charlotte, and after waiting some weeks, she answered in a way to shock and displease him.

Madam von Kalb appears to have been deeply tinged with the modern French, and perhaps German æsthetic doc-

trine, that as all purity is *from within*, the external relations of life are of little consequence in a moral point of view. This is so much the more dangerous, as it is an effort to conceal from one's self that want of elevation in which nature conspires to deceive one. She avowed the opinion, so humiliating to a woman, that nature should suffer no restraint. She says in her answer, "that religion upon the earth is nothing but the unfolding and elevation of all our powers, and the disposition that our nature has received. That the creature should suffer no restraint, and that love needs no laws."

Richter was shocked, and henceforth an estrangement took place between him and his friend.*

At the same time with the above letter, Madam von Kalb sent Richter the first number of the *Musen Almanac*, a periodical conducted by Schiller, which had served to increase the discord between the ruling spirits of the age; Herder had wholly withdrawn into himself. This strengthened Richter's decision to remain at home with his mother, working with unexampled activity upon the new editions of his *Hesperus* and *Quintus Fixtlen*, and the days that the great wash took place visiting his old friends at Arzburg, Schwarzenbach, &c., and returning only late at night, when he always found his poor watchful mother sitting, after her hard day's work at the wheel, by the glimmering light of a poor fire.

* See Appendix, No. III.

APPENDIX.

I.

OF Richter's "Bonmot Anthology," a rich collection of the remarks of his seven pupils, only a small extract can be given. Of these Richter says he has written them down from many others, without adding to, or taking a word from them :

The ages of the children were Leo Vogel, 15 years ; George Cloter, 11 ; Carl Volkel, 11 1-2 ; Samuel Cloter, 10 1-2 ; Wilhelmine, 9 ; Fritz Cloter, 7 ; Emilie 7.

Wilhelmine. Men without color, are like diamonds without color, the most beautiful.

Fritz asks : Why God, who foresees that men will be wicked, yet gives them good things ?

Wilhelmine. The day with the sun is like the giant Polyphemus, who had only one great eye.

The same. In our school it is like a Quaker meeting, where all may speak.

Leo. Life is a clock, that is wound up and then runs down——and —

George added, and in Heaven is again wound up.

Leo. Abraham, at the sacrifice of Isaac, was like the Carthaginians, who sacrificed their children to Moloch or Saturn.

Wilhelmine. God, alone, is a soul without a body ; and we, that is, our souls, do not come into the grave but into the body : and

Carl. God is the soul of the earth and moves it, and the body is the grave of the soul.

Wilhelmine. The countenance changes color like the chameleon, from fear and anger.

Samuel. Men are like electricity, attracted by metals.

George. Men are bad in this world, and after death become better, as crabs look black in their dwelling place, the water, and become after death red and beautiful.

George. People with deep sunken eyes are considered more

capable of intellectual employments, as the mole, on account of her deep eyes, can go deeper under the ground.

The same. As an angel bore the Loretto house, so also were the sciences in the dark ages carried into Italy.

Samuel. The glass is the echo of seeing.

Carl. Man has two fathers, his own, and God.

Wilhelmine. The earth is a great clock-work. Men are the wheels, and animals are the little teeth upon them.

Leo. And the soul is the regulator.

George. The sympathetic nerve is the chain that winds around the fusee.*

George. The earth is God's Botany Bay, because we are here made better, or punished or rewarded.

George. As every person thinks the whole time, it is incorrect to say one thinks more than another.

Emilie. People who dress the most plainly are the wisest, as birds whose plumage is the least gay, sing more delightfully than others.

Carl. Europe, that is half Catholic, half Lutheran, is a religious Centaur.

Wilhelmine. We write with one end of the feather, after the goose has long before written with the other.

George said of one who had often been whipped, that he had a chemical affinity with the stick.

Leo. Some persons, through beating, are made to attract knowledge magnetically, as iron is made magnetic through blows.

Fritz. The world must be eternal, as God is eternal, and God must be in the world, as he is every where.

Fritz. God is the provider for our table.

George. The Confessional is the holy sepulchre to which we make a crusade to obtain the forgiveness of our sins.

George. The fire stolen from heaven by Prometheus, was the forbidden tree of knowledge.

Fritz. The days of our life are the week days, in which we work for the Sunday of the second life.

Fritz. In this life we are only apprentices, in the next we shall be masters.

II.

GLEIM.

JOHANN WILHELM LUDWIG GLEIM was born in 1719, in the Principality of Halberstadt. He lost his parents in infancy, and was educated at the charge of some benevolent families. After some

* The age of the speakers should be remembered.

time he was appointed Secretary to the Chapter at Halberstadt, where he lived very agreeably. He corresponded with all the literary men of Germany; and used to assemble them around him at Halberstadt, where they used to enjoy poetry and life together. He was intimate with them all, for friendship was the element of his life. He was never married. His clever niece Derothea, so often celebrated under the name of Gleminde, kept his house. The war-songs that he published during the Seven Years' War, raised his fame to the highest pitch.

He drew, and established around him, a circle of young literary friends, and his zeal for their social welfare, as well as their literary fame, knew no bounds. He had the rare talent of mixing with all classes and sorts of men, on the most kindly footing. His songs for the people show this. He was a philanthropist in the truest and noblest sense of the word. Two years before his death he became totally blind. In the eighty-fourth year of his age he took leave of his friends, and died tranquil and resigned. The Germans have given him the fairest of all titles, "*Father Gleim*." The following is extracted from Goethe's *Tag-und-Jahres Hefte*.

"The groundwork of Gleim's character was a passionate benevolence, which he endeavored to render active in word and in deed; encouraging every one by conversation and writing; laboring to diffuse a universal and pure feeling of humanity; he was a friend of all; beneficent to the wretched, but more particularly the benefactor of indigent youth. Frugal in his household, beneficence seems to have been the only taste on which he expended what was necessary to himself. Most of what he did was from his own resources; more rarely and not till the latter years of his life, he employed his name and reputation to acquire some influence with kings and ministers.

"Altogether, we must admit that he had the sense of the duties of a citizen in the highest and most singular degree; he held an important public post, and proved himself therein a patriot; and towards the German Father Land, and the world, a true, genuine Liberal.

"And further, as every religion ought to promote the pure and peaceful intercourse of man with man, and as the Christian Evangelical religion is peculiarly adapted to that end, he who constantly practises that religion of the upright, which was an integral part of his nature, might well and truly consider himself as the most orthodox of men, and might rest tranquilly in the profession of the established simple rites of the Protestant Church.

"After all these lively reminiscences, we went to see another image of the departed: we visited the sick bed of Gleim's dying niece, who, under the name of Gleminde, had been for many years the ornament of a poetic circle. Her sweet, though sickly countenance, was in delicate harmony with the exquisite neatness of all around her; and we had an interesting conversation on those delight-

ful bygone days, and on the works and ways of her excellent uncle, which were ever present with her.

“Lastly, to conclude our pilgrimage solemnly and worthily, we went into the garden, to the grave of this honest, noble old man, to whom it was granted, after so many years of sorrow and suffering, activity and patience, to rest in the spot he loved, surrounded with memorials of departed friends.”—*From Mrs. Austin’s Characteristics of Goethe.*

III.

The fear of making my book too large has prevented me from giving more of the letters of the friends of Jean Paul than would allow the reader to understand their respective characters. The little that is said in the text of Madam von Kalb, induces me to add some further extracts from her letters.

In August, 1796, she wrote to him :

“I had, perhaps, compelled myself not to write to you, if I had not something to impart that concerns you, that will make you rejoice, and will also be advantageous to you. The first is an extract from a letter of Wieland to Bottinger.

“‘Tell our friend Jean Paul that his literary visit was one of the sweetest hours of my life; that he has immediately taken his place in my heart above Jean Jacques, and that I am as yet not cool enough to express in words what I think and feel about him. I rejoice inexpressibly that we shall this winter enjoy his personal society, and I hope the demon that pledges himself to me that we shall both find good in it, is none of those lying spirits that the *Adoni Elohim* of the Jews had in his court service, who, when he would lead their kings and prophets upon the ice, made use of no deceptive thought.’ I take the most intimate part in your welfare, and therefore I have written this to you immediately, that you may make what use of it you please. I have your *air à trois notes*, but I cannot part with it, for in this another longing from the heart of Jean Paul is expressed.

“I am not yet, but I hope I shall soon, perhaps, be sufficiently resigned.* Ah, I shall at last learn to understand my destiny, for always the same wounds are repeated. Perhaps you will answer me, if it is only a few lines, to tell me that my letter is received, and what I have further to fear or to hope from Jean Paul.

“Herr Folk is here. I have not, and do not wish to see him. He has also given out a satirical almanac, with which they are here delighted; but I will have nothing to do with any strange, heterogeneous nature; any writings that degrade the mind. I do not even willingly read Wieland; he prosed always, and sometimes sleeps; and lowers the fancy always, and sometimes love. Then the words

* To his refusal to return to Weimar.

law, duty, virtue, must be defined, and the Evangel of love vanishes ; this is the reason that I cannot bear the four words. I am not willing to be reminded in the most distant manner of any but a pure existence.

“ Farewell, my young amiable philosopher, between Scylla and Charybdis ; between the graces and the sirens ; between the incense of glory and the intoxication of applause ; allured at the same time by the cadences of nightingales in concealing hedges, and the songs of the muses in princely chambers.

“ *Apropos*, Bonaparte looks like you, only *he* is very small. I am glad of this, for the monster pleases me.

“ What have I yet to say ? Ah, not much ! Be wise as Minerva, happy as Apollo ! Do not smile ! you smile too beautifully. The tones that your mind gives are sweeter without words than the sounds of the harmonica.”

In May, 1799, three years after the above, Madam von Kalb wrote, after receiving the *Conjectural Biography* :

“ I read your new book with wholly new pleasure and feeling, and as I have called to you for three years, Come to me, so I now call again, Come to me, and remain with me ! I understand all. The deep, the light, the reflecting, the imagining. I also could add a page to your life, *that might have been*, had God sustained our love !

“ Otto will come to me with his Amone, and will make me present in every one of your domestic festivals ; and if there is sorrow in the house, or a sick child, Hermine will send to me for the soothing counsel of my ever present and active love.

“ And when I am weaker, and can no longer leave my solitary chamber, one or the other will spend the evening with me, and in confidential intercourse we will exchange our thoughts, our reading and our experience. And when again, under the shadow of the linden trees, the fresh grass springs, and the children in the twilight interrupt their sports with short recollections of me, and the father asks at their return to the house, ‘ What has happened, and where have they played ? ’ it will be a saying in the village, ‘ that upon the grave of thy friend the children played most happily and most securely.’ ”

“ June 19, 1799.

“ This is the day I expected a letter from you, and received none, but I will write what has occurred to me respecting your book.*

“ The preface has beautiful thoughts. It may prepare for a better time in quiet dispositions ; but how hard it is, when men will have for themselves the Evangel of selfishness, but for woman the severity of the Law. There are also views of things that will have no effect. No caricature can improve or make moral, that is, calm, and happy men.

* The *Conjectural Biography*.

"The *Wandering Aurora* has pleased me much ; so has the *Essay upon Dreams* ; and indeed, *all* the Philosophical letters. I have written to Herder about them.

"The *Testament for Daughters* is too light a work for you. I must write a testament for daughters, if I am ever so stupid as to know my own errors. The testaments of men, for daughters, sound about thus :—'You have no rights in life. There will be no love for you ; you will be despised, or appropriated. You must love, and make *one* only happy ; but you dare neither have understanding nor will of your own. You must not manifest either wishes, joy, or sympathy ; and the desires you possess in common with us, in recollection will appear like guilt.'

"I know nothing weaker or more ridiculous in a man, than to make known such a knowledge of the female heart ; certainly not for purposes of injury, but for information.

"The satire upon the authorship of women, I find not entirely true. I may have nothing to do with either ; and even my daughter shall not trouble herself ; pride would forbid it. But what you do from self-interest, does not make you get rid of our souls. Like the devil, they will remain in eternity. The *happy, loving* woman, will be no author ; and to the unhappy, no one will have recourse. Wherefore will you not, that women sustain the same troubles, and live by the same illusions as yourselves. Ambition has never the same power over a female heart as over a man's. *She* can never forget that she has a heart, and can love ! No illusion, no enthusiasm increases this consciousness of the *highest*, and the love, of which men *sing*, is, with women, an eternal truth.

"Jean Paul must take care, that with his garden shears he does not prune the delicate plant too much. He cannot check *true* genius ; but he may increase its burthens, and accelerate many follies. Shall not women be, what they may and can be ?

"It must be, that they have children, and cook, and stitch ; but the graces may unite with the understanding for all these purposes."

Madam von Kalb, although Richter calls her a disciple of Herder, was deeply imbued with the æsthetic doctrines taught by Goethe and the Schlegel school. Æsthetics, as far as I understand it, is the pursuit and worship of the *beautiful*, as the perfection of human life. All morality takes a subordinate station ; but religion is one with the perfect, or beautiful, and by æsthetics, or the love of beauty, the mind is able to soar to religion and immortality. Thus a finely organized soul can exist only in a state of perfection or beauty. One may easily understand the practical consequences of this doctrine ; for as morals were subordinate to the love of the beautiful, and only finely constituted souls could have any affinity with each other, the relations of social life, if not happily formed, became subordinate, and were violated ; or became the occasion of profound and terrible

misery, as in Goethe's *Elective Affinities*. Few, like Ottilia, would choose the better part, and die, "because breathed on by unhallowed passion." The evil that Richter most lamented in the æsthetic philosophy was, that it conspired with passion to deceive; and men imagined that, as all purity was *within*, outward relations might be violated, without sullyng the purity of *eine schöne seele*.

We see indications of this philosophy in all Madam von Kalb's letters; and the letter that occasioned the rupture with Jean Paul avowed the æsthetic doctrine "that religion upon this earth consists in the perfection of all the powers, physical as well as spiritual, and that these powers should suffer no restraint, but the weak yield to the strong."

Jean Paul's abhorrence of these doctrines, and of the immorality and misery in domestic life, that might be ascribed to them, is expressed in every one of his works; but particularly in a little tale, "The secret lamentation of the men of our times," in which two young persons become attached to each other, with circumstances of singular interest. Their misery and shame, when they discover that they are brother and sister; the remorseful agony of the father, and the contempt that takes the place of love in the breast of the injured wife, make the interest and instruction of the story; but, like all narratives written for an express moral, it fails in that freedom and fulness of thought that distinguish his spontaneous works.

Speaking of domestic morality in Weimar, Paul says: "This is certain, a spiritual and more important revolution than the political, and far more murderous, is now beating in the heart of the world; therefore is the vocation of an author, whose heart beats with wholly different principles and aims, so necessary, and demands so much heed and circumspection."

Madam von Kalb's views of *love* were entirely of the æsthetic school; but Richter had too much delicacy in his, to wish to marry a *divorcee*, and after his *decided* opposition to the divorce, on his second residence in Weimar, there was no further question about it. Madam von Kalb extended her friendship to Paul's wife! and although she afterwards demanded the return of her letters, their friendship did not wholly cease.



Life of Jean Paul Frederic Richter.



PART THIRD.

LIFE OF JEAN PAUL.

CHAPTER I.

PRINCE HOHENLOHE.—MADAM VON KRUDENER.—LETTERS.—
“JUBELSENIOR.”—“KAMPANER THAL.”

I HAVE omitted, for the purpose of concluding the account of Richter's intimate friendship with Ma-
dam von Kalb, two events that took place in the autumn, immediately after his return from Weimar. His wide-spread reputation brought him many proposals to become the instructor of young persons; among others the Princess of *Hohenlohe* came to Hof, and entreated him to take charge of her two sons. The eldest of these princes was afterwards the celebrated *Jesuit priest and worker of miracles*. The delusion lasted a long time, but ceased before the death of the prince. His fine exterior, gentle manners, and insinuating voice, no doubt made part of the miracle. This was an alluring offer, as it promised Richter independence, and a beautiful residence on the Rhine. He answered, “that he was henceforth determined to educate no children but his own (his books), and that he had so much to say, that if death should surprise him at his writing-table, in his eightieth year, it would be yet too early.”

A. D. 1796,
aged 33.

The other event, that made a deeper impression upon the imaginative mind of Richter, was a visit from the celebrated enthusiast, *Julia von Krudener*, the wife of the Russian ambassador in Denmark. This singular woman had been to

Leipzig, to visit her son, and came in the full bloom of her remarkable beauty, to his solitary residence, as she said, to seek a comet on its path. Upon Richter, whose soul was always thirsting for the spiritual and ideal in woman, she made an indelible impression, and excited an interest that led to a correspondence of many years' duration. They were only an hour together, but the interest was mutual. There must have been something in Richter's person and manners extremely fascinating to women; for the impression his works had made on the imagination, was always deepened by an interview; and there was some reason why Madam von Kalb should tell him "*not to smile*, and that the tone that his mind gave without words was sweeter than the sounds of the harmonica."

Paul said, in a letter to Otto, "that, unlike as Madam Krudener was to all other women, so was the impression she had made upon him different from that of all other women."

He wrote to her, "The hour in which I saw you floats like the evening glow still lower beneath the horizon. Your letter must again color my atmosphere. You came like a dream, and fled like a dream, and I still live in a dream. . . .

"A legend says, that the angels had created men like gods, but that they could not stand upright until God, by a spark, gave them souls, and raised them to the upright posture. Most of us are still such prostrate men; but in your soul glows this sun-spark, and you stand among the cold reclining forms, with your glance still turned to heaven."

Madam von Krudener answered: "Ineffaceable is the hour when your eye, the sound of your voice, the indescribable whole of your emotion in expression and accent, established the sweetest harmony of knowledge and feeling. I know not whether I make myself intelligible, as you know not how imperfectly I possess your language. You will imagine what I think, for I feel with indescribable joy that you wholly understand me, and the little that you said to me was penetrating like your glance, and led directly to my inmost heart. Oh, how few men can understand me, and how sweet is the hope to see you here, and to open this heart to you, to show you, without pride and without fear, the virtues as well as the faults of my nature. This need of learning the truth, this living necessity in me to grow better, this thirst after knowledge, and this warm desire to promote the

happiness of men; this expanding love that glows in my heart and breathes in your works, are what makes them so dear to me, and convince me, that through your friendship I shall be better and happier; and that to you also, the observation of a noble soul, that would fain impart blessings to mankind, will not be indifferent.

"I say to you, that I am never deceived in men in whom I can kindle a spark of emotion; by men of low dispositions I am often offended; yet who remembers the sting when a gnat falls upon him? Such stings take away the injurious blood, that inflames so easily at the smallest wound, and from which ill-humor and misanthropy are formed. I have climbed that mountain that little minds have not the power to ascend, and the echo of their voices brings no disharmony to my ears.

"Without pride, I may say this to you. Ah! I cannot be proud—too much remains yet to be improved before I can be satisfied. Gratefully I acknowledge the happiness, that God has given me a heart, in which only the memory of the good and beautiful can live; and that has so lived in the higher regions of virtue and friendship, that the possibility of breathing in a lower world cannot exist. The hand of genius seized my thoughts even in their cradle, and thus I know you can understand me even in my imperfect language.* . . .

"I thank Providence that I have learnt to know you. He gives me, in you, a new and powerful assurance of my future happiness, and in your tears is a world for me. May you be as happy as I wish you, and may the precious emotions you have given me conduce to your own happiness. Remember, meanwhile, I can never forget you.

"JULIA VON KRUDENER,"

Richter entreated the lady to visit him again in Hof, "that the little blessed island she had thrown into the humble stream of his life might not float away;" but she did not return, and he met her not again until after his marriage, many years afterwards, in Berlin.

Madam von Krudener did not make a favorable impression upon Richter's friends. They accused her of vanity and ostentation. From the course of her life it could scarcely be otherwise; Jean Paul was not blind to the faults of any one,

* French was the native tongue of Madam von Krudener.

but his true sympathy with all the weaknesses of humanity led him always to place the good and bad qualities in opposite scales; and he said of her, what might be said of many ostentatious women, "that it was not vanity that made her an artist, but the enjoyment of the representation."

From the subsequent life of Madam von Krudener, it will appear that Richter was not so penetrating as his friends in the estimation of her character.*

Richter's spirits, after denying himself a return to the Weimer Eden, and further intimacy with Madam von Kalb, were too much depressed to allow him to proceed with his *Titan*. He occupied himself this winter with two of his minor works, *Jubelsenor* and the *Kampaner Thal*. During the progress of his great work, upon which he rested his hopes of immortality, he kept himself constantly before the public, and procured the means of subsistence, by a series of smaller works. Like a celebrated painter, he worked up the superabundance of colors upon his palette into the smaller pictures, while his immortal work was yet on the easel.

These works differ from his earlier in this, that they never contain a complete picture of character, neither is any elevated philosophical, nor poetical idea in life or character completely carried out. They are merely segments of life, and make no pretension to a full delineation of passion or event. In his earlier romances, almost all the characters had been left incomplete; the reader is therefore rejoiced to find the author taking them up again, and introducing them anew to his acquaintance in these segments. *Balzac*, who in every thing else differs more widely than the antipodes from Jean Paul, has in this respect, the same peculiarity.

The *Jubelsenor* is the beautiful and simple representation of an aged minister, and his equally aged wife, celebrating the anniversary of their marriage festival, at the same time with the consecration of the church,† and the introduction of a new young pastor, who is in love with the adopted child of the old people. "The aged pair, bowing under the gate of death that leads them to another world, will not withdraw their hands from each other, but keep them constantly clasped over the cold grave stone." They celebrate the sixtieth an

* See note at the end of the chapter.

† A church consecration is one of the principal country celebrations in Germany.

niversary of their marriage festival, with the rewarmed fragments of their own young bride-cake."

Jean Paul partook deeply of the religious nature of the Germans; he delighted in all these humble, simple religious ceremonies; and he awoke the gratitude of many an old man and many an aged matron, with his intimate sympathy with their well remembered feelings, and the high esteem he ever paid to the *silent* men, that the loud young century had forgotten. The love of the young people is also mingled in the history, and makes a low, under, but sweet tone in the piece.

The *Kampaner Thal*, or proofs of the immortality of the soul, is one of the most purely serious, and poetically beautiful of all the author's minor works. It was suggested by his friend Charlotte von Kalb's saying, that she sometimes felt doubts overshadowing her mind when she thought of annihilation; and as he had written the former letter on immortality for Helena's, he wrote this for her consolation.

In his intercourse with educated women, Richter had found that in proportion as they were refined and thoughtful, they were pained with doubt upon this great consolation of humanity—a future existence of the soul. He somewhere says, "that he never heard a cultivated woman speak of meeting again with her lost friends, without detecting at the same time an almost imperceptible sigh of doubts."*

He did not write to convert the infidel, but to establish the wavering faith of the doubtful: "As the plants that grow upon the margin of a stream are as much refreshed by a summer shower, as those whose roots are planted in the dusty highway of life."

I feel that no justice could be done to this beautiful work by such an analysis as I could give, and that even my highest praise would be inadequate to express its merits.†

This chapter cannot be more appropriately closed than with a letter from Caroline Herder, in which she has singularly anticipated the definition of the *Romantic*, which was afterwards given in the *Foreign Quarterly Review*. It is written after receiving the *Kampaner Thal* from the author.

* I quote from memory, not having the book at hand.

† See Appendix No. I.

"I require indeed the pen of an angel to relate the thousandfold obstacles that have prevented me, dear, unforgotten friend, from writing to you. I dare not give you circumstantially the Litany of my own little miseries, that united make the great cause of my silence. My eyes suffer, and since some years my health also, so that I have to prescribe for myself a severe diet in writing. I rely so securely upon our union in the world of spirits, I am so certain that you think of us, and speak to us, as we to you, without visible signs; yet visible signs of the sacrament of love are beautiful, as I felt deeply when I received your dear letter with the *Kampaner Thal*.

"Ah, we owe you thanks for *Hesperus* also. If my husband were not so slavishly chained, you had heard from him before this, upon *Hesperus*. The whole building is, as it were, filled with choice sacred pictures. and we linger to strengthen, elevate and delight the spirit. We might seize the whole at once, but we are unwilling under a thousand emotions not to dwell upon each, and the richness of ornament distracts our attention.

"If you have ever seen the *Minster* at Strasburg,* you will understand me, and not misinterpret this comparison. Perhaps the soul of that great architect has returned, with you, to earth; and, as at this time pictures in stone are not so essential to us as spiritual representations, he builds with other materials than stone and marble, but in the taste of that time.

"We look for *Titan* with the utmost impatience."

NOTE.—The Baroness Krudener was educated in Paris, where her father's house was the resort of men of talents, and her beauty and wit were much admired. In her fourteenth year she was married to Baron Krudener, who was more than double her age, and accompanied him to Russia, where he was sent as ambassador. Madam Krudener, placed in the first circles, and remarkable for wit and beauty, was surrounded by admirers; but she was not happy. Her liveliness of temperament led her into levities, which caused a divorce from her husband, and she returned to her father's house, in Riga. Riga did not satisfy her. She removed to Paris, and lived

* "He who casts one eye in thought on the *Strasburg Minster*, and another on the *Temples at Paestum*, will understand the difference between the romantic and classical."

Foreign Quarterly Review, July 1837.

alternately at Paris and Petersburg. She was afterwards attached to the court of the beautiful Queen of Prussia; and, sharing her misfortunes, her mind turned from the pleasures of the world to the subject of religion. She was now attracted by the principles of the Moravians, and again went to Paris, where she found many disciples—a fact easily explained. The higher circles in Paris contain many persons accustomed, from early youth, to live on excitement; who, when age, or any other cause, sickens them of those of fashionable life, fly to devotion, and kindle again for God the burnt-out coal of other passions. She was afterwards connected with the mystical *Jung Stilling*. In 1814, she was in Paris, much connected with the allied sovereigns, and is said to have had great influence upon the Emperor Alexander. At this time she had prayer-meetings attended by all the distinguished persons in Paris; where she was seen in the background, in the dress of a priestess, kneeling in prayer. She afterwards went to Geneva and Bâle, every where followed by women, poor people, and vagabonds; sometimes preaching in the open air to three thousand persons. She distributed liberally to the poor; but excited so much sedition, that she was placed under the *surveillance* of the police, and at length sent to Russia, with orders not to pass the frontier. She was forbidden also to go to Moscow or Petersburg. She retired to the Crimea, and died there in 1824.—*Conversations Lexicon*.

CHAPTER II.

RICHTER VISITS THE FRAUZENBATH IN EGER.—DEATH OF HIS MOTHER.—EMILIE VON BERLESPH.—REMOVAL FROM HOF TO LEIPZIG.

IN the month of June, 1797, Richter found his health, from uninterrupted labor, so much impaired, that, to avoid a fit of hypochondria, he fled to the baths of Eger, in Saxony, where were collected some of the most distinguished and brilliant persons of the country. Here he was destined to meet another of those enchantresses, who drew him more powerfully than either of the others from the quiet and regular flow of his studious hours. This was Emilie von Berlesph, a young, beautiful, and rich widow, of Switzerland. Paul's fancy was immediately kindled, and he was soon so much the more captivated, as the

A. D. 1797,
aged 34.

beautiful and spiritual woman professed to love him more with the *fancy* than the *heart*, and thus seemed to avoid the rock upon which poor Madam von Kalb had struck.

The health of Richter's mother had been gradually declining, but he felt no immediate alarm, although her blessing, when he parted, was more fervent and tender than usual; but the fascination he was under, detained him at the Baths, until he was shocked with the sudden intelligence that she was no more. With bleeding heart, in which remorse for his absence was mingled, he returned to Hof.

It was to Paul a painfully sweet recollection, that he had not gone from her without her blessing, and that when he saw her again, she was resting peacefully. The hand of Death, unlike that of Providence, had effaced from her pale countenance all the lines of sorrow and of years, and in death she looked again young, and calm, and happy. His mother had been so bowed down by her life-long sorrows, that even after Paul had become the child of fame, and she heard his praises on every side, she wrote the same subdued and humble expression, and denied herself all demonstration of joy at the success of her darling child. She fulfilled literally the injunction of the apostle, "to rejoice with trembling."^{*}

To add to his sorrow, Paul now first discovered the book, already mentioned, in which his poor mother had kept a record of her little gains in her midnight spinning. He wrote to Otto, as he placed the faded paper next his heart, "If all other manuscripts are destroyed, yet will I keep this, good mother! where the misery of thy nights is recorded, and where in weakness and pain thy thread of life is drawn out."[†]

For many weeks Paul was not able to write to his friend Otto, or to mention his loss to any one; but at length he fled back to Eger, to find in the sympathy of his new female friend, consolation for this his deepest sorrow. Notwithstanding the fascinating beauty and charming qualities of the young widow, Richter would not have been so completely

* The character of *Lenette*, in *Siebenkas*, has some of the traits of Paul's mother, and she is said to have furnished him with the original.

† In a letter from the Duke of Mecklenburg, this circumstance is mentioned as a touching feature in the character of Richter. It shows the strong affections of his heart, that he should have been so tenderly attached to a character like that of *Lenette*.

enthralled, had she not also excited his sympathy. She had lost her young husband after a very short period of happy married life, and was left childless. He wrote to Otto, "I have found the first female soul that I can completely unite with, without weariness, without contrariety; that can improve me while I improve her. She is too noble and too perfect to be eulogized with a drop of ink. She belongs to that class of women, who with firm steps go straight forward on their path, and do not turn, or observe the gazers on the right or left. She has more love in her heart than in her eyes, and therefore she is not understood, nor happy; and her clear reason and brilliant fancy surpass the glow of her imagination."

But although the lady began with the most Platonic affection for Richter, it soon appeared that she demanded a more exclusive devotion, a warmer expression than Paul, with all the claims of his *imaginary* heroines, could give to *one*, and those violent passions, and stormy scenes began, that tormented the next twelve months of his life. After Paul had left the *Frauenbath*, and returned to Hof, she wrote to him.

"Follow your heart when it speaks for me, for notwithstanding all your goodness, all your sympathy with me, there is something in me that will always doubt. Do not look upon little hindrances and outward relations. What we lose at the present no eternity can give us back. There is for me only one real, pure joy, and in no future life can there be a higher than the intimate sympathy of soul with you. Ah, we have as yet said nothing to each other.

"To-morrow I shall go to Weimar, and there I shall find a letter from you! This tells me why I have such an inexpressible longing to be there, where no joy except this and meeting with Herder, awaits me. Ah, I pray you not to love me; that were silly; but I pray you to view justly the heaven that you create in me! and if you can estimate it, then you will never destroy it. Would that I could write to you something more of thought than feeling! I know not how it happens that I, who am always nine parts understanding, and one miserable tenth part heart, forget, pen in hand with you, all logic and penetration, and like the most susceptible girl, could discourse of my feelings

through whole pages, if the thought of your severe understanding did not stand in warning opposition before me."

A week later:—"I have received your letter. The manner in which I received it is a circumstance in the history of the letter. But of that another time. Breathless with joy I seized the letter from the hand of the bearer. My nerves trembled; for some moments I could not read it. At last it was read. But now—I would I could use any other image—but now the high-swelling waves of feeling were instantly checked, as if by a sudden frost. But wherefore? *That*, never ask me! The heaven from which I wrote the first part of this letter is destroyed.

"I have been some hours with Herder. We talked of the works of art in Dresden, and of you. Herder said, with the most generous expression, that there was not in Germany, (that is in the world,) your equal in affluence of mind, and with all, so rich, so pure a heart. Could one say more? And yet, when I talked of you, they called me an enthusiast! Further, social life in Weimar is as if a wicked enchantment had dissolved every thing. Love, friendship, veneration, the enjoyment of art, even society is here only a sound, a shadow. A leaden night settles on all heads, all hearts, in apparently equal uniformity.

"Farewell! When you are a *little* good to me, if you would not make it utterly impossible for me to write to you with unreserve, write, but never again in *such* a manner to your

"EMILIE"

Richter answered: "How could I take from your view even the smallest blue spot in the cloud-heaven of life? Nothing is so painful as an epistolary misunderstanding, when it must be effaced through the slow post, rather than with a glance of the eye.

"I stand already at the door of my literary cabin, and look at the opening in the distant prospect. How few men have a life plan—although many a week, year, youth, or business plan. Men in their movements are without aim; accident, necessity, desire, press one upon them that they take for their own. Gold pieces and medals of honor draw them down in life, and the outward dies without the inward being thought of. The folly of human wishes, indifference to the integrity of the soul, the half fragmentary, half acci-

dentally formed inward, ideal man, where one half is a giant, the other a dwarf, makes one not only melancholy, but desponding. Upon the churchyard of the whole earth should this universal epitaph be placed: 'Here lie the beings who in life knew not what they would have.'

"My leave-taking with all dear associates here, gives me many wounds to take with me to Leipzig. May I there in your precious heart find none. R."

Richter had at length decided upon the removal from Hof that is indicated at the conclusion of this letter. By the death of his mother the last thread was broken, that held him there, and beside, the whole care of the education and maintenance of his youngest brother, Samuel, devolved also upon him. He was a youth full of talent; Paul resolved that he should not suffer, as he had himself, for the want of a helping hand, and this determined him to remove to Leipzig, where his brother could at the same time enjoy the advantages of the university, and of his own guardian care.

Richter's residence in Hof had never been favorable to his genius. He felt that he needed a wider and more brilliant birthplace for his *Titan*, to which, if it had not been for the demands of Emilie Berlespsh, he would now have been exclusively devoted. His wide-spread celebrity, and the homage he had received from all ranks, widened the distance between Paul and his Hofer friends, and even Otto's jealousy could not be concealed at the marks of distinction which he did not share with his friend. Only a heart like Paul's could have resisted the flattery on one side and the reproaches on the other, and nothing places him in a more amiable light than his tenderness and forbearance under Otto's jealousy. He says, in answer to a letter filled with fond reproaches: "I have within me a humility that no one has ever guessed; it is not a victory over pride, but a necessity of my nature. The judgments of others deceive me more through immoderate censure than through immoderate praise."

As soon as it was known that Richter was going to leave Hof, a voice of regret and lamentation broke out on all sides. The young women to whom he had been an instructor and friend, now almost all of them married, would fain have kept him among them, to be the monitor to their children that he had been to them. Vogel, and the Saint

Anna, Volkel, and his old instructor, Werner, now infirm and aged, all poured in their letters expressing their warm love, their reverence for his noble qualities, and their deep grief at losing one who seems to have been regarded by those who enjoyed his intimacy with sentiments bordering upon idolatry.

Richter visited all his near friends, and took leave of others by letter. To Vogel (when he returned his books) he wrote: "Dearest friend, I go as an inhabitant, my brother as a student to Leipzig, and leave for ever the place of my youth. Exactly as at the first time, when I went a student myself to Leipzig, I write to you this second time; and with the same anxiety with which we see the successive pieces of the machinery of life's stage shoved and pressed through each other. To your printed treasures, dearest friend, I am indebted for the greater part of my Library of Extracts, and my gratitude for your love can never be lessened. May Heaven lead in enchanting dreams the innocent world of your life before your eyes, and shelter you from the night air and the night frosts. May you and yours be happy, happy, happy!"

Vogel answered: "Infinitely, inexpressibly, beloved friend, you give me my books again, and take from us that personal image in which you have come to us from heaven. I weep at it like a child. But why should I suffer you to see my emotions reflected, as it were, in a glass, when you can read in the human heart as in a book; and yet the less need I color them, for you are holy Nature's first and dearest painter. Let your spirit still hover about us, and let now and then a drop of the old friendship fall into our cup. Thanks, thanks! nothing but thanks for every enjoyment that from the sea of your love you have created for me. Eternal devotion, eternal reverence, eternal tenderness will be consecrated by my heart to yours. Fare you well, well, well! thus calls with me my wife; thus call all my children after their friend.

"P. S. If I should see the *Kampaner Thal*, the ninth or tenth commandment will not stand in my way. You have spoilt my whole reading for me, especially the so-called *beautiful*! I would that you had not spoiled it, or that I had more money and fewer books. Send me often from Leipzig only the written words, *Jean Paul Frederic Richter*, and I will practise magic with them. *Denuo vale carissime! Carissime vale!*"

We hear of the *phlegmatic* Germans ! This letter was from a country pastor, advanced in years. Let us recall the words of the former letter, written just sixteen years before, when Paul, as a poor student, was setting out on foot for Leipzig : " Excellent young German ! from whom in the future I promise the world so much. Fulfil this prophecy ! " If they both remembered the letter, how well seemed the prophecy fulfilled !

Richter and Otto, although living in the same city, had written to each other every day. They would not trust themselves with a parting interview, and Richter's last letter to his friend is most touchingly tender. It closes thus : " My last word to you is, *be courageous !* Strive with manly power against sickly phantasies, and enter, as I do, always more courageously into active life, that your talents may be more useful to others, and thus to yourself. With this wish, with these hopes, my infinitely dear friend, I close my youth's time, and we part silently from each other. If man can bear an eternity in his heart, you will remain eternally in mine. Say this also to your dear brother and sister. I will not seek such a trio in the world, for I shall not find you."

After many other farewell messages, Paul closes by recommending to Otto's peculiar kindness a poor girl, who had sometimes, in her illness, served his mother.

CHAPTER III.

RESIDENCE AT LEIPZIG.—LETTERS.—EMILIE VON BERLESPSH.—
VISITS DRESDEN.

THE residence in Leipzig was a great and decided A. D. 1798,
aged 35. change in the life of our Richter. In the tumult and whirlpool of the collected literature of the great book fair of Germany, so distinguished and so original a writer must have become one of the central points. How different from his humble apartment in Hof, where the only sounds that broke upon the quiet of still life, were the drowsy whirring of his mother's spinning wheel, and the unwearied scratching of his own pen.

On his arrival in Leipzig, the bookseller *Beygang* received him into his house. Richter found there treasures of new books, periodicals, and conveniences, that held him fast with the enchantment of novelty. But he soon went to his old lodgings in the *Peterstrass*, where he found higher chambers, wider windows, a more ornamented stove; in short, elegant furniture, where the "commode was better than any thing he could put in it."

Many families admitted him to their most intimate domestic circles, and the young attached themselves to him with irresistible impulse. Weisse, now an old man, who had closed his literary career by writing hymns and A B C books for children, and to whom every German child is indebted for his delightful "Child's Friend," took Richter into his family; and his table, his library, and country-house were as open to him as if he had been his first-born son. Paul said of him, "In his seventy-second year his *face* is a thanksgiving for his former life, and a love-letter to all mankind. A Leipziger supper is always a *guest* repast. Weisse's daughter, a beautiful and accomplished young lady, presides at his; but for some years I have been dead to external beauty, and only alive to what is living beneath it."

But, as in Weimar, Richter must speak for himself. Leipzig was the residence of his friend Christian Oertel, who had lately been married, and Richter had not yet seen his young wife. He says, "Oertel had already deposited a letter inviting me to a private interview. After half an hour he opened the door of the next room, and his wife, as tall and slender as Renata, neither beautiful, nor unpleasing, but with love-gushing* mild eyes, that steal the heart away as by enchantment, fell, although her mother and two sisters were present, upon my neck. I was not less confused than pleased. Her voice is like her eyes. When she sang the *forget-me-not*, and some Italian pieces, you may easily think where my ears led my heart, and that the tones, floating between the present and the past, affected me *too* deeply. Wednesday I was at the concert hall; there were over a hundred performers. Beating the kettle-drum to a parchment thunder, organ, female singers; in short, I heard *music* for the first time in my life. As the animals to Adam, were the people presented to me, of whom I could name only Ernhardt

* It is impossible to translate *liebequellenden* otherwise.

and Dr. Michaelis and their sons. About eight o'clock, a man came to me without a hat, with tangled hair, and aphoristical voice, and conversation free and bold. It was Thieriot, a violinist and philologist, and apparently an oddity, as he took *me* for one. He begged me to leave my lodgings, and come and live with him.

"Kotzebue has visited, and invited me to dine with his wife. She appears to be a good mother. Contrary to my expectation his conversation is sleepy, spiritless, and like his eye, without brilliancy. On the other hand, he appears to be less wicked, than timidly weak. Conscience finds in his *canada* heart no ground firm enough in which to fix her hook.

"I have been with Platner in his family, where I found a completely accomplished wife, and two extremely beautiful daughters, and many distinguished young people. It exceeds the power of my pen to give you a reasonable sketch of my acquaintances. Rather would I describe for you the refined, not too full, but costly and delicious supper parties. Yet I save nothing by them, for I must give the servants drink money, and the maid who lights you down, or up, even in clear daylight, demands the *offering penny*.

"What I promised to tell you of Goethe is insignificant. It was merely that he judged favorably of the *Hesperus*. Further, he sees now, that it is good earnest with me; but it gives him cramps of the brain when I throw myself from one science into another. 'I show my knowledge too much.' He knows *a little also!* but he delivers only the result. When I am elevated above the earthly, even to heaven, then comes suddenly a poor jest,' &c. In short, he rues this side of my works.*

"I met a noble Scot, Macdonald, (celebrated in history and in Ossian,) at a stranger's table, and at his own, and found in him the twin mind of Blair, whose sermons so delighted me, and whose personal friend he is. No, there is not in the three kingdoms a nobler or more manly breast, under which beats a tenderer, purer, more piously poetic and melancholy spirit. Thus thought a youth long since of the English, from books, and thus he finds it now. He reads and speaks as many languages as the freed American

* It must be confessed there is much justice in this criticism of Goethe's.

cantons, thirteen. . . . "I must tell you of your faults I have already once, but completely wrong, namely, hinting a little vanity. *That* cannot exist in a mind that so readily performs anonymous work, and withdraws itself from praise. Every son of earth may dare to be somewhat vain, it is only unpermitted when he conceals it, or displays it too much. Ah, dear Otto, I remark from your letter that you are going back into your old errors, and that, merely, because I write to you chronologically. Written complaints and explanations are, on account of their longer and stronger false impressions, more difficult to efface than verbal. Ah, if we could be only one day together in Hof, not merely a full amnesty, but a deep Lethe would hide the little precipice where we have fallen."* . . . "Fate is spinning for me, for I hear the whizzing of her wheel, a net-work that will overspread my whole life. The Berlespsch is here. I find in her a soul that has not once fallen beneath my ideal, and should be wholly happy in her friendship, if she would not be *too happy* with me."

The last extract bids us return to Emilie von Berlespsch. A remark has been made by one of his biographers, "that whoever writes the life of Jean Paul must not forget how much influence women exercised upon his destiny." The reader must have already remarked, that although this lady began with the purest Platonism, she soon complained of the coldness of Richter's letters; and that *he* never appeared to have felt other sentiments for her than those of admiration and esteem.

Immediately after Richter's removal to Leipzig she purchased a country house at Gholis, a short distance from the city. When Paul visited her he found a quiet, retired apartment in the lower story, fitted up expressly for him as a study, where he could retire if he wished to be alone, or seek society with her and her friends in her apartments. Upon all occasions he met a glowing heart, and a warm, disinterested friendship.

As a female author Richter placed this lady above most of her sex; but female authorship was more rare in Germany at this time, than even in England, and this lady was distinguished for a lucidity of arrangement, and strength of

* Otto had again expressed his distrust of Richter's affections. See Appendix, No. II.

expression at all times rare among female authors. About this time she had published remarks upon the revolution in Switzerland, together with Mallet du Pans's history of the same. Richter himself must unfold her history in connection with himself. He writes to Otto :

"Harpocrates, lay thy finger upon thy lips, for the theme is of her, the purest, most spiritual female soul that I have ever known, but the firmest and most ideal, and possessed with an egotistical coldness of philanthropy that demands and loves nothing but perfection. She fulfils all the duties of benevolence, but without warmth of feeling. At the baths of Eger I treated her with extreme reserve, and took rarely her hand, and only a sympathizing part in her hard fate. She introduced to me a beautiful, rich, highly moral young lady, her friend from Zurich, for whom no wooer had hitherto been pure and good enough, and wished that I should marry her. Her proposal, when she came now from Weimar, was that my little winnings, and the young lady's property should be thrown together, to purchase a country-house, and that she should live constantly with us. She yielded, when I represented the folly and impossibility of such an arrangement, but her soul hung on mine with more warmth than mine on hers ; and I have lived through fearful scenes, blood-spitting, and swoonings, such as no pen can describe. At length, as I sat one evening reflecting upon her severe destiny, my heart melted within me, and I went in the morning and told her I consented to the marriage with herself. She will do whatever I wish ; will purchase a country-house, wherever I like best ; on the Necker, the Rhine, in Switzerland, or Boigtland. None perhaps will ever love or esteem me more, and yet I am not satisfied ; my fate was not decided by myself. In so far as greatness and purity of soul and worldly riches can make me happy, I shall be so, *perhaps*.

"Ah, Otto, I weary to write, when thou art so long silent. What have I done to thee ? What mist has again drawn around thee ? Farewell, my brother ! I long, more bitterly, every day, for you. Ah, you have no excuse, if, in an unaltered situation, you alter ; while I, in an altered, remain the same to you."

Although Otto was at a distance from the fascinations of the lady, his mind was so completely the echo of his friend's, that he had not the power to represent to him, that by such

a marriage, even if he gained all the fortunes of Germany it would be no atonement to a heart like Richter's, for the want of mutual confidence and love. He closes a letter which is only a reflection of the sentiments of Paul's, thus: "But were your wishes not fulfilled, were the longing after love only charmed, not stilled, we know that our, that is, the poet's kingdom, is not of this world." Paul had therefore to achieve his freedom alone, and it is another proof of his extraordinary power, and the elevating influence of his moral nature, that he not only reconciled the lady to the refusal of her passionate demands, but continued with her upon the most friendly and confidential terms, without further question of love or marriage.

Richter's next letter informs his friend, that even before he had received his last, his fate was decided. "I told Emilie that I felt no passion for her, and that it would be impossible for us to live happy together. I passed two inconceivably wretched days; but now her wounded heart closes again gently, and bleeds less. I am free, free, free and blest! In Hof you will hear of it most extensively, but my justification will precede the censure. It depended on myself, after my *confessions*, to form with her a social and friendly bond. At the end of May we shall go together to Dresden, Seifersdorf, and on the Elbe. . . . I should be much happier in marriage than you imagine. If there were only the *spring* of love, I would ask little from the summer of marriage. But do not believe that mine is like your sacrificing heart. Ah, in your situation I should be through youth and beauty, and through great tenderness of soul, completely happy.*

"Let me say no more of you, but only soon, to you—I believe I should for joy and love, among you, die! Ah, the good Pauline, tell Renata she must ask me what I think of her silence."

"We have room but for one more extract from the Leipzig letters; one that shows the childlike simplicity and openness with which the two friends wrote to each other.

"I celebrated my birth-day on the 20th, on account of the birth of the spring; and on the 21st, on account of my own birth. From an unknown hand, I received brown cloth, that

* Otto had long been attached to Amone Herold, but through family opposition their marriage was delayed.

already doubly wear, as a coat, and as an overcoat for the winter. Madam Feind gave me a cup, with hers and my initial letters interlaced; Madam Bruning a neckcloth; and the Berlespsch made me a little festival, with rose-trees, crowns, etc.; to which *Weisse* and some other friends were invited."

Richter was now preparing the second volume of the *Titan* for the press, and was also employed upon the *Palin-ensesien*. But, in the midst of the business and pleasures of that whirlpool, the Leipzig Fair, he was seized with inexpressible longing for his late home. He fancied that this *einwech* would be cured by the sight of the green spot near the Lorenzo Church, where his mother reposed, and his melancholy dissipated by a few days residence with Otto, and quiet and confidential intercourse with his friend, and his friend's *Vorlobt* Amone. After fourteen days with Otto, and his family, who resembled *him* in tenderness, and in attachment to Richter, he returned, strengthened as much by their love as by the repose and freedom from excitement he had found in the little city of Hof.

Shortly after his return, he journeyed with Emilie to Dresden, partly to escape from the tumult of the fair, and partly to feel the full enjoyment of Nature, under the double charm of the opening spring, and the society of a female friend. It was Richter's first visit to Dresden, and he was disappointed in the social tone of the accomplished Dresdeners. But in Dresden a new, and hitherto unimagined world, was opened to him. He became acquainted with the Grecian plastic art. A new sun arose over his own, and threw its living beams upon his mind. He wrote to Otto:

"As yet, I can impart nothing to you but the hall of sculpture, that yesterday like a new, huge world pressed into my mind, and nearly crowded the other out. We entered a long, light, vaulted hall, through which extended two rows of pillars. Between these pillars repose the old gods, who have thrown off the world of the grave, or the clouds of heaven, and reveal to us a holy, calm, and blessed world in their forms, and in our own breasts. Here we find the difference between the beauty of a man and that of a god. *That* excites, though gently, wishes and timidity; but this exists firm and simple, like the blue of ether before the world and time were created. The repose of perfection, not weariness, looks from their eyes and rests upon their lips.

Whenever in future I write of great or beautiful objects these gods will appear before me, and reveal to me the law of beauty. Now I know the Grecians, and can never forge them.

He did not forget them; but the feeling they awoke in him was a reverend timidity towards them, and desponding reflections upon himself; as the sight of a large library always made him melancholy, he felt the impossibility of taking in its treasures. He did not enter the hall again. Richter was now thirty-five years old, and the feeling may be easily understood of all that he had lost, while his mind was forming, which he was now too old to repair. The sight of perfection in any form excites in susceptible minds the longing after perfection. After his visit to the hall of Sculpture, Richter wrote in a secret pocket-book: "Unknown! unseen! here in the stillness of my empty chamber comes thy image! Ah, once, only once, thou All-loving, send to my thirsting heart that being that, as an eternal pole-star rises above me, and that, alas, I never reach."

This visit to the gallery of Sculpture in Dresden inspired him with a desire to renew his acquaintance with the ancients. He says, in a letter to Thieriot afterwards, "During this northern winter, my spirit was refreshed in Attica and Ionia. I read with a joy of which Herder can tell you, the *Odyssey* and *Iliad*, Sophocles, part of Euripides and *Æschylus*. After the last hymns of the *Iliad*, and the *Œdipus in Colonna*, one can read nothing but Shakspeare or Goethe. They already affect my *Titan*, but as the teacher rather than the father.

Richter had already found reason to rejoice that he had not formed a more permanent union with Emilie. He says to Otto, "In future I shall journey alone, and on foot. With Emilie I found upon our journey too much egotism, and too much aristocracy towards those beneath her in rank. I have again made peace with her, although she, not I, has often opened the old wounds. In the spring of 1799, (*sub-rosa*) she will go to England."

The lady went to England, and resided in the Highlands of Scotland, but soon returned with *heimweh* to her native land. Her troubled life at length reposed happily in another union.*

* Emilie von Berlespsh was a distinguished female German authoress.

Upon Richter's return to Leipzig, from his Dresden journey, a deep sorrow awaited him. His brother Samuel, upon whose account, and to promote whose education he had come to Leipzig, a youth of good talents, and originally of a noble disposition, had fallen into dissipated company, and become involved in a deep passion for gaming. He had taken advantage of Richter's absence to break open his desk, and abstract from it one hundred and fifty Rix dollars. With this sum he departed from his brother's lodgings, without leaving any clue by which he could be discovered.

Paul suffered inexpressibly when he entered his deserted room, and discovered the rose-bush, that had been his brother's care, faded and dried as if it had been long neglected; but he suffered infinitely more, when he found that guilt, also, was connected with his flight. He wrote to Otto: "That lost and deserted one, who knows me so little, and who will never guess that I should be more softened by his return than he would be himself, comes before me every night in my dreams. Ah, if he knew how easily his hard fate might be mitigated!" He did not return, and his subsequent fortunes occupy a large part of Paul's future correspondence with Otto. Richter was more lenient towards his poor unhappy brother, because he reproached himself with too much indulgence, and too little scrutiny of his conduct while at the university. He never saw him again, but he settled on him a yearly sum, to be paid through Otto, who was the medium of communication between them. The boy led a wandering life, probably filled with suffering, and died at a military hospital in Silesia. A strong character should never have the complete control of a weak one. The weak cannot sympathize with the strong, and to conceal his weakness enters into a series of deceptions that often end fatally for the weak.

In the course of his journey to discover his brother,

learn from Schindel's biography, that at the time of her acquaintance with Jean Paul she was divorced from her first husband, although in his life she is called a widow. She visited Scotland in company with Sir James McDonald, and on her return published a work, called "Summer hours in Caledonia." In 1801, she married a second time the Rath farms, and went with him to Berne, in Switzerland, where she owned estates.

Richter visited Halberstadt, the residence of Gleim,* now an old man; but the snow that had gathered upon his long locks, had not extinguished the youthful fire of his eye, or shadowed the lines of his noble brow. Gleim stood at the door to receive him, and *he* was equally enchanted by the old man, and by the neighborhood of the Hartz mountains. Paul wrote to Otto: "Gleim has the fire and the blindness of a youth. To spare the old man I made only some slight remark, when he compared the sorrows of Louis XVI. to those of Christ!"

He returned to Leipzig at the end of July, regretting "that he had found no man for his heart; that he had indeed found men whose pupil he could be, but none that he could take to his heart."

CHAPTER IV.

RICHTER RETURNS TO WEIMAR.—WIELAND.—GOETHE.—HERDER
—HIS ATTACHMENT TO JEAN PAUL.—PHILOSOPHY.—MADAM
VON KALB.

A. D. 1798, AFTER the loss of his brother, Leipzig with all its
aged 35. noise and tumult appeared to Richter an empty and deserted city. Leipzig had indeed never fulfilled the expectations of his youth. All that he had so long dwelt upon in solitude, and that would have made him so infinitely happy as a youth in Leipzig, came too late. The theatre, concerts, the society of people of rank, to one who had been the intimate friend of Herder, appeared empty and idle pleasures, and his longing for the conversation of his friend returned, when there was no longer a reason for his remaining in Leipzig. An invisible hand drew him again to Weimar; an inward voice whispered to him that it was only by the side of Herder that the sun would rise that was to ripen his *Titan*. On a visit that he made there about this time, when all his former friends received him with the same delight as at first, Goethe with more flattering demon

* The reader may recollect that it was Gleim, who sent Jean Paul the fifty dollars, under the name of Septimus Fixlein.

strations of friendship than before, the circle that gathered about him was so choice and so delightful that he determined no longer to resist his secret wishes.

Accordingly, at the end of October, just a year from the time he entered it, he left Leipzig, and on the 26th, at evening, entered the gate of Weimar, to him that of a New Jerusalem. The same evening he wrote the following note to Herder: "At length I have passed the Arabian Desert of two years, and have arrived with the same pilgrim's garment, like an Israelite to the promised land, where I wish to conquer nothing but—yourself."

Madam von Kalb was at her country-house, where she suffered with cheerful resignation the long night that the almost total loss of her sight had drawn around her.

In as far as the comfort of a poet depends on outward circumstances, a humble personage claims a page in his biography. This is the Frau Kuhnholter, the wife of a saddler, at whose house Jean Paul hired his apartments. He writes as usual to his friend Otto: "My greatest refreshment here, except Herder, is my house Frau. Never was I so happily lodged. No step-genius provides for my comfort and waits upon me, but the lady of the house herself, who takes care of me as a mother would take care of her child. In my absence she had a second door cut in my apartment, and cares for all, and places all in order. At six o'clock she comes in, warms and lights my room, and then brings the hot coffee. I give her a crown, with which she pays all, and keeps an exact account till she needs a new one, and I often have a glass of wine over. She provides my wood, my comforts—takes care of the washing, and when I go a little foot journey, like my mother, she puts up every thing, even the ink glass. And when I return all ready, as in an expecting family. The duchess mother told me that my house Frau was a great reader. I inquired, and found that she had once taken the *Œconomical Lexicon* from the library. They wondered at it, and it was purchased for her by the duchess."

These outward cares, for which the good house Frau so well provided, bore upon the whole tenor of Richter's life at Weimar, which was indeed most happy. His reception was even more flattering than at first, as personal knowledge had confirmed the former admiration. All doors, and all hearts, even the ducal, were opened to him. The noble

and intellectual Duchess Amelia received him as a friend of the house, and he was indebted to her descriptions for his knowledge of *Isola Bella*, *Naples*, *Ischia*, and other parts of Italy, that he has painted with such living colors in his *Titan*. Richter's genius also was never more creative and sportful, and the little work that he produced at this time, *Bevorstehenden Lebenslauf*,* in fulness of thought, charm of expression, and a gentle play of wit and humor between the serious and sportive, is not surpassed by any of his longer works.

But the reader must not be defrauded of Paul's own naïve and simple account. He writes to Otto :

"Yesterday I visited Schiller. He was indisposed, and I went, foolishly, to walk with his wife. She belongs to those agreeable coquettes in conversation, who do not throw the ball straight back, but keep it up through playful *persiflage*. She led the author of *Hesperus*, at twilight, to a beautiful eminence, to see another ; but he could only look at her beautiful face, and her still more charming Cleopatra eyes. I always tell her I cannot believe a word she says unless she looks in my face. . . . At a learned supper, I met Hufeland and Fichte, and others, that I did not know. Fichte is small, (I thought he had been tall,) modest and precise, but not particularly genial. I was lovingly treated by all, especially by Schiller. Ah, I speak too openly with people, and shield myself too little. My talk at Dresden to Schlegel, obliged his brother, when it was repeated to him, to the expression of his judgment about me.† . . .

"I write to you, wrapped in Wieland's wide mantle, that on account of the cold, his wife lent me. I travelled here on foot, with only my summer coat, and a pocket full of shoes and clean shirts.‡ Wieland is slender, erect, with a red scarf and a red handkerchief bound round his head—talking much of himself, but not with pride—a little *aristippish*, and indulgent towards himself, as towards others—full of parental and conjugal love, but so intoxicated by the muse that his wife once concealed from him for ten whole days the death of one of his children. He does not penetrat

* Approaching life's course.

† In a severe review of Jean Paul's works.

‡ This was on Paul's first visit from Leipzig, before he had permanently established himself in Weimar.

the relations of things so deeply as Herder, and his judgment is better upon external social affairs, than upon intimate human relations. He gave me the palm many inches higher than his own, particularly about my dreams and pages upon nature, and increased my outward pride (my inward, never) about many things. He depreciates himself too much, and was too anxious about my praise of his works."

"On my second visit to Wieland, with my wide fluttering summer ornaments, the good patriarch, on account of the hateful cold weather, brought me his coat himself. To-day I carried it back. God send every poet such an active, firm, prudent, candid, tender and kind wife. She had read in the newspapers of the danger of resting after being cold, and she brought and insisted upon my drawing on warm stockings. Wieland could not survive her, if she were to lie, neither she, him. He has told me her heart's history, and also his own.* Ah! how much I have to relate to your ear and heart. . . . In his single, and widowed laughter, beneath plain persons, are good and beautiful hearts; but with such faces they will not be drawn out. And yet—otherwise—his wife proposed, and he mentioned to me the next morning, that I should take the opposite house, and eat always with them. He said I gave him new life, and that they all loved me! Naturally, as I always make them laugh, and as *I* cannot help loving so good a family. But that would never do. Two poets can never live together. And I will wear no chain, even were it formed of perfume, and welded by moonbeams—and I should be certain that in the solitude of only their society, I should end by marrying one of their daughters—which is not my plan."

"I have just come from Herder. We sat many hours alone in his arbor. Oh, dear Otto, how shall I show you his noble spirit at its right elevation, before which my little soul bends with Spanish, even Turkish veneration—this man, penetrated with the Divinity, whose foot is upon this world, his head and breast in the other. How shall I paint his inspired eye, when poetry or music softens him? How shall I represent him embracing all the branches of the tree of knowledge, although he seizes masses, not parts, and in-

* See Appendix, No. III.

stead of the tree, shakes the ground upon which it stands. I have often, after spending the evening with him, taken leave with tears.

"Apropos, I have also been with Goethe, who received me with more obliging friendship than the first time. I was, in consequence, freer, bolder, less susceptible, and therefore more independent. He inquired after my manner of working, as it completely surpasses his method, and asked how I liked *Fichte*. Upon the last, Goethe said, 'He is the great new *scholastic*. Men are born poets, but they can make themselves philosophers, if they can any where fix a transcendental idea. The new (philosophers) make light an *object*, when it should only show objects.' He will complete the *Faust* at the end of six months. He said he could always promise himself his work six months beforehand, and he prepares himself by prudent diet. Schiller drinks coffee immoderately, and Malaga also. No one is as moderate in coffee as I am.

"Goethe told us, he had not read a syllable of his *Werter* until ten years after it was written. 'Who would willingly surrender themselves to a past sensation, and recall anger or love,' etc. So also said Herder of his works. What can be said of the self-idolatry of the small literary men of the day, when such men are so humble. I was ashamed *not to be* so before them, but I said, 'that my things, immediately after they were printed, pleased me extremely, and that I knew no better reading—but when I had forgotten my own ideal, I knew none worse.'

"Dear Otto, why do you write me so little of yourself. With what right or justice should I give you all my personalities, if I did not expect yours in return. Write me soon what makes you so calm—namely—'your newly discovered unsealed fountain.' Has no one guessed that it is a gift for distant, thirsting friends, when they are told how often you sneeze, gape, smile, or weep? You imagine me more altered in my views of human life and benevolence than I am. I am the same man as formerly, and have lost nothing but certain hopes and dreams."

Otto, in his next letter, discovers the source of his newly acquired contentment, and as it condenses the philosophy of many tedious volumes, I give an extract from it.

"The conviction lies deep and indelible in every human breast, that only those have a right to be happy—*more*, only

those can reproach Destiny, who possess the purest virtue; that every one should be satisfied with his fate, if he has ever, in the course of his life, acted unjustly or unwisely. I reflected upon my whole life. I have found nowhere what is in the world called happiness, but every where gifts that I had not deserved. The more narrowly I looked at these, they shivered, and, like ignoble metals, evaporated in the melting. How small then was the result? But I did not spare nor deceive myself, and hypocritically say, that my desert appeared much smaller, and the more this diminished the more the gifts increased. I felt with deep mortification, that *there* I should have been better, *here* wiser, or at least more reasonable. Then I was silent within myself, and said, 'Thou hast received more than thou hast deserved, and if Destiny had given thee nothing but this living faith, and the still, cool air, and the solitude that thou lovest, still it is more, a thousand times more, than thou hast deserved.'

"I celebrated Amone's birth-day, this year, with emotions wholly different from former ones. In future years, I thought, she will live by me, care for me, and as I have always known her sacrificing love, so I am certain that in every relation with me, be it ever so limited, she will be contented. I have lived, in my long connection with her, days of sweet and intimate enjoyment for the mind and heart. How often do I admire in her, her sacrificing and forbearing spirit—her tenderness of heart, together with the manly ambition of a philosophical spirit; her silence and patience under the severity of her father, and the narrowness of her family;—all this makes the prospect of life with her, and *only* with her, when we have passed the hard circumstances that now divide us, dear to my heart. To whom could I say all this, with the prospect of sympathy, but to you, my Richter?"

To this letter Richter answered: "Your excellent judgment, upon happiness and desert, was always mine. I have always myself laid the egg out of which the basilisks have crept. On account of my poor brother, I have also some guilt, but less of the heart than of the head. I contended with Goethe upon your assertion 'concerning the *Progress* of the World.' '*Revolving*, we must say,' he answered; '*à priori* progress follows from the belief of a Providence, but not *à posteriori* is the progress always *apparent*, at least not in the French revolution. The hardly-found truth we

must also earn for ourselves. The chambers of the brain are full of seed, for which the feelings and passions are the flower soil and the forcing glasses.'

"A young Haydn is music director here; and a female singer, that I visit sometimes, though without beauty, is a perfect gymnastic for wit. She laughs and sings, and, with justice, more than she speaks. She told me that she asked Goethe how she should receive me, whether she should come *trilling* to meet me? 'Child,' said he, 'do as with me, and be natural.'

"Herder has one *Alphabet* of his *Metakritic* ready. He asked me to look through it, and make corrections. I told him I would, but only to read and restore what he had scratched out.

... "In the great world I despise the men and their joyless joys; but I esteem the women; in them alone can one investigate the spirit of the times. Besides, I am freer and better known than in a small place. But, as I said to Herder yesterday, 'Once married, I shall creep into the smallest nest in the world, and stick nothing but my writing fingers out.'"

Caroline Herder, in her reminiscences of his life, gives a beautiful account of Richter's relations at this time with her gifted husband.

"In the last month of the year 1798, Jean Paul Richter came to Weimar, and with warm, full heart to Herder. Herder immediately won his love, and his esteem for Richter's great and rich genius increased from day to day. The high moral power breathing in his works, fitting him to be a physician of the times, united both men in a friendship of the closest sympathy. He came, as though sent by a good Providence, exactly at the time when Herder, on account of his political and philosophical principles, was deserted and nearly forgotten. The happy evening hours that Richter passed with us, his perpetually cheerful, youthful soul, his fire, his humor, the animation with which he talked over with Herder every thing that happened, always gave him new life. Much as they differed in their views upon one subject, yet were their principles and their emotions always the same. (Herder differed from Richter in his judgment of women; he thought Paul made them too melancholy, too desponding, and perhaps too inactive.) Moreover, he valued Richter's genius, his rich, overflowing, poetic spirit, far above the soul-

less productions of the time, that contended for the *poetic form* only. Herder named them brooks without water, and often said "that Richter stood, as opposed to them, upon a high elevation, and that he would exchange all artistical forms for his living virtue, his feeling heart, his perennial creative genius; he brings new, fresh life, truth, virtue, reality, into the declining and misunderstood vocation of the poet."

"Most intimately united the two friends lived together. Our little evening table, with him, our children, and sometimes Frederic Mayer, was a true sanctuary. Oh, how often has the good Richter *there*, or walking, or in his little journeys to the Ettersburg, by his genial humor, robbed Herder of the bitterness of his emotions. He often said to me in the last year of his life, 'Before I close the *Adrastea*, I will place there a memento of our Richter, I will show to the whole of Germany how we prize him.'"

It was thus that our Richter was valued by those who best knew him, and perhaps he now stood upon a higher elevation in the estimation of society, and in his own, than he had before attained. He had added independence and strength of soul to the consciousness of the value, and to the infinite reverence he felt for the holy aim of his life. His views were more extensive and richer; while his heart beat with a more glowing philanthropy. He felt that the calling of an author, at this time, when a spiritual revolution was beating in the hearts of men, more important even than the political that was raging without, demanded all the highest qualities of the soul, as well as the devotion of the time and heart of him,

"Who comprehends his trust, and to the same
Keeps faithful, with a singleness of aim."

The friendship which about this time he formed with Jacobi, threw him again on the path of philosophy, which in his nineteenth year he had abandoned for poetry. From the idealism of Fichte, which made egotism transcendental, he turned to what he thought the interests of humanity demanded. A personal God, the maker, preserver, and governor of the universe; the immortality of man, as a self-conscious and accountable being—and to *love*, as the spring, incitement, and impelling principle of the universe. In these opinions he found in Jacobi an immovable rock, and

for these Herder incessantly contended. They had united to publish a periodical under the title of "*Aurora*," but the advanced age of Herder, (he was in his sixty-sixth year,) and Jacobi's failing health, prevented the accomplishment of their project.

I cannot be guilty of the presumption and temerity of undertaking to define the different systems of the philosophical writers of the time, so as to be able to determine to which of them Richter adhered; but I may venture to assert that he dreaded the influence of the Kantish philosophy upon religion and morals, and that he made the idealism of Fichte, (who asserts that all external things are the production of the imagination,) the subject of severe ridicule in his *Clavis Fichtiana* and has shown the practical consequences of his system in *Schoppe*, or *Leibgeber*, a character introduced into more than one of his books, who is crazed by the *Ideal* philosophy, and maddened by the fixed idea, that he has lost his *individuality*. Richter's biographer asserts, that after the publication of Fichte's book upon *the destiny of man*, he seized every opportunity to express his reverence for the author, and that in his *Lavana* he inserted a eulogy of Fichte.

Jean Paul adhered closely to Herder, and was a fellow believer with Jacobi, the "*faith philosopher*." Those who are acquainted with the elevated and religious sentiments "that echoed to the mighty heart of Herder," will understand the position he took in German philosophy. Richter possessed in an eminent degree what have been called the highest capacities of man, reverence for the holy, and love for the beautiful. *Superstition*, bigotry, and fanaticism, seem to have been *equally* abhorred by him in early life, although he said, after the French revolution, "I bless the *concordat*. The deepest superstition is better than Atheism and Theism."

In this happy manner the autumn passed in Weimar. In January, Madam von Kalb returned from her country residence, and immediately a storm arose in Richter's Indian summer. She had brought her husband and her own family to consent to her divorce, and, as a consequence, insisted upon marrying our hero. But he must give his own account of the affair, in a letter to Otto:

"After a supper at Herder's, with Madam von Kalb, Herder was sitting by her, for he esteems her highly, and immediately, in the presence of his wife, kissed her heartily;

and as the reflection of this ancient flame fell upon me, she said, 'In the spring, in the spring.' I said afterwards to her, decidedly, *no!* and after a glow of eloquence from her, it stands thus—that she shall take no step for, and I no step against the divorce. I have at last acquired firmness of heart. In this affair I am wholly guiltless. I can feel that holy, genial love, that I cannot, indeed, paint with this dark water—but it passes not beyond my dreams."

These stormy passages in the life of Richter were of singular advantage in enabling him to complete his *Titan*, but they were unfavorable to his own happiness; and, as he said, "the Berlespsch relation bound his hands, and shut his eyes, while some gentler heart that might have been his was lost to him. Shall I always thus play and hope; fail and end thus? Such women as both these blind one to every quiet female *Luna*. Ah, what seeds for a paradise I bore in my heart, of which birds of prey have robbed me."

Richter remained firm through the winter against the seductions of Madam von Kalb. He happily knew that such stormy heroines as Madam Berlespsch and Von Kalb were never formed for wives for him. He needed a mild and gentle spirit, not to dazzle and to be admired, but in whose unselfish love he could find a sanctuary for his heart. Noble and excellent as Richter was, he was yet a poet, and therefore a spiritual egotist, and his wife must minister to the domestic altar the sweet and pure incense of reverence and love. With a Berlespsch he could have found no repose, with Madam von Kalb there could have been no security.

No genius of either sex should marry a genius. The result of the poetic nature seems to be an intense personality. I do not mean selfishness or even egotism—but the poet lives in his own creations; they are his domain, his kingdom, and he cannot go out of them, to enter into the heart or interests of an individual, although he understands better than another the great heart of humanity, and lives in the soul of the universe. His wife should be willing to be only a ray, to be absorbed, and have no individual existence, except in him. How could this be, were both poets, both demanding supremacy, and the acknowledgment of individual superiority? For happier, far more graceful is it for the woman to remain in the attitude of a priestess at the domestic altar, not of man, because he is a man, but because he is a poet,

and to keep the flame pure by no slavish offering, but by the holy incense of admiration and reverence.

The work that appeared this year from the pen of Richter, "Selections from the Papers of the Devil," recast and rewritten, was entitled "*Palingenesien*," *born again*. Ten years before, Richter had met with great difficulty in finding an editor for these satires. Disputes were held upon the title—the printer wishing them to appear as "*Philosophical and cosmopolitan Remains of Faust*," or "*Selections from the writings of Sir Lucifer*." Jean Paul adhered to his own title, but the book attracted little attention at the time. It was now wholly rewritten, and only about ten of the original satires retained; these being the only pages that could have a direct reference to the present time, and be combined with a dramatic action. A critic, speaking of this book, says, "It is one of the works of the author that gives the most lucid explanation of the being and nature of the poet, and places poetical influences in the clearest light"

CHAPTER V.

RICHTER VISITS THE COURT OF HILDBURGHAUSEN.—MADemoiSELLE VON F.—THE FOUR SISTER PRINCESSES.—DEDICATION OF TITAN.—VISITS BERLIN.

A. D. 1799,
aged 36. IN the spring of 1799, Madam von Kalb, having invited Amone, the betrothed of Otto, to accompany her, retired to one of her country-houses, and all question of the divorce was thenceforth dropped.

Richter could not pass the genial season of spring without a longing desire to wander; he therefore accepted an invitation to visit the court of Hildburghausen, from whose duke he had received the diploma of Legations Rath. He was also drawn thither by the powerful attraction of a young lady, Caroline von F., whom he had met in Weimar the previous winter, and who was an attendant on the duchess of Hildburghausen. This new attachment was so far happier for Richter, that the lady did not belong to the class of ec-

centric beings who had before entangled him, but the storm that nipped and destroyed its fruit in the bud, came from the opposition of her noble relations.

His letters describe the delightful residence of a few weeks at this court, and the flattering kindness of the duchess. She was one of the four beautiful sisters to whom he afterwards dedicated his *Titan*. He must first describe his situation at the court, and then the lady of his love. His letter is to Otto.

“Paint to yourself the heavenly duchess, with her childlike eyes, her whole face full of love and the charm of youth, her voice like the nightingale’s, and her mother’s heart—then the not less beautiful sister, the princess von Solms, and the third, the princess of Thun and Taxis, and their lovely, healthy children, who all arrived on the same day that I did. We will pass the men, but with the princess von Solms I could be happy in a mountain coal mine. All these women read me, and love me truly, and urge me to stay yet eight days longer, when the fourth, yet the more charming sister, the queen of Prussia, is expected. I am invited to dinner every evening. The duke is extremely good-natured, but could not at first be much *au fait* with me. He remarked that I took too little asparagus, and helped me, not only to this, but to the first young venison, which is not indeed wonderfully good. Yesterday I *fantasied* upon the flute before the court. You are shocked and frightened. But for more than half a year I have done it passably, before Gleim, Weisse, Herder, and the duchess mother. I have also here an established brother and sisterhood, and could be a Zinzendorf. No, it would be ungrateful if I did not receive the love of the Germans as the richest reward of my authorship.

“My Caroline lives with her mother, sisters and brother, and the time I am not at court is passed with her. I know her now more intimately, and in no female soul have I found such serene, sedulous, religious morality; immovable and incorruptible in its smallest branches. One feels, alas, by her moral tenderness, that he has been long in Weimar. If I were united with her, my whole being, even the smallest taint, would be purified. She does not read, as young ladies usually do, merely to dissolve a sentimental manna upon her tongue, but to learn; that is, she reads history and natural history. She has formed a complete herbarium, and a succession of ingenious flower paintings. She makes verses, as

you will learn by the accompanying inclosure, and therefore she cannot forget the satire upon female poetry in J. P.'s letters.* It was true, she said, but too bitter. She drinks no wine at dinner, and passes great part of her time in the open air, in the garden. 'Now that I am healthy,' she says 'I will make myself hardy.' . . . Her delicate mother certainly guesses all, and by her silence gives consent. I dare tell you all. With three kind words you can give this dear being three heavens. . . . Her complexion is fair, and pale red, her brow poetical and feminine, her eyebrows strong indeed too much so, and her eyes dark. The nose is the reverse of little and short; the lips naturally cut, and the chin a little too prominent. Of the beauty of her hair I inclose a proof. Pray return it immediately. I derive from her, God knows why, unless it is my five-and-thirty years, a sense of firmness and security that enables me to enjoy the present hour, without anxiety for future years; and thus my life completes its circle, its enchanted circle."

Richter was now more genuinely attached than he had ever been, and the lady appeared to have reciprocated his emotions; but the course of their love was turbid and ruffled. Paul was tortured all through the summer by the caprices of Caroline's noble relatives. At one time she gained their consent to the betrothment, and Richter wrote, full of joy to Otto, to postpone his marriage with Amone, that they might have the happiness of solemnizing both on the same day, and both retiring to the little city of Bayreuth, there to realize the plans of their youth. All these changes are related most faithfully to his friend, and he closes one of his letters with these words: "How can I tell you, Otto, how entirely I esteem her—not merely *love*, for that is always so easy."

The winter passed in frequent correspondence, and in May his friends, the Herders, went with him to Ilmanau, where Caroline then was, to celebrate the festival of betrothment.† Certainly Richter had never loved apparently

* See Jean Paul's "Conjectural Biography."

† The "*Verlobung*" is often, but not always, a solemn ceremony in German society. It means that the lover is formally accepted by the lady and her family. If there be no reason for keeping the affair secret, the relations and friends, on both sides, are assembled, a little festival takes place, and the young people are presented as "*Verlobt*," affianced, or, as we say in this country, "engaged." The marriage ceremony, which

so naturally and prudently, and the encouragement of the Herders was to him a guarantee of his future happiness. They found that his Caroline surpassed even the description of her lover. There was something about her fascinating to people not exactly of the world, and that took the Herders by surprise. What took place at this time is not exactly known, the opposition of the relatives does not appear to have prevented the betrothment, but some little moral differences, that would have destroyed the whole happiness of the marriage. Richter returned to Weimar with a crushed heart—he had no words to describe the agitation his disappointment occasioned; for a moment the health of this strong and firm being sank under the blow, and the thought of returning again to the desert world. He thus closed a letter to Otto: “The blow is given that has cut me to the inmost heart. I also am superstitious—misfortunes and happiness come twice, not three times. I long infinitely for the little corner of my birth, and the innocent and touching scenes about you.* You know not how my heart, even to sadness, dwells upon your day of ceremony.† We can never lose each other, therefore every thing, even the weather, will be important to me, as it concerns you, and our Amone.”

Otto, who appears to have felt a singularly warm interest in the Fraulein von F., insisted upon knowing more distinctly the causes of the rupture. Richter says, in reply, “Merely little moral differences, but such as would have destroyed the whole happiness of marriage.” But there was also the opposition of the lady’s noble family, who probably

takes place afterwards, is more private, and attended by fewer witnesses. In this country we have the custom of “Verlobung,” without the ceremony; and here, as Mrs. Jameson, in her pleasant notes to the princess Amelia’s Dramas, observes, “the engaged youth is expected to devote every leisure minute to the society of his betrothed; he attends her to all public places, and to every private party, (as it is not considered good manners to invite them separately,) and less restraint is placed on the intercourse of the lovers here, than even in Germany. In England, it may be presumed, from Mrs. Jameson, the lovers do not appear much together before marriage; and in France it is offending against *bien-seance*, ever to leave them alone together. In this, as in other habits of social life, we have been permitted, in *this country*, to select what is good and agreeable from all others.

* Otto and his sister Frederica were both married at this time; and Otto immediately removed to Bayreuth.

† Otto’s Verlobung day.

looked with the eyes of worldly prudence, not merely upon their sister's violation of all German conventionalism, in uniting herself with an author, but trembled for the straitened circumstances into which her disinterested inexperience would lead her.

In a letter, written to her at the breaking off the betrothment, Paul says: "Only one fault have I, and only I, committed throughout, that after so many earlier lessons from experience, I did not immediately, as soon as we had *once* conversed with each other, write this letter to you, and impress it upon my own heart."

Otto, to whom the correspondence was transmitted, draws, as he was accustomed to do, these wise, but alas, too tardy reflections, for the use of his friend:

"It is a weak perverseness of our nature, and yet an antidote against egotism, that when we see a being worthy of our esteem, we turn from what we discover in them that is disagreeable, and believe that if we shut our eyes so as not to see them, the little spots are not there; as if we could avert the divine and human sentence which decrees, that inequalities and blemishes, shall, in the course of time, become *more*, instead of less apparent, and that because we blind ourselves, *they* should vanish and be obliterated. That your separation is right, that it is the work of destiny, and that you have completed the decree of a higher Power, that you should not be happy together, is true, and that the good and unfortunate Caroline will be the most unhappy, is also true; because she will never be in a situation to understand the disparity and inequality between you. Because the advantages of the separation are more apparent to you than the advantages of the union, you can justify the separation to yourself; but it is the reverse with Caroline; she can never understand the *disadvantages* of the *union*, because her disinterested generosity and affection would obliterate them all; while she *feels* the unhappiness of the separation."

We see from these extracts that Richter was not altogether blameless with regard to the Fraulein von F., because his deeper penetration and experience of life, had enabled *him from the beginning*, to understand the disparities, whether of a moral or conventional nature, which would have rendered their union unhappy; and yet he permitted himself to win the love of the lady. She seems to have been

greatly attached to him, and for his sake would have sacrificed the privileges of rank, and accepted the inconveniences of poverty; and it was no balm to a wounded heart, or to wounded pride, that he had had the sagacity to foresee the issue.

As women, we may be permitted to protest against Richter, in connection with our sex. It is true, that he has written beautifully and eloquently of women; and has perhaps, done much to elevate and spiritualize their views and affections; but in actual life he was not wholly sincere with the beings he professed to reverence. After the fancy for the little blue-eyed peasant girl, till his marriage, he does not appear to have felt the truth and tenderness of an *equal* love. He was dreaming of an ideal, spiritual love, like a far-off luminous star, while he permitted himself to write letters to his four or five Hofer friends, that from any but a poet, would have been thought genuine declarations of love.

In his connection with Madam von Kalb and Emilie Berlespsh, he was more sinned against than sinning; in the one case he retreated before dishonor, in the other before a marriage in which there could be no genuine and mutual affection; but even here he appropriated their unselfish affections, their disinterested devotion, to purposes of artistic creation; he made them the models for the female characters in his works, and they lived to see the warm pulses of their hearts registered, and made a standard by which to count the feverish or healthful pulsation of other hearts.

In the usual acceptation of the word, Richter was not an enemy to women, but his devotion to them was not a genuine devotion to them, as women; he did not love them for themselves; he loved them artistically; and as the artist drapes his model in every graceful form to produce effect, Jean Paul made use of the power his genius gave him over the minds of women, to draw out the sweet affections, the hidden depths of the heart, revealed only to love, to increase his psychological knowledge for the public.

In spite of all the various causes of interruption, Richter was never more completely absorbed in work than through his winter. The first volume, and the comic appendix to *Titan*, was ready for the press, and he had printed his history of "*Charlotte Corday*," and *Clavis Fichtiana*. Neither of these were works of the first importance, but they

served to keep him before the public while his great work was in preparation.

The *Clavis Fichtiana* was, at the time, one of his most celebrated works, and attracted much attention upon its publication. Fichte's popularity was so great, or the interest in metaphysical speculations so intense, that the booksellers paid him six louis d'ors a sheet, for his lectures, while Goethe received only five, at the same time, for his most admired works. It would not, perhaps, be interesting to inquire at this distance of time, and in another country, why Jean Paul threw himself so entirely into the philosophical and metaphysical contests of the day. From all that can be gathered from his letters, it would seem to be his friendship for Herder and Jacobi; but he gained nothing, even from them, and he widened the distance between himself and Goethe and Schiller.

His letters at this time to his friend Otto, to whom he confided every intimate, and every passing emotion, betray discontent and restlessness; a deep longing for quiet and retirement, yet an unwillingness to retire until he had formed a union that would satisfy his heart, if not his ideal—although, at present, he certainly did not place his demands too high. He says; "I would fain find a gentle girl who could cook something for me; and who would sometimes smile, and sometimes weep with me."

During the whole of this winter, Richter was flattered and courted by the four beautiful princesses already mentioned: and he obtained permission to dedicate his *Titan* to them.

The dedication of *Titan* to the four distinguished sisters, the daughters of the duke of Mecklenburg, is not to the sisters upon the throne, for he mentions only their baptismal names, and commends his *Titan* to their favor as exalted human, not princely beings; and when his friends represented that his *Titan* contained bitter satires against princes, he answered, "that his dedication was to them as women, not princesses, and that his satire touched princes only, not their wives."

This pretty piece of flattery is thus presented:

The queen of Love and her three attendant graces look from their cold Olympus, through the atmosphere, and long to descend to our earth, where the soul loves more because it suffers more; and although it is darker, it is warmer than on Olympus. They hear the sacred hymns of Polyhymnia, as she wanders invisible through the earth, to elevate and console man, and they mourn that *they* are so distant from

the sighs of the helpless. Then they resolved to clothe themselves in the veil of humanity, and descend to earth. As they touched the flowers of earth, and threw no shadow, the queen of heaven raised her sceptre and decreed, that these immortals should be mortal. and take the form of the four sisters, Louisa, Charlotte, Theresa and Frederica, and the loves were changed into their children, and flew into the arms of the mothers. Then their hearts beat with new love, and Polyhymnia, as she hovered invisibly near, gave them the voice and the heart to charm, and to console humanity.

The rupture of his ties with the Fraulein von F. made Richter very desirous to remove for a short time from Weimar, where he was constantly meeting her family; fortunately, a singular circumstance drew him at this time to Berlin.

The previous March he had received an anonymous letter from Belgard, Upper Pomerania, together with his *Hesperus*, translated into French. The writer promised to make herself known as soon as an answer to her letter gave her courage.

Richter answered immediately, which was not his custom to anonymous letters; and the lady made herself known as the lady Josephine von Sydon; French by birth, but who had so far become mistress of the German language, as to read it with ease, and to translate it into her mother tongue. Her love of Richter's works had excited the highest admiration for their author, and an ardent desire to become personally acquainted with him. Richter now went to Berlin to meet her, with whom he had formed a friendship by means of a correspondence in different languages, and with the partition wall of mountains also between them.

It rarely happens, that a friendship formed without a personal interview, through the charm of correspondence, will not disappoint one of the parties when they meet. We have none of the letters of Josephine, but Richter's expectations were more than satisfied. He wrote to Otto: "My Josephine has increased my esteem and admiration. What southern naïvete, simplicity and openness, carried to almost childish excess; southern animation, firmness and tenderness, with a true German eye and heart."

This year also, in the midst of his intimacy with the four princesses, he wrote his *Eulogy of Charlotte Corday*, the female Brutus of the French revolution, in every line of which breathes the holiest love of freedom. Paul represents

Corday as sacrificing, not the opposer of legitimacy, but the tyrant of a republic ; and has the boldness to make a governing German count a fellow admirer of the heroine. He defended the deed, not from feeling, but from principle. She destroyed Marat, not as a citizen, but as an enemy of the state, in a civil war ; consequently, he regarded her act not as the offence of an individual against an individual, but as the act of a party, against a corrupt and apostate member.

CHAPTER VI.

RICHTER REMOVES TO BERLIN.—INTRODUCTION TO CAROLINE MEYER.—THE MEYER FAMILY.—THE “VERLOBUNG.”

A. D. 1800,
aged 37. BERLIN was at this time to our Richter a newly discovered part of the world. The society was distinguished by a higher culture, a more refined tone, through the accomplishments of the women, to which the beautiful Queen Louisa, one of the four sisters, lent a splendor and a charm at that time unequalled elsewhere. But Richter must speak for himself.

“I have been here two-thirds of a week, and must remain the following, as Offland, on my account, will perform the *Wallenstein*. I have never been received in any city with such idolatry. After such an elevation, I can henceforth only sit on the steps of the throne, never again upon its summit. I avoid the merely learned, and therefore I meet with no envy ; but only a too warm enthusiasm, that does not make me proud of myself, but of humanity. How it refreshes the heart to find the same sighs for the spiritual in a thousand hearts that arise in mine, and prove, that we have within us a common heaven.

“The splendid queen invited me immediately to *Sins Souci*. Heavens ! what simplicity, frankness, accomplishment, and beauty ! I dined with her, and she showed me the kindest attention. The learned Zollner invited eighty persons to meet me at the York Lodge ; gentlemen, their wives and daughters, of the learned circles. I have a watch chain of the hair of three sisters, and so much hair has been

begged of me, that if I were to make it a traffic, I could live as well from the outside of my cranium, as from what is under it.

"I have been often with the highly accomplished minister, Von Alvensleben. The tone at the court table was easy and good; with Alvensleben one may speak as freely as upon this sheet. Only in Berlin is freedom and *law*!"

The reader will recollect that when Jean Paul was nameless, and struggling with the waves of poverty, that nearly made shipwreck of his hopes, from Berlin was the first plank thrown that brought him to land.* Now he says, "they threw a couple of worlds upon his head."

The impression that he made upon the Berlinians, we learn from the journal of a lady at this time published. She says, "Among the wonderful peculiarities of our time, and from which our country will receive a distinguished radiance, is the appearance of Jean Paul. As yet, few among us know him, but those who have seen him look upon him as an apparition from another world, as a prophet who has come thence to perform miracles incomprehensible to the senses. No one had scented his approach; of so rare a man, no one had conceived an idea. Like a beam of light he flashed among us, but cheering as the star of day is his lingering here. He cannot be more than forty, though he has a bald head. All the riches of language appear to have been created for him. Nature is his dwelling, customs his playthings, and men his machines. Like the sun, he shines through the curtains of fate, and the labyrinth of the heart," etc.

It was not only in the journals of ladies that Richter was revered; the beautiful queen, whose fate has thrown a touching interest over every thing relating to her, continued firm and steady in her friendship. She never spoke of him but with a deep feeling of his worth as a man and an author; and with the brother of the queen, Prince George of Mecklenburg, he formed a friendship that was uninterrupted till his death. In *Schliermaker* he found a congenial spirit, and formed many friendships with distinguished women.

Taking into view all these circumstances, it is not surprising that Richter should form the resolution to remove from Berlin, and fix there his permanent residence. A secret

* Moritz, in Berlin, from whom he received a hundred *ducats* for the manuscript of the *Invisible Lodge*.

and unacknowledged inclination, as well as an unseen and Providential hand, guided him to the happiness he had so long been seeking. The separation from his friends the Herders, cost him some painful and lingering hours, but a more powerful wish drew him onward, and before the end of the year he had accomplished his removal.

It was in October, 1800, that Richter finally made in Berlin his permanent residence. On his *first visit* at the festival that Zollner made for him at the York Lodge, he met the secret tribunal counsellor, Meyer, and his two unmarried daughters. A little accident, his being too late to take the place assigned him at the right hand of the president, brought him to an unoccupied seat at the side of Caroline, the second daughter of the counsellor. It was the only vacant place at the table, and the young lady's heart began to beat when she saw the wonderful man, the observed of all observers, approach it, and with timid humility she shrunk from supporting a conversation with him; but as Richter had come from dining at *Sans Souci*, the conversation about the queen and the court immediately became interesting. The mildness and friendliness of Paul's manner, wrought a sudden change from timidity to the most ingenuous confidence in the soul of Caroline Meyer. Richter, in his personal appearance and manner, exerted a magical influence over all minds, and nothing interested *him* so deeply as the unveiling of an innocent female heart. He was touched and at rising from the table gave Caroline the flower from his breast, and asked her to present him to her father. It happened that her sister Ernestine, who sat opposite at the table, and, like a true woman, had observed the impression that had been made on Caroline, now met them with her father. They had seen in his eyes an expression of high esteem for Jean Paul, and secretly happy, about midnight they left the party. Richter led the sisters through the long avenues of the garden to the carriage, without either *expressing* a wish to meet again, and bade them silently good night. One day only was permitted to pass before he called at the house of the Rath, with the excuse, that he could not leave Berlin without expressing his gratitude for the agreeable evening he had passed at the York Lodge.

But before we proceed with the wooing, we must learn something of the family of the Geheimer-Rath Meyer. He was himself one of the most accomplished and distinguished

officers of the Prussian government, and had married early in life a daughter of the family of Germershausen, who had been educated in country simplicity, but in all the severity of the orthodox faith; and even after her marriage hung with passionate love on the parental house.

Herr Meyer was a man who cherished a high ideal of life and its duties; and uniting the most agreeable accomplishments with the most enlightened views, he moved in the distinguished circles of Berlin, one of the most interesting men of the period. By the intolerance of his mother-in-law, and the blind subjection in which she held the will of her daughter, he was either deprived of the enjoyment of his refined tastes, or obliged to live in continual discord with his relations. The numerous sacrifices that he made to his mother-in-law only increased her asperity, and his wife always taking the side of her mother, at last a coldness and estrangement arose, that after seven years of married life resulted in a mutual agreement of separation.

But as Providence had denied him a son, and Herr Meyer desired for his daughters the most liberal culture, and the modern accomplishments, which he could not depend on the mother to sanction, they formed the singular agreement, that the weeks should be passed alternately with either parent; and actually, every eight days the children were sent backwards and forwards between father and mother. This strange arrangement, which remained a mystery to their young hearts, was a perpetual occasion of self-denial and self-government. They dared not speak of either parent in the presence of the other; and the constant exchange, now from severe religious simplicity to all that was refined and intellectual in social life, and now from the latter to an almost Moravian solitude, must have promoted in the minds of the daughters an early development, and given them a strong and entire dependence on each other, as well as on themselves.

In their earliest years the children hung fondly on the mother, whose tears they vainly tried to wipe away when she left her, and whose sacrificing mother's love knew no limits; but as they grew older they found opening to them under the father's roof, a rich school for the cultivation of their higher faculties, to the value of which they soon became sensible. The most zealous desire for a refined culture, especially in philosophy, poetry, and the arts, filled the

soul of their father. Every moment that he could win from his duties as a servant of the state, he devoted to the cultivation of his own, and his daughters' taste, in the beautiful arts of poetry, music, and painting. Above all in importance, was the cultivation of the moral purity of his children, whom he anxiously protected from the influence of everything low and trivial. He provided them with the best teachers, and filled his house with paintings and other of the choicest works of art. Thus was linked in their opening minds, in company with artists, learned men and poets, susceptibility to every thing great and good, which in the family was innate and true, but which an unsympathizing world calls transcendentalism, when affected for purposes of vanity or display.

Upon minds so prepared by education, the acquaintance of Jean Paul must have made a deep impression; it had already, in that evening at the York Lodge, woven a sweet enchantment about the heart of Caroline, and when after the interval of a day, in which her imagination had dwelt exclusively upon him, he made the un hoped-for visit, he stood near her as a being that she must regard with almost religious veneration.

A report had been spread in Berlin, that Caroline was about being betrothed to her cousin; and Jean Paul, to leave her entirely free, returned to Weimar without any express manifestation of his wishes.

His image, however, was interwoven in all the social enjoyments of the family; but Caroline's father, with quick and nice sense of the honor of his daughter, had coldly and severely commanded that there should be no reference to him. The gossips of Berlin spread a report, that Caroline had kissed the hand of Jean Paul in public, and the father, jealous of the slightest shade on the delicacy of his daughter, forbade her to speak of him, until he should himself make some more decided demonstration of his wishes. This command was the occasion of the following letter from Caroline to her father:

"It is a great pity that we cannot receive the noble and best among men with interest and warmth. I feel indeed, dear father, that I have thereby lost your esteem. It pains me much, but the consciousness alone that I am free from all enthusiasm and all extravagance in esteeming and admiring such excellence, raises me in a certain degree above a

mortification. Your dissatisfaction with me arises from the suspicion that something different from *reverence* has taken possession of my heart. Did you know how pure, how inexcessibly pure my interest in Jean Paul is, a man like you could not on that account esteem me less. With *Leonora* and Tasso, I can say, 'I love in him only what is most excellent and most exalted.' Ask your own judgment, whether this is extravagance. Truly, a more exalted man we can never meet.

"Perhaps you still misunderstand me. I must bear it, and I should be too proud to justify what I think and feel, to any other than my father. Of his writings permit me to say, that the influence they exert upon me, is exactly that which *you* demand from a good book, namely, to be made wiser and better. Is what he gives me unsound? Its effect upon me must be as wonderful as if poison in a medicine were changed into a healing blessing. I have indeed become better, and feel within myself the power to improve. This meeting has been the most momentous circumstance of my life, and I know nothing except this emotion in my heart, that ever can make me happy or unhappy. Nothing *outward*, by my God, nothing that men reckon fortune or happiness, can charm or interest me again; and if Providence could prepare trials for me, I shall not be unhappy.

"*One*, a sore trial, I feel it deeply, dear father, is the doubt of your love. It may be that I have deserved to lose you; and on this point my tears of *regret*, but not of *repentance*, must flow!

"Never was I less excited or extravagant than now. Yes, I will cherish this sentiment. It does not injure me; I will conceal, but not part with it. I see indeed that it will be my first struggle, to suffer silently, if the sanctuary of my emotions is violated. The warmth with which I have written this will be with you, dear father, my apology for writing."

In reading this letter, in which Caroline avows such faith in Richter, and such confidence in the truth of her own feelings, we must recollect that they had never spoken of love, their eyes had met, and her destiny was decided; and if Providence had so decreed, that they had never met again, Caroline would have mourned him in widowhood of heart. With the same happy confidence she wrote to her married father:

"I believed I should have been unhappy when we were

separated; but the painful reality of parting would drive me from the ideal height to which his presence had elevated me. But I feel a courage and power to bear life, such as I never felt before. *I could be happy without ever again seeing him in this life.*"

The elevation of a pure and ideal love is here truly expressed. Caroline felt herself raised above the accidents of life, and happy in the *ideal* presence of the being she revered above all others.

But Richter had not left her without some slight intimation of his wishes. When he returned to Berlin, in October, Caroline was the first person informed, by a few lines in which he asked permission to visit her family that evening. Their hearts had spoken too truly, for them to be longer silent; and that very evening, as he conducted Caroline to visit her mother, his tongue was loosed, and the destiny for ever united.

Early the next morning, kneeling at the bedside of his father, and whispering in his ear that Richter had spoken, Caroline asked his blessing on their love, and received the consoling assurance: "My child, if the satisfaction of your father can add any thing to your happiness, believe me, the union could give me so much joy. I feel it a reward for my care of your education." Truly, the father must have been as unworldly and as unselfish as the daughter, for Richter had not the prospect of a dollar, except those he could coin, as Sir Walter Scott said in another case, "from the rich mine of his intellect, and stamp with the mark of his genius." It must be acknowledged, in a worldly point of view, this connection appears romantic, if not imprudent. Caroline had been educated in all the luxury of refinement, at least in her father's house, and his fortune depending on his office, he could give his daughters no dowry.*

* Caroline, although educated in the luxury of refinement, was probably accustomed to great frugality of expense, as the salary of a Berghiemer-Rath, is, in some instances, only two thousand florins. Richter says, in one of his letters, "She is cold towards all ornament in dress, but not to the necessity of maiden neatness, and on my account she puts her splendid new blue dress, to which I have added a white satin, at four louis d'ors, together with a hat for one louis d'or. I wish I could hang my heart, as a golden ornament, over hers. I would draw it out of my breast." Richter seems to have had a passionate admiration for a white hat and a black veil, for a lady. Clotilda's hat occupies a large space in *Hesperus*.

Although Jean Paul had dedicated his *Titan* to princesses, they had given him nothing but empty praise in return. In the correspondence with the Rath Meyer, not a word is said of property. Richter says, when he asks the father for his daughter; . . . "In this moment of my *great request*, all other things appear too little to be touched upon by either of us. I approach the man, for whom my esteem and love, even without the relation I desire, would be almost filial; as his feminine tenderness and manly philosophy have together nourished the root of this beautiful flower of the sun, and made it so firm, yet so tender. To this *good* father of this *good* daughter, I present my short, but weighty prayer. Let her be mine! she will be happy, as I shall be!"

Herr Meyer answered, "That it had been the aim of all his plans, in the education of his daughters, to prepare them to unite themselves to such men as himself—and that he gave his unconditional consent." The mother, also, in German phrase, sent her *ja-wort*, and the betrothing of two noble hearts took place immediately.

Paul had, at last, in his thirty-eighth year, found the deal of female perfection and loveliness that had always haunted his imagination. He says: "Caroline has exactly that inexpressible love for all beings, that I have till now, failed to find even in those who in every thing else possess the splendor and purity of the diamond. She preserves in the full harmony of her love to me, the middle and lower tones of sympathy for every joy and sorrow of others."

In describing her to Otto, he says, "She has the beauty, rare among Germans, of a dark soft eye and Madonna brow"—"self sacrificing love, without equal; modesty, openness; and in the midst of the purest love for me, her heart trembles at every sound of sorrow. She has the warmest friends among women and young girls, and the innumerable visits of congratulation that she received at the news of our *Verlobung*, shows how much she is beloved by the Berliners."

We have no means of forming a judgment of Caroline Meyer, except from her letters to Richter, which have all the simplicity and tenderness of Klopstock's *Meta*. But they are only the beautiful expression of a submissive tenderness, and boundless reverence. The letter to her son, which will appear hereafter, discloses independent thought, and is altogether of a higher order. Mrs. Austin says, "It is the habit of Paul's countrymen to require from women

the virtues of attached and industrious *servants*, rather than of equal, intelligent, and sympathizing *friends*;" and although Jean Paul in so many places in his works protests against this tendency of his countrymen, and pleads most eloquently for the emancipation of women from their state of servitude, his minute directions to Caroline about household affairs, whenever he leaves home, look as if he had readily assumed the manly superiority of his countrymen.

Paul, while he describes in *Seibenkas*, with exquisite penetration, the miseries of an ill-assorted union, asserts that he shall be "happy if one falls to his lot, upon whose opened eyes and heart the flowery earth and beaming heaven strike, not in infinitesimals, but in large and towering masses for whom the great whole is something more than a nursery or ball-room; one who, with a feeling at once tender and discriminating, with a heart at once pious and large, for ever improves the man whom she has wedded."*

The coldest of Richter's biographers speaks thus of Caroline: "Purity of mind, unlimited love to her parents and sisters, and benevolence to all mankind, were native to her. She added inexpressible reverence for Richter, and unconditional submission to his wishes. With a love for all that was beautiful in art, she had very moderate views of the value of the *outward* in life; great enthusiasm of feeling, and through trial and experience a penetrating knowledge of the world, but with an accomplished education, and almost unlimited resources within herself, her outward life and appearance was modest, and without pretension. With their peculiar education, Caroline and her sisters possessed qualities singularly adapted to form the happiness of domestic life, but to Caroline only, Providence granted this satisfaction."†

* I fear Paul's Caroline will be despised by the *fashion* of our age, if I should translate a letter, where he tells Otto, that she ripped a dress apart, dyed it herself, put it together again, and wore it the next evening, in a large party. And yet her father's house was filled with the most valuable works of art, and Caroline could herself read Plato in Greek.

† The eldest sister of Caroline had been already three years married to Carl Spazier, who was at this time the editor of a *belles-lettres* newspaper, (*Eleganten Zeitung*.) in Leipzig. After a marriage of many outward difficulties, he left her a destitute widow, with four young children. She entered upon a thorny path of female authorship, and continued the literary journal. Jean Paul contributed many of his ephemeral pieces to its pages, and Caroline also assisted her with her elegant and graceful

She was marked out indeed for distinguished happiness, and the biographer goes on to say, "that no female nature could have resisted Paul. The enchantment of his smile, and the power, the magnetic influence of his eye—the inspiration and elevation that was throned upon his brow; the musical, but touchingly tender intonations of his voice, together with the mystery that involved the author of *Hesperus*, who was thought to have lived upon a solitary island; all this would have given every woman, without exception, to his hand, and Caroline had the felicity to be chosen from all."

She had beside the happiness of being chosen by him, the guarantee of that happiness, from the fact that, in spite of the seductions that had surrounded him at a time when the bonds of domestic society were every where falling loose, he had passed through all, with a singular purity of life; among all the women, who, as his biographer says, "would have left at his call, lover or husband," not one had *suffered* *in reputation*, on his account.*

CHAPTER VII.

RICHTER'S PETITION TO THE KING OF PRUSSIA.—MARRIAGE.—
CAROLINE'S LETTERS FROM WEIMAR.

OUR Richter had never been so happy as the few A. D. 1801,
aged 38. months after his betrothment to Caroline. The learned and social circles of Berlin had many charms for

1. The author, to whom I have been indebted in this biography, F. to Spazier, is her son.

The youngest sister, Ernestine, married about the same time with Caroline, to August Mahlman, died, after a few years of married life, of a broken heart; occasioned, as her nephew says, by an unfaithful husband and a childless marriage.

* Such enthusiasm for an author would be incredible, had we not recently seen in our own circle, in the visit of Mr. Dickens, the enthusiasm the genius alone excites, without the accessories of fortune or rank, any claim except that which appeals directly to the heart: the dedication of human affections, and human relations, the touches of nature to make the whole world kindred.

him. They were composed, as he says, of Jews, ministers, officers, learned men and women. Tieck, Fichte, and the Schlegels showed themselves so friendly that he believed, in his simplicity, he should win that school to himself. The merely learned only, displeased him. To use his own figurative language: "The roots of their dry deism were planted in sand, and bore only withered leaves and no flowers; and no breath of perfume came from them." But he conceived the warmest esteem for *Schliermacher*, whose "*Reden über Religion*" he calls "an inspired and inspiring work, a simple and beautiful temple, whose contents are a true God's service."

At this time, spite of their philosophical differences, the exalted character of Fichte attached Jean Paul intimately to him. He also renewed his acquaintance with Madam von Krudener.

From the exciting tumult of the society of the great, where he was courted and admired, he turned with a sense of domestic tranquillity to the quiet circle in which his betrothed moved. This, from the circumstance of the separation of her parents, was necessarily limited, although they were not excluded from any.

The queen had presented them, through the medium of her brother George, upon hearing of the betrothment of Richter and Caroline Meyer, a costly service of silver—but nothing more useful or enduring appeared in prospect.

In the mean time, the spring returned; but without some pecuniary provision Richter could not afford to remain in Berlin.

"Is there none," said old Gleim, "is there none who can say to the king, we must keep J. P. F. R. in Berlin? He does you honor, and will bring money into the city. Is there none who will be a Colbert? no Scholenburg? no Hardenburg? no Voss? not even the queen?"

Richter at last, though reluctantly, addressed the following letter to the king:

"May your royal majesty be graciously moved to listen to the prayer of a man, that not only from dwelling under your government, but from birth and disposition, rejoice in the happiness of your reign. The loss of my father was never *to me*, but *through me*, supplied to my family. I was already a writer at the age when men begin to read. Through years of poverty and labor, I at last won a hearin

from the public, and lately a more extensive audience. My aim has been to elevate the sinking faith in God, virtue, and immortality, and in an age of egotism and revolutions, to warm again the cold humanity of men's hearts. As this object has been dearer to me than any other reward, I have sacrificed every other; time, health, and the richer winnings of other pursuits.

"But now, when I am entering upon the cares of marriage, where my own sacrifices should not extend to another, I feel excused by my conscience if I petition the throne (that has so many to listen to, and to make happy) that I also may be excused, if respectfully I submit my prayer. My gratitude, and joyful sympathy in the happiness of my country will be the same, however justice and goodness may decide."

The king, in answer, gave Richter to understand, through one of his courtiers, "how much it had rejoiced him to observe, that by his talent and industry alone, exercised in the face of such unfavorable outward circumstances, he had placed himself at the head of the literature of his country. He was not indifferent to literary merit, and would be glad to have Richter remain his subject; and if any vacant prebend should offer, he would remember him."

It seems to us almost a degradation of genius like Richter's, that he should have petitioned in *vain* for a small ecclesiastical benefice, for (although some humorous letters passed between him and Otto on the subject—Richter saying "that he should place watchmen on the church towers to strike the *last hours* of the old prebends," and Otto answering, "that they were always long-lived, few dying under a hundred years,") he received no prebend. He would have been fettered also under the obligation to remain in Prussia. Accordingly, on the 27th of May, after a private solemnization of their marriage, Richter and his young bride left the dust and noise of the city to enjoy, in quiet and without witnesses, their long dreamed-of happiness.

They travelled in the month of bloom and flowers over the beautiful parts of Dessau, visited the Herders in Weimar, and then went to Meiningen, where Jean Paul anticipated for a time to establish his "*Portative Parnassus*."

Here is the letter of Caroline to her father, a week after her marriage:

“ Weimar, June 8, 1801.

“ I write to you, my beloved father, for the first time, from the most charming resting place. We arrived last evening, about 8 o'clock, after the most delightful journey that was ever taken, except the pain of the separation from you, that often made me insensible to many lovely spots. But the care that my good Richter took of me, and of every thing that could touch my heart, softened my emotions gently and happily ! Indeed, there are few such men—so sympathizing and attentive to the smallest little things, and to all the *actual* of life.

“ As we approached Weimar, my heart began to beat. The place, beautifully surrounded with hills, lies low, and we look from above all over the city. It is larger and gayer than I expected, and there is much life and joy every where. In the morning the market was held before our door, where there was more tumult than in the Berlin market, and the music at the Stadthouse imparts a cheerful gayety that is read on all faces.

“ But now, the most delightful thing that could have happened. As soon as we arrived on Wednesday evening, we went to Herder's. It was already dark. With a beating heart I stepped into the sacred house. The aged mother sat in the parlor alone, knitting. Richter opened the door quietly, and we stood before her. Her surprise is not to be described. She looked at me with astonishment—ran to call all the house together—turned back—and knew not what to do for joy. Now while we debated whether Richter alone, or whether we should both go up to the Herders at once, the venerable man stood in the door. I discovered him first. ‘ There he is,’ I said with emotion. He stepped calmly near, and turned me with penetrating eyes towards the light, and as he looked fixedly at me, ‘ God be praised,’ he said, ‘ I am now satisfied.’ He was surprised ; he had formed no image of me, and he doubted whether Richter would be happy. He loves me now equally with him, and he was as much moved as a father who has found his lost children. He went in great emotion up and down the apartment—then he came again to me, and said with touching tenderness, ‘ yes, you are what *he* must have—you need not speak, we see already all !’ I was so much affected, that I could say nothing, and the evening passed like a quiet festival.

“ I tell you all, my dear father, for Richter wishes it, just

as it happened, for it will make you happy to know your daughter so beloved; and principally, that we both know from this sympathy how much Richter deserves to be loved.

"This is infinite—here is his home. Father and mother dwell with the deepest warmth upon what he mutually feels for them, and he appears more splendid to me than ever. Indeed, I might from this moment date a new era in my love.

"I cannot describe Herder to you; through Richter you know enough of him. He goes quietly in and out, so reflective, so serious, so harmonious, so gentle and musical his voice, his dress so patriarchal. He does not affect me as other poetical men, as notwithstanding he has an iron firmness and decision that makes weakness blush before him, he manifests the refined politeness of a man of the world, without being insincere. He has so much dignity as not to pardon the slightest insult, because he esteems the dignity of human nature, not on account of his individual worth, for he is so modest that he veils his eyes like a young girl who is praised for the first time, if his own merit is spoken of.

"His wife has far exceeded my expectations. She has not the masculine form, but only the manly soul that I anticipated. She has risen with her husband, but she stands firm by herself. She is equally acquainted with ancient and modern literature, speaks decidedly upon all the sciences, but inclines herself in a loving, motherly manner to me. In her house she is very active and busy, but without littleness. A certain well-to-do-ness rules, without luxury. The apartments are simply, but cheerfully furnished. At the table every thing goes on quietly, without anxiety in the hostess; the old servants are well trained, moving reverently about, observing attentively the master's wishes. They will hardly let me part from them, but we are so inexpressibly happy in the little quiet apartment with Richter's old hostess, that we would always rather remain alone. So happy as I am, dearest father, I never believed I should be. Every minute binds our souls closer to each other. It will sound extravagant to you if I say, the high enthusiasm which Richter excited in me, has continually risen as we have entered into real life together. Never can a misunderstanding arise between us. My mind, through love and the highest goodness, is so tenderly tuned, and my sense of obligation so elevated, that I never as formerly despond. How could I place my

will in opposition to this splendid humanity that works only through love and humility? Thank God, I have a husband with whom love in married life can only take the path of honor and morality; one that I must obey, as we obey virtue itself. And this man so loves me! that I have nothing to wish but that we may die together. I press myself to your heart."

It is but just, although at the risk of satiety, that the reader should also learn, from Richter himself, the perfect happiness that he imparts to Otto, thus unreservedly:

"That the brightest and purest fountain of love to mankind takes nothing from love to the individual, I learn from my Caroline. Every day it becomes more expansive. Rare as beautiful is her adoration of the spiritual, of poetry and nature; wonderful her disinterestedness and complete abnegation of self. There is nothing that she would not do for me, or others. World-long cares are to her nothing, as her industry and love of duty are infinite. As she loves me, she loves all my clothes, and would make them all herself.

"As yet we have had nothing, or only very little to irritate. I cannot say that I am satisfied, but I am certainly *blest*. Ah, see her! What are words! Marriage has made me love her more romantically, deeper, *infinitely more* than before!"



CHAPTER VIII.

RESIDENCE IN MEININGEN.—LETTERS.—BIRTH OF RICHTER'S FIRST CHILD.—DOG'S PETITION.

A. D. 1802,
aged 39.

As soon as our Richter and his bride had accomplished what, in modern phrase, is called the bridal tour, they hastened to the enjoyment of what had always been his ideal dream, complete social independence, in immediate union with nature. His inclinations drew him to Bayreuth to be near his friend Otto; but he felt almost a maiden diffidence to expose the intoxication of his love, in the first year of his married life, to his old female friends. He wished, also, until the *Titan* was completed, to be near

the accessories of princely life, which the little court of Meiningen, retired as it was, could furnish.

They established themselves in Meiningen, therefore, and here Jean Paul began that domestic still life, that remained uninterrupted till the day of his death.

A letter from Caroline to Otto, a few days after their entrance into their new abode, shows the delicacy and tact of the woman, who felt that she had almost taken the place of her husband's friend in his heart.

" 'When you have taken your seat at Meiningen, I shall step from mine and go to you.' So you write to us. Richter has already established himself, and waits for the beloved Otto to make the promise true, and come and fall upon his heart. My husband leaves the invitation to me, and the information that we are ready, and that you can now, without any hindrance, accept it.

"Our young furnishing, now five days old, has a thousand wants; yet you will find Richter's chamber ordered after the old fashion, as he has altered nothing, and you will feel at home. Mine is also domestic and friendly—*yours* alone is wholly poor, that you may not remain there long, but be always ready to come to us. I am a docile being, and will always exactly obey your wishes. You shall arrange all after your own domestic order. We will be melancholy or gay, and we will celebrate our second marriage-day, when our union, through the presence of our friend, is first truly consecrated.

"Rest is inexpressibly welcome to my husband after a three weeks' journey. We suffered ourselves to be detained fourteen days in Weimar, for the sake of the charming little dwelling of the good hostess, and through the love of the Herders. In Gotha we received Schlichtgeroll's hearty greeting, and the following evening we selected a little dwelling in Meiningen, where we could unpack. Now we only wait for the rising of the sun, and the appearance—dare I say it—of *our* friend."

A letter from Paul, of a later date, to the same friend, completes the picture of domestic life. "My Caroline, who wins the love of all—of the men by her beauty, and of the women through her enchanting truth and goodness, constrains me, by happiness, to be contented here. We have the whole place for friends. Her indeed, too great indifference to *outward* life, her absorption in quiet employment,

her heavenly, faithful, virgin love, her *unconditional* compliance with my lightest wish, makes our love yet younger and fresher than in the beginning, when it was *merely* young. That you will fall in love with her, is only too certain. I feel that marriage is something holy and heavenly.

"As yet I find no trouble. If I have a guest, I seem to sit here as a guest myself, so elegantly and completely my Caroline knows how to order every thing. *You* cannot know the whole value of a married union, as you have always lived with sisters, and never, like myself, alone.

"The whole of the next month will be beautiful. God send me you or Emanuel, or I shall go to you in the autumn with Caroline."

A letter from Caroline to her father follows:—"O my best father, how do I thank you that you have at length written! I was on the point of writing again. My husband, as we sat together, was speaking of the incomprehensibility of your silence—"Could there be a letter mislaid?" when the maid brought in yours, and that of Gretchen's. With how many tears have I read the dear words. I live so simply calm, that I hold fast every thing that was ever dear to me—and your image! how it takes hold of me. How often, in spirit, do I lean upon your shoulder! But that it renders me too melancholy for the happiness of my beloved husband, nature often makes me so tender, that in very long-
ing after you and my mother, I should sometimes weep.

"I came here with uncertain, timid expectations. The duchess of Meiningen received us with extreme joy, and showed us many houses; but this made me really melancholy, and the first night I slept not at all, for all my fine dreams of domestic economy were destroyed. This little city is not so ideal as I had imagined; few of the houses have gardens, and only very small courts. The rooms are large, with many windows, and very high.

"In the morning we went in pursuit of cheaper and more simple dwellings, and were so happy as to find one, isolated, but with very respectable domestic conveniences. As quickly as possible we were in it. My helpful, never-failing good-humored husband arranged his own chamber, I mine, and thus we were at the end of the first day apparently in order. The rest I could complete with all leisure, and now the clock-work of our little domestic life goes on without stopping. Our maid is active, and, I hope, good.

"My husband is perpetually satisfied with all as it is, and I form myself so willingly after his wishes, that in my heart I feel the intimate and sweet conviction that I can be to him all that he needs. Let me repeat, that I am every day happier—there is nothing without or within to disturb us. Now when the moments of enthusiasm are over, you will believe that my judgment is sound. Richter is the purest, the holiest, the most godlike man that lives. Could others be admitted, as I am, to his inmost emotions, how much more would they esteem him. There are moments when my soul lies kneeling before him, and I fear only death. Every one finds him stronger and fresher. He is also calmer than he was in Berlin, and his life is more regular. We rise about six, and dine at twelve o'clock. At the latest, Richter goes to bed at ten. From principle and economy he has left off wine, and drinks only beer. He is in every thing at the same time so kind and so firm. . . ."

The reader will, perhaps, think there is too much of these domestic letters—but how beautifully are they the unstudied expression of that chaste, meek, and enduring love that belongs almost exclusively to domestic life, in which Caroline's heart was nourished, as the flowers are fed from the light and the dew of heaven.

Only one more letter of this period shall find a place here. It is a little note that Caroline wrote to her husband when he had taken a short journey to Leibenstein. It was their first separation, and in answer to a line from him. "Ah! could I fall on thy heart, and thank thee that thou hast thought of me! I stood exactly in the same place on the floor, covering the little *Spinde* with gauze, when your letter came. As you left me yesterday in the carriage, it seemed to my childish fancy that the stranger Jean Paul, that did not belong to me, sat there, and how deserted I felt, all was so empty and void. I stifled my regret, and went into your chamber, and put every thing in order. Your handkerchief, just left, had yet some warmth in it, and I took it with me. Then I had nothing more to care for, and I felt a great loneliness. I took up the unbound part of *Titan*, and have, indeed, read it wholly through. How often did I sink at your feet as I read, and I looked opposite to your sofa, as if my voice would reach you. Ah, I do not deserve you, and am in myself nothing.

"To-day I wrote letters. It is wonderfully still in our

quiet dwelling. No one has been here, and only the newspaper yesterday. In the cellar all stands in military order. It gives me joy to obey you when you are distant. How heavenly will our meeting be.

"God take thee into his holy protection. May the sunbeams kiss thee, and I be worthy to deserve thy heart. Farewell! my soul, my heaven!"

The eighteen months Richter passed at Meiningen, flowed with that quiet uniformity that Caroline loved no less than her husband. Jean Paul was so much sought after by the duke, that Caroline mourns over his too frequent absences from her; and Paul writes to Otto, "I never believed that a prince would be my friend—but the duke is nearly that, although I refuse his frequent evening invitations, sometimes as many as six in a week. He comes to us often, and lately he dined with us. He would build me a house here, which God forbid, as I seek no eternity in Meiningen."

In the winter of this year Paul went with the duke to Oberland in a sleigh. In Newhouse, he says, they gave us, in an amateur theatre, a comedy by four peasants. "It was performed three times in the day, as the place was too small to admit many, and the old company went out, as fresh came in. From time to time, as the duke and the prince of Hesse Philipsthal sat among the peasants, a jug of good beer was passed backwards and forwards, from which all drank in turn."

One letter more from Meiningen, of September, 1802, and we close this chapter.

"Dear old friend. Your expressions over my wife touched me deeply. You should have had, as of a princess, the *diarium* of her double life—but indeed it lasts no longer. This very night she had, with her still continued blooming health, pains that prevented sleep. In the morning the midwife (an accomplished one from Jena) declared that in two hours the birth would take place. About eleven o'clock it was followed by a godlike little daughter. Heavens! you will be as transported as I was, when the nurse brought me, as out of a cloud, my second love, with the blue eyes wide open, a beautiful high brow, kiss-lipped, heart-touching, and with the little nose of my Caroline.

"God is near at the birth of every child. Who does

not find him in this incomprehensible mechanism of pain, in this sublimity of his exquisite machinery, in this prostration of our own independence, *will never* find him. I concealed, to spare my wife, as well as I could, my weeping admiration, but she perceived, and returned much of it. In my solitary apartment I had (ah, how I wished for you or Emanuel,) only my own rapture, and God, and my hound.

"It is a large child, splendidly formed, wholly like myself, which rejoices my Caroline, but I hold modestly back from the little nose. Only on her account did I wish for a boy—but I tell her a girl will be dearer to me, as our parental education would not wholly answer for a boy, but for a girl it will be every thing; and with this pure, firm and enlightened mother, she can be nothing less than a second diamond.

"Now is all again well with me—and the world and heaven are open, and I have my wife again. In the midst of her pain she yet brought me my breakfast this morning. Ah, how do I again learn to esteem and pity the poor women. I have the best people about me—the pastor's daughter, without equal—the honest waiting woman, &c. Let me prattle, good old friend, to you and Amone—you are the first listeners.

"To-day I went to the duke, and asked him to give a title to the fairest work I should ever give to the public. He answered, 'Georgine.*' Truly, he sympathizes kindly with human feelings."

Caroline added to this letter, with the child on her left arm. "Beloved Otto! who is so blest as I? with two, so dear, to love! C."

One other little incident belongs to the Meiningen residence. On account of the hunting season all the dogs of citizens were put under arrest. Richter, in his attachment to these faithful friends of man, if not in some other characteristics, resembled Scott, and was always accompanied in his rambles by one or more dogs. Upon the decree of arrest being published, he sent his hound to the duke with the following *petition*:

"That I may accompany my master when he goes to Welkershausen or to Grimmathal.

"I can bring attestation from my master that I under-

* George was the prince's own name.

stand as little of hunting as he does, and that I keep close behind his stick in all his rambles. And the only game that I permit myself, is what the government advertiser recommends, sometimes a poor field-mouse.

"That I shall lose my bread if my master dare not place me outside his door, where is, indeed, my only station. I constitute his animal establishment: his poultry, pheasantry, and his body guard. You love him half as much as he does you, and often, when you have been with him, you have had the grace to stroke me, poor hound, and to say, 'Come, Spitz!' Thus will I confide in my fortunate *dogstar*, that it will permit, before I am cut into shoes, and worn on the feet of others, that I may appear before your gracious presence upon my own."

The petition was granted, and Paul was permitted to keep his dog.

At the same time with the poet's first child, the last volume of *Titan* was given to the world. It had been ten years in progress, and during that time the author had printed several minor works.



CHAPTER IX.

TITAN.

I APPROACH this great work with diffidence, with real humility, and feel that I am entirely incompetent to give to the English reader a just idea of a work so thoroughly German, so difficult for him to appreciate, and yet by which Jean Paul, if he is read at all, is usually appreciated in this country. In speaking of it, I shall be somewhat indebted to the author from whom I have already quoted.

In the ten years during which *Titan* had been in progress, Jean Paul had published several works, all of which had been in subordination to this. His commentator says, "that of this, the *Invisible Lodge* was the cradle, and the others, as they followed, only the educators." And as I have said before, it was like the great picture to which all the serious and sacred hours of the painter are devoted, while others of less

note, take up his casual moments, and are the nurses of the inspiration that is lavished upon this.

The great idea of Titan, is that which so many poets and romance writers have endeavored to represent, and which Goethe has so nobly evolved in Faust—the limitations and compensations of life—that all power as soon as it aims to exceed its just bounds, breaks down; that all who would violate the laws of eternal justice, necessarily fail. Hence the title of the book, taken from the contest of the ancient Titans against the gods. “Every heaven-stormer finds his hell, as sure as every mountain its valley.” In *Albano*, the hero of the novel, Richter has accomplished the object twice attempted before without success (in the *Invisible Lodge*, and in *Hesperus*), through birth, education, trial and experience, to form a perfectly harmonious character. He is not, like Victor, a man *seeming* and feeling only, but a man of deeds, and unites with the highest love the highest sphere of action. He is not merely an *æsthetic* example, but a real character, in which life and action are identified with poetic representation.” And yet he does not, I think, enlist so much the sympathies of the reader as Victor in *Hesperus*; his treatment of Linda is perhaps too harsh and stern.

The great dissonance in Titan has probably prevented many from going beyond the first volume. During the composition of the first half of the first volume, the author intended to give it the tragicomic character of some of his other works, and that the comic should enter largely into its composition. But his visit to Weimar, and, in consequence, his enlarged range of characters, especially his connection with Madam von Kalb, induced him to change his plan; to make it a serious romance, and reserve the satirical and comic elements for an appendix. Through the last half of the first volume, he is apparently contending with the witty and anti-thetic manner of his early works.

The outline of the story is this. Two German principalities, Hohenflies and Haarhaar, are in contention for the succession—each has a supporter. Haarhaar, *the German gentleman*, Von Bouverot, as he is called, a gambler, a voluptuary, but connoisseur in art, who follows Luigi, the pretended only son of the Hohenflies prince, to Italy, and there by every kind of excess subjects him to a lingering dissolution. The supporter of the Hohenflies dynasty is the knight Don Gaspard de Cesara, who in addition to his devotion to the

old prince, the father of Luigi, is influenced by personal revenge for having been refused the hand of a Haarhaar princess. To preserve *Albano*, the second son of the old prince of Hohenflies, from the arts that administered a slow and consuming poison to the life of Luigi, his birth is concealed, and he is educated as the son of Don Gaspard; his parents having entered into a bond that at the death of Luigi, the claims of his birth shall be established, and that he shall marry Linda, the daughter of Don Gaspard. To keep up the deception, that Albano is his son, Gaspard gives himself out as the guardian of his daughter Linda. She is called the countess de Romero, and is left in Spain with her mother, where every thing conspires to nurse and increase the eccentricity and romantic enthusiasm of her character. Her mother soon dies: Linda is left without female influence, and at liberty to travel wherever her love of independence leads her. She accordingly goes to Switzerland, and there, in the solitude of the mountains, endeavors to establish a school of industry and innocence. Not succeeding, she removes to Italy, and nourishes her passion for the beautiful, by living in the midst of the monuments of art, in that exquisite climate.

Albano, whose parents were travelling at the time, was born, together with a twin sister, at Isola Bella, where he remains until the death of his mother, in his third year. He is then taken to Germany as the son of Don Gaspard, and placed in the family of Wehrfritz, the provincial director, as their foster-son. He remains secluded in the country, until his eighteenth year, and, on account of his resemblance to his father, the old prince, is not permitted to visit Pestitz, the capital of Hohenflies. He grows up a powerful, pure, innocent, well instructed youth, endowed with the most brilliant and attractive qualities, and with a beauty of person that charms every beholder. While a country recluse he has that longing for love and friendship, the intense thirst for intercourse with great spirits, that Richter makes a characteristic of all his heroes; and forms in imagination an attachment both of love and friendship with the son and daughter of the court minister *Fraulay*, through the medium of their instructors, who give lessons at the same time to all the young people.

Don Gaspard, with his knowledge of the romantic character of Linda, and by the help of his brother, an alchemist,

ventriloquist, juggler, and liar, makes use of magical means, deceptive glasses, and voices issuing apparently from the clouds, to accomplish his object, the union of Albano with his daughter; and although, from consciousness and pride, (for the same means are practised on Albano,) they avoid each other, yet, when they accidentally meet, a mysterious influence draws them irresistibly together.

Before this takes place, however, the death of the old prince and the elevation of Luigi, although dying slowly, allows Albano to go to Pestitz. With his fresh, beautiful, ingenuous character, he cements his secretly-formed friendship with *Roquairol*, the son of the minister, and his love for Liana is confirmed by her beautiful feminine nature. The first love of these young people is one of the most touching episodes in all Richter's works. It is a Romeo and Juliet, written and performed in heaven. Liana is one of those spiritual beings, with angelic souls, and almost transparent bodies, that Richter loved to draw: disinterested, religious, humble, sacrificing all to duty, and suffering without a murmur. She lives one fleeting spring of happiness, in which her love, hidden like the perfume of the violet in the heart of the flower, is breathed only in whispers; and when opposed by her fiend-hearted father and her cruel mother, though sensitive as the wind-flower, she remains true to Albano, and will only renounce her love when informed of his royal birth. But with her love she renounces life; and the death of the young, usually so sad, is here beuiled of melancholy by the beautiful mysticism that surrounds it with spiritual existences, and clothes Liana with the robes of angels, before she leaves her mortal investment.

Albano is taken from the death-bed of Liana to Italy, where he meets Linda. Through various influences, she has given up a dazzling and enchanting being. Albano, rich in fancy and full of love for all that is beautiful, is instantly captivated. The character of Linda is said to have been modelled from that of Madam von Kalb. She is bold, proud, free, with an infinite generosity and nobility of soul. Her glowing Spanish heart and Italian imagination have never been restrained by the conventionalisms of courtly society. Like Madam von Kalb, she gives way to fits of passionate jealousy; like her, she avows the peculiar æsthetic philosophy upon love—"that love needs not the bond of marriage, that, like an iron ring upon a delicate flower,

checks and destroys its tender bloom." She has also Madam von Kalb's doubts upon the immortality of the soul and even her occasional blindness, which in poor Linda led to such fatal consequences.

Albano's powerful character subdued Linda's pride with the most childlike love she yielded her independence and her haughty nature seemed to melt away under the sun of love. In their various journeys in Italy, to Ischia, Isola Bella, and the palace and gardens of Borromeo, Richter has almost surpassed Madam de Staël. These glowing descriptions are more unique from the circumstance of his never having visited the places; he was wholly indebted to the duchess Amelia for the perfumed Italian breath of the whole, which cold reality would have chilled.

We come now reluctantly to the evil genius of the romance, Roquairol, the son of Froulay and brother of Liane. He is a child of the times, a victim of the vicious institutions of society, and of an unsuitable education. Richter in this character has furnished us with almost a prophetic example of those artistic paintings, of which we have seen so many since his death; in France even in the times in which we live. An example, where the culture of the mind, without the attendant culture of the heart, is carried so far as to excite and mislead the judgment of the wisest. An association of intelligence and crime, of artistic power of the imagination united with perversity of heart to mar and destroy all the beauty of the painting. But Jean Paul has not, as other authors of such characters, painted his hero half angel, half devil; he has made him wholly hateful: he has not, like Lovelace, the charm of graceful manners; nor like Byron's heroes, the attraction of personal beauty; he excites no sentiment but that of aversion, and when he falls in pity even cannot regret his fate. At the age of twelve, he conceived a violent passion for Linda, and attempted even then to shoot himself, because the little girl turned her back upon him and expressed her aversion. Upon her return from Italy, and when Albano's claims to her hand were acknowledged, he determined to add revenge upon Albano to the fatal resentment of his murderous love. A slight contest arose between the lovers, occasioned by Linda's quickness of resentment, and Albano absented himself for a few days. According to a psychological law of love, Linda is now more tender than ever, and her cold independence melt

under the thought of estrangement. Roquairol forges Albano's handwriting, and asks for an interview. Deceived by his counterfeiting the voice and dress of Albano, and by her evening blindness; seduced also by her own views of love, that it should yield all without the bond of marriage, the superb and proud Linda surrenders *all* to the madness of Roquairol!

With the boldness of despair, he has the whole history of his love, and its catastrophe, performed in a tragedy he had already written, and at the end of the fourth act shoots himself. Linda, crushed in body and soul, retires for ever to her living tomb! and Don Gaspard, who had thought to make use of men as the instruments to accomplish his ambitious purposes, disappears from the scene.

But the romance does not end thus tragically and hopelessly. Albano, falling twice in love and twice subdued—by the physical death of Liana, and the moral death of the noble Linda—rises again above his fate. The death of his brother, Luigi, takes place at this moment. Educated as one of the people, and prepared to regenerate the corrupt dynasty to which he belongs, and to pour healing streams into the impure society of the time, he ascends the throne, and becomes a benefactor and reformer.

Idoine, a princess of Haarhaar, who had made a voluntary vow, never to marry beneath her rank; and in a little province of her own had created a paradise, where pure morals, religion, industry and happiness prevailed; with a strong, rational, yet tender and beautiful nature, bears also a striking personal resemblance to Liana,—and the romance ends with her union with Albano.

This is a rough outline of the plan and action of *Titan*. Within it revolves much that is great and beautiful and touching in life; almost all the errors, and sorrows, and pains of humanity; love, in all its forms, from its delicate fragrance, like that of the lily of the valley, to the volcanic flame that burns and destroys; nature, in the idyllic simplicity of German village life, in ornamented parks and gardens, in Alpine mountains, and in the intoxication of spring in the Italian climate; art, from the breathing tones of the statue to the noble beauty of Grecian sculpture; poetry, delicate irony, hidden satire, and broad humor.

Throughout the whole work an elevated poetic justice is reserved; not the common conventional justice that de-

mands vice to be punished and virtue rewarded *in this world* but a deeper philosophy, in which the mind itself, and the affections, though crushed and disappointed, are their own reward. Thus Albano, twice broken-hearted, stands at last great in himself and in his own integrity, with the bride he had chosen from her resemblance to his first love, upon the elevation his experience and trials, and his own great qualities fitted him to adorn.

Liana, the humble, pure, gentle being, the victim of an unsuitable education; too tender for the winter of this rough life, is happy in death, because she feels that Albano will be thus restored to his birthright, and by a beautiful spiritual mysticism she will still be the protecting guardian of her earthly love.

It is only against the fate of the romantic and proud Linda that every reader rebels. Richter received many letters entreating him to alter or avert it. Jacobi even threatened him with the loss of his friendship if he left her under the sentence of this moral death. But Richter adhered to his purpose, which was to give a lesson of humility to those who, strong in self-reliance, throw aside the guards of custom, the sanction of laws, as unnecessary to their more refined and spiritual natures. But Linda even in the moment of her humiliating grief, is consoled by the momentary belief that Albano may be her brother, and that she may have been saved from a deeper and more terrible fate.

Many other characters revolve around these, the principal in the drama. Schoppe, the former Leibgeiber, appears again, crazed by the philosophy of Fichte, ever accompanied and trying in vain to escape from his *Ich* (me); Dian, Greek artist, and his simple and affectionate Greek wife existing in an atmosphere of beauty; the minister's lady cold and ascetic; the princess bride of Luigi, a malicious and heartless coquette; Spener, the court chaplain, proud of his sanctity, and of his spiritual power, etc. etc.

The four volumes of the *Titan* were printed in three successive years. Great, indeed, was the disappointment of the reading public, when, after ten years of expectation, the first volume made its appearance. The discrepancy between its first and last portions, displeased both parties of Richter's admirers. Those who loved Jean Paul's earlier manner were disappointed to lose it, and the admirers of his serious romances were displeased at the intrusion of the comic into

ts. The second volume, containing the episode of Liana, appeared at the end of a year, and was violently condemned as sentimental, mystical, too much in the style of the fashionable weeping school of fiction. When at length the last two volumes came out, disclosing the moral annihilation of Linda, indignation was added to disappointment. Just then the battle of Jena occurred, and more important concerns took its place with the reading public. Like all *really* great works *Titan* has survived the popular disapprobation; and the more it is read the more it will be acknowledged a work of exalted genius, pure morality, and perennial beauty.

Spazier, whom I have so often quoted, tells us, that in the last weeks of the poet's life, when he was engaged with his friend in a revision of his whole works for a new edition, Schlegel had determined, by an earlier development and more psychological analysis of the character of Linda, to show, that with her previously-formed opinions and education, the catastrophe was unavoidable, and to illustrate more fully the axiom, "that character and destiny are the same thing."

How much it is to be regretted he did not live to fulfil his intention; that an author, who touches the sick heart so tenderly, that if for purposes of art he must lay bare the most recesses of weakness and frailty, covers them again in the cutting air of scorn, with the downy, warm breast of pity and love, should have left a passage that cannot be closed without deep mortification and pain.

The coincidence between this work and the *Clarissa* of Richardson is remarkable; the catastrophe similar. One, indeed, induced by the lethargy of the mind, the other by that of the physical powers, each leaving the soul unstained. In both instances the authors were assailed with reproaches and letters, entreating them to alter or conceal the fate of their heroines, but each, for purposes of higher than conventional morality, adhered inflexibly to his original plan.*

* The machinery of ventriloquism and jugglery introduced into *Titan* mars its beauty, confuses the attention of the reader, does not help the development of character, and most readers would prefer to have it wholly omitted.

CHAPTER X.

RICHTER LEAVES MEININGEN.—REMOVES TO COBURG.—BIRTH
OF HIS SON.—DEATH OF HERDER.—“FLEGELYAHRE.”—
REUTH.

A. D. 1803,
aged 40. THE work that succeeded the *Titan*, the “*Flegelyahre*,” is perhaps the most personal of all the works of the poet. While writing it, his desire to return to the place of his birth, the land of his youthful hopes and dreams, became irrepressible.

He would not let the duke of Meiningen become acquainted with his wish from any other lips than his own; he wrote to him, therefore, “that, like wandering rats in the spring, he felt an irresistible instinct to move, and that with wife, and child, and hound, he should depart in May, and draw nearer to the *Fichtelgebirge*.”

The duke answered, “that he was not enough of a naturalist to understand the species of wandering rats called geniuses, though he believed he knew *one* genius sufficient to call him his friend.” He gave his consent with extreme reluctance, and Paul found it difficult to resist his earnest entreaties, and his princely offer to build him a convenient dwelling, to let him import his favorite *Bayreuth beer*, free from impost, and to add every new book to his library. The solitude of Meiningen oppressed him; but his first removal was only to Coburg, a short distance from the prince, and a stage nearer to the attraction of the mountain magnet, and the friend Otto.

The year that Richter dwelt in Coburg has been passed over in silence by his biographers. No reason has been given why he selected this small city, and there appears to have been no person there who could lend attraction to such a residence. But it was marked by two events that affected him deeply, the birth of his son, and the death of his friend Herder.

This last, the death of Herder, cast a deep shadow that reached him and his domestic joys. He had loved and revered none like Herder, and no author had had so much influence over him. Not that they resembled each other as authors, but the same deeply religious spirit inspired them both, and the aim of both was to build

to wavering faith of the age, in God, virtue and immortality."

"I would willingly," he wrote to the son of his dead friend, "I would willingly journey to his *holy sepulchre* to renew my joyful and my sad recollections of him. But what what could I still my grief when I found him no longer there? Weimar, or rather his deserted house, has made me a Jew, who can remain no longer in the city, but must, as soon as he is inscribed in the church record the birth of a child, depart, and journey onward."*

The residence in Coburg was also marked by the publication of the *Flegelyahre*. Carlyle says the word may be translated "*wild oats*," but it seems to mean the same as "*Vanderyahre*," or *apprenticeship*, as Goethe uses it in "*Leister*."

Like most of the romances of Jean Paul, especially to the English reader, the beginning of this work will be strange, puzzling, and apparently absurd, and he will be tempted a hundred times to throw down the book in despair or contempt; but he will be well rewarded for persevering till he finds his way through the intricate labyrinth of the introduction. Paul wrote to Otto while he was writing it, "I work now with inexpressible pleasure and care upon the history of my *brothers*—of J. P. In this I can make the highest satirical leaps, and its *objectivity* gains by this."

It is said to be the most personal of all the author's works. In it he has represented his own already so often mentioned double nature, in the personal relations of *Walt* and *Vult*, twin brothers, nourished by the same mother's love, and "united in such a manner that they cannot live apart, and yet cannot look into each other's eyes, or embrace each other. They are opposite magnets that are continually drawn to each other, but meeting, are thrust asunder as positive and negative electricity." Walt,—the earnest, sentimental, ideal enthusiast, is represented as anticipating paradise in every-day life, surrounding the simplest things in nature and the most common people with a halo of poetic glory; from his simple and absent nature knowing nothing of craft, or cunning, or guile; extracting delight from every flower, even from every

* See Appendix, No. III.

weed in his path,—is twin brother to Vult, an eccentric humorist, a musician, ventriloquist, an exquisite mimic, who can take all forms, and in the inequalities of life looks with penetrating eyes only on the meanest side; knowing all too well, and despising the vices of hypocrisy, he dissects all tears to shreds every tender emotion, delighting only in the wildest sport, and allaying the thirsting emptiness of the heart with satire, wit and humor. Each seeks to gain an ascendancy over the other—Walt by the seducing and vanquishing power of pure, disinterested love; Vult by the imposing ascendancy of knowledge of society, and extensive worldly experience.

The interest of the book consists, first, in the psychological relation of the twins to each other; second, in the severe experience of life, to which the angelic and poetic nature of Walt is subjected; and third, the resemblance of the two united brothers to the double nature of the author. Both born in humble life, the good-for-nothing Vult is suddenly enlisted as a soldier—Walt, whose disposition leads him to the clerical life, is deterred from entering the church by the tears of his mother, who dreads for her son the poverty which her own life has been passed. His father, who answers to our *justice of the peace*, educates him for a lawyer.

A rich and childless man, the Croesus of the village, has become interested in Walt, by reading a poem of his, in which he describes the happiness of a *Swedish Pastor* life, and determines to put it into his power to follow his inclinations, by making him his heir. Yet he hedges around his legacy with such conditions, and places the heir in such intricate relations with avaricious and cunning executors, that the reader foresees that the noble-minded and unsuspecting Walt, through the dreaming and unworldly nature of the poet, will surrender the whole gift into their hands. By the conditions of the will he is placed in various relations with the persons into whose hands, for every fault he commits, he forfeits a part of the inheritance. His experienced and worldly-wise twin brother Vult, follows him as a shadow, and endeavors to protect him by his better knowledge, and cold experience of the world, from the blunders of his unsuspecting nature; but by a kind of poetic optimism, Walt converts every loss into a lesson of wisdom, or into an occasion for disclosing his own unselfish and beautiful nature.

Unknown to each other, and without disclosing it, they both love the same excellence in the beautifully feminine, but highborn *Wina*. Although the helpless Walt, through his earnest nature and poetical character, touches her heart, yet without the knowledge of life, and sagacity of his brother, he could never have breathed his reverential love into her ear. *Wina*, is for Walt a distant star, which he may love and worship, but never reach. It would have been as improbable as that Jean Paul should himself marry a princess. And the reason that the book breaks off so abruptly is, no doubt, that it would have violated all probability, and all German conventionalism, to have brought Walt's love for *Wina* to a favorable termination; and yet a poet could be permitted to love nothing inferior.

This was the first work that Jean Paul began and finished immediately after his marriage, when he had obtained the object of his lifelong desires; and over the whole work is thrown the charm of a serene and heavenly twilight, a soothing repose, like the disposition in which it was written. The *Flegelyahre* is the truest expression of the innermost nature of the poet—the picture of his hopes, his longings, his griefs, his disappointments; and it contains his views upon the value of his own attainments, and shows their discrepancy with the actual world in which he moved and lived.

By a German critic, it is said, "it leaves upon the mind of the reader the impression, that it is the most artistically faultless, the gentlest and most beautiful of the peculiar romances of Jean Paul." For many long years Paul cherished the illusion, that he should continue and complete his the most faultless of his works.

This seems to be the proper place to introduce a little sketch of the social group, in the midst of which Richter passed his life after his removal to the little city of Bayreuth, little city of my habitation, which I belong to on this side the grave!" at the foot of the Fichtelgebirge on the south, which took place this year. The reader will recollect, perhaps, the introductory sketch of simplicity of manners in this secluded region. Modern improvement and refinement must have been increased by Emanuel the Jew, who was cultivated and beneficent, a patron of the arts, and who lived here in a style of the most generous hospitality.

In the Otto family, originally from Hof, marriage had

made many changes. Frederica, Richter's pupil and friend, had married Wernlien, the pastor of Wunsiedel. Frederica seems to have been one of these women without fascinating qualities, but to whom every one turns and relies upon in times of difficulty and sorrow. After her marriage, Otto wrote to Richter thus: "Frederica writes that she is very much satisfied, and lives very happily with Wernlien. She has taken the reins of housekeeping completely into her own hands. All is furnished and ordered after her views, and she does not let the remarks of others make her waver. I rejoice that she has begun in this way, because the disagreeables of her situation will be softened thus, if not destroyed, and this firmness of hers is the only way.

Of Otto's own marriage, he gives Richter the following simple and naïve account. He had long been betrothed, which in Germany is the more public marriage, to Amone Herold, whose home is often mentioned as uncomfortable and uncongenial, and to whom Richter, in a delicate manner had frequently conveyed advice and consolation.

"The last day of June was my marriage day; no one had been informed that it was to take place. At five o'clock in the morning we went *alone*, as we wished, into the church. We were, believe me, through our own reflections, more elevated than we were by the mechanical exhortations of old R. I took in imagination *thee* with us, even into the sacristy, where I and my Amone were wed, and *thou*, my Richter, stood by, and gave us thy blessing. Then I led Amone back to her father for the last time, and the next morning took her away for ever. We departed from Hof. I left my brother, sleeping. We came to Bayreuth, where I intended to hire a dwelling. But Emanuel had cared for all that, and had furnished it with a completeness that extended from the greatest to the smallest things. In addition to what Amone had sent here, he had provided every thing necessary or agreeable.

"Represent to yourself our surprise, when we stepped into the apartment, and found all, even to the ink-glass and strewing sand; candles lighted upon my desk, and a barometer near them. All—from the window-curtains to the electrical machine for lighting the fire—from the smallest milk-pitcher to the largest kettle, all arranged, every thing in its place, or hanging on its nail."

Albretch, Otto's brother, a noble and generous character

who is called the old bachelor, and whom they regret leaving alone when Otto marries, saves them all anxiety on his account by becoming suddenly attached to a young lady, and marrying in a hurry, as old bachelors are too apt to do.

It was to this little circle of attached friends, living in great outward simplicity, that Richter brought his Caroline, rich in every inward and outward quality that could add to it grace or happiness.

To show the beautiful simplicity of their life, I give an extract from Otto, describing his own birth-day. He says:

"It is the first in domestic life with my Amone, and therefore, doubly dear. Truly, it is something beautiful to observe the anxious care and contrivance of a *Housfrau* to create some new pleasure, to see how in secret all is directed to one object, to create a happy surprise for her husband.

"As I arose on the ninth, and went into my own room, Amone came to meet me, with the most tender love, embraced me, and led me into the common apartment to see what she had prepared for me. There, under wreaths of flowers and kindled lights, were a large cake that she had herself made the day before; pastry and wine that her sister had sent me from Hof. All were symmetrically placed and beautiful; and on each side there lay shirts of fine holland, that she had been months before secretly employed in making, to surprise me. The love of this good, devoted being, touched me even to tears.

"The pleasure and emotion of the day were much heightened by the good Emanuel, who always gives me proofs of his esteem and love. In the afternoon, we took a long walk, and then we all assembled around his cheerful tea-table. I thought of you the whole day, my Richter, and painted to myself your future birth-days that you would, perhaps, pass with us, when we should all live together in domestic intimacy.*

* Amone Herold was one of Paul's earliest pupils, and most constant correspondents. As her marriage was childless, she gave much of her time to literary pursuits. Her first publication was a translation of Ossian. She afterwards published some novels, that her friend Paul revised. Otto often speaks of her philosophical mind; and her writings could not have been without value, as Cotta gave her two louis d'ors, nearly ten dollars, a sheet for her stories. Schindel says: "She excels in descrip-

I close this part with a letter from Richter to his wife on her first birth-day after their marriage.

“ Even now, as I would begin, tones from the *Æolian* harp come to my ear, as though they would say what I should write to thee, my beloved ! New born, for thy veiled year, which no winter, but spring clouds only conceal thy birth-day is also mine, and with wishes for thee, my own will be fulfilled. Led by quiet joys among flowers and sun beams and pure loving hearts, shall thou pass, dear one, into thy new year. O nothing shall fail thee therein ! But should all else fail, I will remain to thee fast and true ; and when thy future years are past, thou shalt say to me : ‘ You have kept the vows of love ! You have warmly loved me. We have been happy ! ’ I will be to thee father and mother. Thou shalt be the happiest of human beings, that I also may be happy ! And thus may it be for ever ; and may the Infinite hand behind the clouds, that led us together, lay its blessing upon our union, and give us only the sorrows that we can bear ! ”

tions of scenes of domestic tenderness, and is distinguished for penetration and power of acute observation.” Amone was yet living at the time of the publication of Jean Paul’s life.

PART FOURTH.

CHAPTER I.

RICHTER REMOVES TO BAYREUTH.—SOCIAL POSITION.—PERSONAL APPEARANCE AND HABITS.—FAMILY.—LETTER FROM HIS ELDEST DAUGHTER.

To return: the poet's life in Coburg, as we have already said, is a complete blank leaf in his biography. It was easy, therefore, although he says to Otto, "it is stupid to wander about with wife and children, and cook,"—yet it was natural to turn his eyes to the place that had always been the Mecca of his wishes. On the first of August, 1805, the day, Paul said, "on which, according to the old *Saga*, the Devil fell from heaven, he should return to *his* upon earth." A. D. 1804.
aged 41.

He soon found a quiet little place in Bayreuth, where the green meadows, and the sheltered valleys, and the misty mountains of his fancy, became fixed and permanent objects in his view.

In close neighborhood with Otto and Amone, and his old friend Emanuel, he hired a convenient and pretty house, consisting of four rooms and three cabinets, on the beautiful margin of the Maine, and commanding an extensive prospect of the region he loved so well. Here he lived in the most endearing social intercourse with these friends, which was uninterrupted until the day of his death.

But to Jean Paul, a place under the free and open heaven to study and muse, was almost as necessary as a shelter for his wife and children; and he was often seen,

in a fine morning, with a sack of books upon his back, a knotted staff in his hand, followed by his faithful Spitz passing through the Linden avenue that led to a hermitage far out of the city, where there was an extensive view over the valley to the Fichtelgebirge. Here was a small peasant's house, in whose upper chamber Richter had furnished a study for inclement weather. And the good *Frau* still shows the room where Richter came till the last year of his life, and endeared himself to her by good-humor and kindness.

On fine days the poet might be seen sitting not far from the house, under the overhanging linden, sunk in his own, or regarding the outward world, until the darkening twilight or his children, sent by the watchful Caroline, reminded him that it was time to call his friend Otto, who was within the sound of his voice, and return home.

With his settlement in Bayreuth, the completion of *Titan*, and the publication of the *Flegelyahre*, began a new existence in the literary, the ideal, and the actual life of Richter. He now stood in the full ripeness of his age, with an entire knowledge and complete consciousness of his relations to society; and with a rich treasure of experience both in life and in literature. But on the other hand, all his upward strivings, both in poetry and life, lay behind him. He had obtained, both in domestic life and in fame, all that he had aspired to. The ideal in these paths no longer beckoned him onwards. He had found in his Caroline, if not all a poet could *imagine*, enough to make a poet's fire-side happy; and as a father and a member of society, he had acquired an easy and honorable position, that would ever bind him in silken fetters to his home, and to the beloved soil of his native district. The calm satisfaction and contentment, the harmonious quiet, the repose and order of his life, also appear in all the works composed after the *Titan*.

Those who have followed us thus far will dwell with satisfaction on this period of Richter's life, "when with heart at once of the most sportful and the most earnest feelings; affectionate, and encompassed with the objects of his affections, diligent in the highest of all earthly tasks, the acquisition and diffusion of truth; and witnessing from his sequestered home the workings of his own mind on thousands of fellow minds, he was happy and at peace."

In his own immediate circle also, the influence of so original a mind, and a heart the truest and tenderest that ever beat, upon his children and neighborhood, must have been deep and permanent. He was an enthusiast, but no visionary; neither were his singularities the result of affectation, as writers in this country, and in England, have asserted; for affectation is founded in falsehood, and Richter was the truest of human beings. The poetry of his genius had always been reflected in his life; peace and happiness from within now showed itself in his external appearance. One of his biographers says, "He had hitherto been pale and lean, he now became stout and robust; and, had it not been that the delicately formed nose, the lovely mouth, the intellectual brow and lightning eye, remained unchanged, he would have been taken for a farmer rather than a poet."

But I must not give the reader the impression that Richter was absolutely without faults. He had persevered from the earliest time in the habit of writing down rules for conduct, and strictly regulating his whole manner of life; from this we learn his inclinations, his secret disgusts, and the faults he was most conscious of. Every line shows him full of love and generosity in all the relations of life; but with his glowing fancy and temperament of fire, he was sometimes harsh and violent, especially after long continued writing, that brought him into an excited state of mind differing from intoxication only in its cause. Against this he contended strongly; and his most troubled and penitent hours, appear to have been caused by the transgression of his resolutions on those occasions when he forgot the habitual mildness of his character. He mourned also over his violence in argument; and there are many little billets apologizing to his friends the next day, for the warmth of his opinions the previous evening. Paul loved argument, and was noted for maintaining his opinions with great warmth; he was also extremely unguarded and imprudent. The breach between him and the Schlegel school was often widened by unguarded speeches, that were caught up and repeated by curious or malicious listeners. In reference to this Paul says in his *via recta*, "*If one effort at reconciliation does not succeed, the second or the third will be certain*."

His biographer, a nephew, who lived much in his family,

writes thus of it. After saying that he had been educated with the utmost reverence and even fear of Richter; that reports had reached him of his oddity and severity, so that he remained a whole day in Bayreuth, and passed his house several times before he could get courage to knock at the door:

"As soon as I entered all my timidity vanished. Richter, indeed, appeared but for a moment, to welcome me, and returned to his study. But the mild splendor of his whole godlike, spiritual and moral being, appeared as shown in his wife and children, and every thing about them, and threw suddenly a warm, rose-colored glow upon my spirits.

"I found in them all the most benevolent and heartiest love united with the simplicity and openness of the truest innocence; extraordinary culture, with indeed a too humble unpretendingness; the most earnest interest for all that was elevated, with the most cheerful good-humor and love of pleasantry and wit; a simple manner of living, and ignorance of fashionable luxuries, but the happiest contentment, with the truest hospitality." A deep penetration and knowledge of life, united with the most childlike purity of heart, that had no eye for the low or the impure; but unsuspecting, they confided in the best, and received as they gave, without distrust. All this intellect and love was clothed in the unstudied exterior of a graceful form." To add to this charming picture of his family, there was the deepest reverence for the husband and father, with the freest and most independent intercourse with him. In proof of this, there is a letter from the eldest daughter, Emilia.

. . . . "I love to represent the dear friendly man, with brown study coat and socks hanging down, as he entered our mother's chamber the first thing in the morning to greet her. The hound springs on before him, and the children hang about him, and seek, when he leaves the room, to thrust their little feet into the slippers behind, when he raises his feet a little, so as to hang on him more securely. One springs before, (at that time my blessed brother lived,) the other two hang on his coat skirts until he reaches his own chamber-door; where all leave him, for only the dog must enter there.

"When we were very small, we lived in a two-story house, my father worked above, in the attic. We crept on our

hands and feet over the stairs, and hammered on the door till the father himself arose and opened it, and after our noisy ingress, closed it again—then he took from an old chest a trumpet and a fife, with which we made noisy music while he continued writing. We ventured in again many times in the day to play with a squirrel that he had at that time, and that in the evening he took out with him in his pocket, and always made one of the family circle.

“He had, usually, animals that he tamed, about him. Sometimes a mouse; then a great, white, cross spider, that he kept in a paper box with a glass top. There was a little door beneath, by which he could feed his prisoner with dead flies. In the autumn he collected the winter food for his little tree frog and his tame spider.

“The father was good to every thing; he could not bear to witness the least pain, not even in the lowest animal. Thus, he never went out without opening the cage of his canary birds, to indemnify the poor animals, who would be melancholy in his absence. He took at one time the most sedulous care of a dog, who came in one evening after the loss of the poor dead *Alert*, as he knew that in the morning he should exchange him for another, and he would have no opportunity to feed him again. You will smile at the connection, but he did the same for a departing servant-maid: providing every thing for her convenience the day before, and delighting the poor girl in the most unusual degree.

“The children were permitted all sorts of practical jokes towards him. ‘Father, dance once,’ then he would make some leaps; or he must speak French, in which he placed wonderful value on the nasal sound, which no one made as well as he. It sounded, indeed, curiously, and made my mother laugh.

“In the twilight he told us stories; or spake of God, and other worlds; or he would tell us of our grandfather, and other splendid things. We ran to gain the wager, which of us should get nearest to him on the sofa. The old money-box, hooped with iron, with a hole in the cover, that two mice might conveniently pass through, was the stepping-stone by which we jumped over the back of the sofa; for in front it was difficult to press between the table and the repository for papers. We all three crowded between the back of the sofa and the father’s outstretched legs; above, at his head, lay the sleeping dog. At last, when he had pressed

our limbs into the most inconvenient postures, the story began.

"The father knew how to create for himself many little pleasures. Thus, he made all the boxes for his tame animals, after his half-hour's nap in the afternoon. It was a special satisfaction to him to prepare ink, which he did much oftener than was necessary, for Otto wrote long years after with the rejected part. He could never wait to perfect it; but tried it an hour after it was made. If it was already black, he would come joyfully to us and say—'Now, if it is black already, what will it be to-morrow or after fourteen days?'

"The mere thought of destruction was painful to him, especially the loss of the work of man's mind. He never burnt a letter; yes, he treasured even the most insignificant. 'All loss of life,' he said, 'may be restored again, but the creations of these heads, these hearts, never! The name should be erased, but the soul that speaks its most intimate sentiments in letters, should live.' He had also thick books written full of the remarks and the habits and peculiarities of his children.

"At meals he was very cheerful, and listened to everything we told him with the greatest sympathy, and always made something out of the smallest relation; so that the narrator was always wiser for what he had said.

"In eating and drinking, he was extremely moderate. He never gave us direct instruction, and yet he taught us always. Our evening table he called a French *Table d'hôte*, that he furnished with twelve dishes taken from the arts and sciences. We tasted of all without being satiated with any, and we all ventured to utter any joke to the father about himself or his entertainment.

"His punishments for us girls were rather passive than active; they consisted in refusing some request, or in a severe word; but my brother sometimes received corporal punishment. My father would say, 'Max, this afternoon at three o'clock, come to me to receive your whipping.' He went punctually, and suffered it without a sound.

"Our principal festival was Christmas, and our father began early to look after the sacred appearance of the present-giving *Christkindlein*. Fourteen days before he would suffer some little light to creep through. If we had been very good, in the day, when he came home in the evening from the *Harmony*, he would bring us some little present

and say, 'To-day, good children, I went into the garden of the Harmony, and as I looked toward heaven, there came a rose-red cloud before me, and there sat the *Christkindlein*; and as you have been good to-day, he sent you this.'* Christmas week he went himself to the fair, and when we saw him coming back, and the angles and protuberances of his cloak betraying what he wished to conceal in its folds, we ran down the steps and would try to hang on him. Then he would cry out, artfully feigning anger, 'Touch me at your peril!'

"When the evening came, as soon as it was twilight, we must all withdraw, my mother and all. He arranged every thing himself; and when the tree was lighted we were recalled, and then we could not be gay enough to satisfy him. He wished to educate us with the frugality with which fate reconciled him in his childhood. Thus he never gave us pocket money; but on the three domestic fair days in Bayreuth he gave each of us three kreutzers;† later it arose to six, and a short time before my first communion I received a four-and-twenty kreutzer piece.

"Last year I and my sister received a dollar; but it might as well have been thrown away. I learnt with great difficulty the use of money; and if, as I know not who, asserts, a thousand angels can sit on the point of a needle, so we founded a thousand plans upon our dollar. But they, with it, vanished in the air.

"I will relate only two little things more. First, how my father assisted the poor gardeners, who belonged to the garden of the Harmony, where he wrote. He always gave them five guilders‡ at once, from which the *Frau* must bring one back at the end of the month to show him; to this he would add a sechzer (six kreutzers) interest, as he called it.

"Once more—will it weary you if I relate, that he kept an empty toilet box, in which there were little holes for penny and two-penny pieces, and that, like Swift, when he went to

* The reader will recollect how dear this illusion of German children was to Jean Paul, in his own childhood. Strange he could preserve it in his own children, when the schoolmaster had been so long abroad.—TR.

† A kreutzer is about a penny, or one cent and a half.

‡ A guilder, or florin, is about forty cents. The value of these coins is nominal. They vary greatly in the different states of Germany.

walk, he carried these small pieces in the left waistcoat pocket, to give to the poor people."

CHAPTER II.

"INTRODUCTION TO ÆSTHETICS."—"FREEDOM PAMPHLET."—"LEVANA."—RICHTER'S VIEW OF NAPOLEON.—COMIC WORKS.—LETTER TO GENERAL BERNADOTTE.

A. D. 1805,
aged 42. THE *Introduction to Æsthetics* was the first book published after the *Flegelyahre*. This is apparently a scientifically critical work, but is not free from the personality that characterizes all the productions of Jean Paul. It is only fragmentary. It makes no pretension to a complete theory of the beautiful in art, and can therefore lead to no serious errors; but it resembles all the other works of this author, which receive their worth and significance from one another, and can be thoroughly understood only through each other and through a knowledge of their author; thus this work can only be fully understood through the peculiarities of the others, and they through this. It is remarkable, as closing with an eloquent eulogy of Herder, who died while it was in preparation.

As it would exceed the limits of this work to attempt an analysis of it, I mention it only as the cause of the loss of the *Canonicate*, formerly promised to Paul by the king of Prussia. It was dedicated, by permission, to the duke Aemmel von Gotha, a prince who had always shown a singular friendship for Richter, and delighted in his society. This prince had raised himself much above the conventionalisms of his own rank, and in his letters to Paul laughed at the pedantry of court ceremonies.*

In his dedication, Paul mentioned and praised the hitherto unknown poetical productions of the duke, and the de-

* This is probably the same "Duke of Gotha, with long legs and red hair," of whom Betine gives so pleasant an impression in her letters to Gunderode. He was one of the most genial and wittiest princes of the time, who raised himself with wonderful boldness above the prejudices of his rank.

dication is *accidentally* so worded, as if the duke had, although he had not, previously seen it. All this appeared to the dean of the philosophical faculty at Jena indiscreet, and he refused his *imprimatur* to the publication.

Richter was deeply offended at this pretended guardianship of himself and his princely friend. He experienced, for the first time, the despotism of the censure of the press; he was frightened at the desolation it threatened to carry into the kingdom of the mind, and he determined to make a bold appeal against this instrument of tyranny. He obtained permission of the duke to print the whole history of the affair, together with all their previous correspondence; the prince refusing to soften or repress any of the cynical or satirical remarks in the letters, relative to his own cast.

At the end of three weeks this protest against the censure of the press, together with the duke of Gotha's letters, was published, under the protection of the noble prince Dalberg, and under the name of the *Freyheitsbuchlein* (*Freedom's Pamphlet*). A step like this, that no other literary character would have ventured upon, could not fail to excite the utmost attention in Germany. But the increasing political storms of the period, and the darkening atmosphere, turned all minds to the critical situation of affairs, and Richter lost all the gratitude and reward of his courageous patriotism, except that which he always carried in his own breast, an ardent love and devotion to freedom.

Soon after, there was a festival in Wonsiedel, to celebrate a visit from the king and queen of Prussia, and Richter, at the request of Hardenburg, prepared a musical entertainment, for which he wrote his first verses. There were also present at this festival one or two of the sister *Graces* to whom he had dedicated his *Titan*, and Richter took this opportunity to remind their majesties of the promised prebend, and learnt, with astonishment, that since the publication of the *Freyheitsbuchlein*, the king did not intend to recollect his promise.

The admirers of Jean Paul must rejoice, that he was not bound to the suppression of any opinion, by holding office under any prince. He was completely independent of everything but his conscience. It is impossible for us in this country to understand the conventionalisms of society in the old aristocratic countries, or the wide differences of rank that place a gulf between a literary man and a prince: to

us, the republican or democratic pride of wealth, that enables a vulgar soul to assume the attitude of patronage to a man of genius would be far more intolerable than the generous pride of ancestry in a man or of nobility in a woman; a woman, who might also receive the homage of a man of genius, for her accomplished manners, or her refined and feminine dignity.

We learn from the literature of the old countries, that nobility has always *stooped* to cherish genius: and has sometimes, as *Leonora*, *Tasso*, betrayed it; and that in the middle ranks of life there is an indifference to *talent without wealth*, that does not admit it to such distinction as it receives with us.

The poet seems to be "the aristocrat of the world," looking always to the shining summits of life; but, to use Paul's comparison, "needing to be cherished, like the canary bird, with soft warm hands, before he can be made to sing."

Paul's nephew, speaking of this subject, says, "There was no German poet so favored by the highest nobility, and so coldly treated by the citizens, as Jean Paul; while the latter, for his contests for them in literature and politics, not only gave him not the smallest thanks, but considered themselves injured by his independence and outward contempt of forms; and slandered him as an original, or laughed at him as an oddity; the nobility, especially princes, treated him with tenderness and attention. They were pleased that he never bowed low to them,* and permitted him all sorts of freedom in dress, and peculiar openness and unreserve in his conversation with them. As he was infinitely surprised at this partiality for so democratic a poet, and sometimes imagined that through his representations he had converted *Legitimacy* to *liberal* opinions, he therefore talked openly, not from social vanity, but to do *them* honor, of his intimate relations with exalted men and women. This often brought him into a false position with people of his own rank, and impaired the influence of his generous and liberal opinions."

Many anecdotes are told in his biography, of Paul's in-

* "Paul never bent his back, but had a wholly peculiar way of bowing. He nodded only the head; and this to the highest as to the lowest, in a manner so noble and amiable, while he at the same time made a greeting gesture with the right hand, that expressed as much respect as good humor and friendliness."

dependence in his intercourse with the nobility—such as his presenting himself at a particular door of the Weimar theatre, where none were entitled to enter who were not also entitled to wear a sword. Paul answered, “that he should feel himself as much degraded by putting on a sword as others were by having it taken off;” and he was permitted to pass, etc.

To return from this digression. Richter, through his literary labors, had hitherto been completely independent. He had obtained for the *Flegelyahre*, that generous publisher Cotta, who had paid him seven louis d’ors a sheet,* and the popularity which he had lost by the *Titan* was completely regained by this work. But at this time, when he possessed more than ever the favor of the public, the whole commerce of Germany, through the wars of Napoleon, and especially the book-trade, was thrown into trouble and confusion; this, added to the diminished resources of all classes, which disinclined them to the purchase of large works, diminished also the resources of our Richter, at the same moment that his family was increased by the birth of another daughter. His limited income was to be regretted, because he was obliged, for the sake of providing immediate small sums for the support of his family, to divide and weaken his powers, in the production of short essays, tales, and other contributions to the ephemeral literature, the fashionable annuals, and ladies’ almanacs of the period.

To the widowed sister of his wife, *Minna Spazier*, who supported her young family by editing an almanac for ladies, and to whom he sent many contributions, he wrote, “that it was easier for him to write a volume than a sheet, and that he could bear any limitation better than an intellectual one.” In this same letter, he says, in answer to the request of the sister, that Caroline would write something for her *Almanac*, “Caroline is a poet in her life, and *by* that very life, rather than upon paper, and for the public.”

Paul’s third child, a daughter, was named for his dearest

* Reckoning a louis d’or at four dollars, which is the nominal value, this amounts to twenty-eight dollars a sheet. It was extremely important for Richter to fall into the hands of an honest publisher, for, through simplicity or ignorance, he never specified the number of copies of any of his works. The printers, therefore, printed an unlimited number; and this is the reason his works reached so few editions during his life.

friend, softening Otto into the pretty feminine name of Odilia.

The unfolding and culture of all that was good and beautiful in his children, was one of the most delightful employments of Richter. He knew that a better future was only to be acquired by a better youth, and he employed himself in writing *Levana*, his work upon education.

A critic says, that "in no other of his works is the whole man, in his inward and outward being, and in his relations with and reciprocal dependencies on the outward world, so unfolded as in this. As is the case with all his other works, *they* reflect light upon *this*, and they also are better understood if read by the light derived from this."

Perhaps it will be an objection to this work, especially in so practical an age and country as this, that the tendency of Richter's system of education is, to make all men and women, if not actually writers and poets, yet supremely thinking and spiritual beings. The tendency is to withdraw too much talent from actual and practical life, and direct it to speculative and intellectual pursuits. One of the marked peculiarities of Richter was, that in actual life he was the most practical of men, suffering none of the minutia, that could influence the convenience of others, to escape him, but in his instructions all was spiritual and transcendental.

No writer upon education has thrown so much light upon the holy and hidden impulses of the child's soul; no one has written with such reverence of the childish nature, and the necessity in a teacher of respecting the *individuality* of the child; and not, as has been too much the practice, measuring all upon the same Procrustes' bed. It is in fact a commentary upon those words of the Savior, "Suffer little children to come unto me, for of such is the kingdom of heaven," and no less of the other verse, "in my father's house are many mansions," some prepared for angelic minds, and others for those of an humbler order, but all are filled.

That which had distinguished all his works was even more apparent in this, a singular knowledge of the female heart in its deepest and most delicate folds. This he had gained in his Hofer solitude, where he lived almost exclusively with women, and in his subsequent correspondence with his female friends. Perhaps there never was a writer to whom women so completely surrendered their confidence. He understood the false position in which women are placed

in some parts of the civilized world, and he had, on that account, more leniency for their vices and weaknesses than for the other sex.

Richter strove in this work to return to a simplicity of expression, and plain lucid style of writing, which he had long since abandoned, but which he thought better adapted to the persons he wished now to benefit; and also in order to explain all scientific and too learned illustrations, he published at the same time a *Lexicon für Frauen*. *Lexicon for Ladies*.

Although the passages are innumerable in Jean Paul's works, where he speaks of women with tenderness and respect, and, for the above mentioned reason, treats them with leniency; yet it is impossible to surpass the bitter contempt, the concentrated scorn, with which he speaks of those women who have thrown off the restraints of their sex, or of those cold and selfish coquettes, "whose hearts have become as hard within their breasts as the stones that glitter on the outside."

This book, the *Levana*, was more favorably received than any book he had ever published. The sympathy was so universal that the whole of the edition was sold during the disastrous year of 1807. Even Goethe forgot his hostility to the author, and seeing an extract from the work, wrote to a friend, "I know not how to say good *enough* of this extract from *Levana*, and desire, with impatience, the whole work."

About two weeks after the publication of *Levana* occurred the battle of Jena, and the last hopes for Germany (of those who placed their hopes upon the resistance of Prussia) failed; and that remarkable time began when the greater part of the nation suffered a complete prostration before the preponderance of the genius of Napoleon.

It is difficult to gather from Richter's biographers the precise view he took, at this time, of the aims of Napoleon. We find this passage in his journal. "Did I certainly know," he wrote in 1805, "that Napoleon was in the *wrong*, and *as certainly* all just means of resistance against him, ah! it were easy to venture even life against him with the pen. But this uncertainty fearfully cripples the courage of the cosmopolitan, who must discern his aims through their consequences. This it is that perplexes and obstructs, and is the reason that, among so many thousand intricacies and

involvements of human affairs, no sacrificing soul finds it easy to give his life to discover the right. The moral principle, that the *intention*, the *will*, is every thing, helps not here; for we need the discernment to discover the will." That Richter believed at *first* in the sincerity of Napoleon, appears from his writing to Otto upon being informed of his assuming the diadem. "Who has not gnashed his teeth, upon hearing of his *imperial majesty* in France? Yet I do not hate Buonaparte as much as I despise the French; and Goethe was more far-sighted than half the world, for in the beginning of the revolution he despised them as much as at the end."

But even at the confederation of the Rhine, Richter did not share the complete prostration that involved the rest of the nation. "His prophetic feeling told him at that time, what bitter experience has taught the nations of Europe, that all must unite in the common cause of freedom; and that *one* without the rest, could not advance in the road to civilization and better government." He perhaps thought that Napoleon, by destroying some of the old and rotting institutions, and clearing away the rubbish, was preparing the way for the advancement of light and freedom; and that Austria, who would imprison her subjects for ever in spiritual darkness, deserved no support from his pen. He held the depression of the hopes and spirits of the people as, one of the greatest evils of the time; and he sought to enliven and keep up their courage by writings purely comic, that had no other aim than to contribute to their cheerfulness. These were the "*Circular Letter of Attila Schmälzle*," and the "*Bathjourney of Dr. Katzenburger*," both infinitely rich in purely comic scenes. They were received with inexpressible delight by the whole nation, and contributed to raise the spirits of the people. Richter also contributed his share to the revival, at this time, of the old German or *Volks literature*. It is well known that apprehensions were felt of the too great preponderance of the French in the literature of the time. The exertions of Brentano, Arnim, and Von der Hogen, with whom Tieck and the Schlegels joined, arose from this cause. They published anew the *Niebelungenlied*, the *Knabens Wunderhorn*; and went even to the bringing out of Fouque's extravagances, and to complete caricature in his later works.

The war had yet no other immediately disastrous conse-

quences for Richter than that of withdrawing his friend Otto from his family and neighborhood. He had been appointed quartermaster to prince William of Prussia, and accompanied the army, so that the correspondence of the friends was renewed, although with the difficulty of transmitting letters through a country occupied with troops. But in the autumn of 1806 the French troops were stationed in Bayreuth, and Richter must have suffered a very inconvenient interruption of his peaceful labors, had two or three officers, as was usual in such circumstances, been quartered in his quiet and orderly dwelling. He picked up, therefore, his former knowledge of French, and wrote the following letter to general Bernadotte :

Quatre Vérités, deux Espérances et une Demande.

Vérités.

Première: Vous, Monseigneur, n'avez du triste dieu Mars, que la valeur ; et vous aimez les hommes et les lettres autant, que la gloire.

Seconde: Moi, je suis auteur—je vis pour écrire et j'écris pour vivre—ma plume nourrit ma femme, trois enfans, un chien, un oiseau et moi-même. C'est pourquoi que ce seroit appauvrir le pauvre que d'y ajouter un être vivant et mangeant de plus.

Troisième. La Muse veut de la solitude, et la guerre ou la victoire veut (votre Altesse le sait) tout l'Europe.

Quatrième. La nation Françoisaise a toujours honoré les lettres, qui l'ont honoré à leur tour—sa gloire s'achevant par la valeur s'est commencée par les lettres—l'Empereur Napoléon a laissé Gottingen et Heidelberg aux Muses.

Espérances.

I. J'espère que la pièce ci-jointe, quoiqu'elle flatte plus qu'elle ne peint, prouvera à Votre Altesse, que j'ai obtenu quelques suffrages de ma nation pour mes oeuvres romantiques, philosophiques et morales.

II. J'espère, qu'en cas de guerre ma maison, ou plutôt mon étude sera exemte de la charge d'avoir des troupes en quartier et qu'elle demeurera l'asyle de ma Muse.

Demande.

J'implore l'humanité de Votre Altesse à réaliser ces espérances, après les avoir pardonnées. Qu'une ligne de

Votre main veuille m'assurer la paix, que méritent la poésie et la philosophie, parce qu'elles la propagent. La main vaillante verse le sang ; la main bienfaisante tarit les larmes —mais Vous avés les deux mains.

Je suis, Monseigneur, avec le respect le plus profond

Votre Altesse

très-humble serviteur

JEAN PAUL FR. RICHTER.

Richter thus disarmed his enemies ; he was permitted to pursue his labors without interruption, and soon produced the comic works already mentioned. By his wit he escaped, also, another unjust imposition. He had been taxed, together with the capitalists of Bayreuth, to support the war. He wrote to the minister, and asked "if one who had only money enough for his daily wants, and who was indebted to Bayreuth for nothing but beer and ennui, could be reckoned a capitalist—that he would pay a just, although he would deny an unjust demand, if it were only four grotschen, for all was indifferent to him except justice." The minister answered, "that, as the exact tariff could not be fixed, *thought* was free from contribution," and invited Richter to dine with him.

We have seen that Richter did not, in the darkest times share the universal depression of his country ; a prophetic insight into the future enabled him to penetrate the cloud, and to see that an *eclipse* was not the end of all things. In all his political writings, an unwavering hope, like the voice and guarantee of Providence, leads him through that dark time. But when roused, as by the voice of a trumpet, all Germany arose against the power of Napoleon, no one entered with word and deed more warmly into the holy cause than Jean Paul. In his "*Dawning for Germany*," he did not limit himself to prophesying from the whole course of history a better future for Germany, or to reminding the nation of its power and advantages ; he strove to destroy that oppressive feeling of the preponderance of the French, which had extended to all ranks ; that eye and spirit-blinding belief in the star of Napoleon, that weighed with almost Turkish fatality upon the people. With a courage that bordered on rashness, he endeavored to confine the admiration of Napoleon within its just limits. He often asked the question, "what then does a great conqueror

deserve?" He placed his merit beneath the science of a Newton, the courage of a Socrates or a Cato, and the admirable wisdom of the *true* republicans of all time, etc.

And this he ventured to write and publish, while he owed his freedom in his own house to the French marshal Davoust.

How gloriously is he contrasted with another great poet of the time, who was living joyously in retirement, drinking cape wine, busy with his optics, and studying osteology, for which "there could not be a better opportunity, for every battle-field of his country was sown with preparations."^{*}

CHAPTER III.

PECUNIARY EMBARRASMENTS.—PRINCE DALBERG.—PAUL RECEIVES A SMALL PENSION.—EXTRACT FROM VARNHAGEN VON ENSE'S MEMOIRS.

A. D. 1808,
aged 45. RICHTER at this time suffered some anxiety on account of his diminished pecuniary resources. The book concerns of the time were becoming every day more unfavorable, and pressed heavily upon authors. A great work required from him concentrated attention, leisure, and quiet thought; neither of which could he command, feeling, as he did, deep sympathy with the troubles of his country; neither would the booksellers venture upon any large work; he was obliged, therefore, to break down and divide his powers in the production of many of the ephemeral essays of the day. At this time and talent-consuming employment, he worked so incessantly that at last his firm health was shaken.† and immediate rest or recreation became absolutely requisite.

* Knebel wrote to Richter, after the battle of Jena: "Goethe sent me, in my necessity, a couple of flasks of cape wine, that came at the exact time to a man that the French had wholly drank dry. *He* was the whole time busy with his optics. We study here, under his instruction, osteology, for which it is an excellent time, as every field is sown with preparations."

† Jean Paul's contributions to the periodical literature of the day, fill

He was attacked with a tertian fever that obliged him to give up writing every third day. "On that day," he says, "he read philosophy, and was able to forget the ague fit when the shaking would permit him to hold the book."

Richter had dedicated his "*Peace Sermons*" to Carl Von Dalberg,* Prince Primate of the Confederation of the Rhine. In this dedication he hinted so delicately at his poverty that the prince, in an extremely gracious answer, was obliged to ask him to declare his wishes.

Richter answered: "An author of more than forty volumes, an orphan, who had lived more *for* than *by* the sciences, ventures now, after three years' war, the birth of three children, and the failure of three of his booksellers, to wish for a winter pension to enable him to recover his health through more reading, and less writing."

It was not in the prince's power to do more at the moment than to send Jean Paul a considerable present, with a most kind and courteous letter. But early in the following year he surprised him with a pension of a thousand guilders, (four hundred dollars,) which he paid out of his private purse until 1811, when the payment of the same sum was placed on the common pension fund of Bavaria.

Richter was now in comparatively happy circumstances. With their simple habits, and his Caroline's good economy and watchfulness, four hundred dollars, in addition to his daily earnings, made them rich.

A letter to Otto, who was separated from him by the war, is characteristic of this period.

several volumes of his collected works. The titles of some of these contributions are, "Upon the Advantages of being Deaf in one Ear;" "June Night Thoughts;" "The Dream of a Madman;" "Marriage Looking-glasses;" "The Pleasure we feel in the Joys of Children;" "Fragments from my art of always being Cheerful;" "Upon the Evergreen of our Feelings," and many reviews of modern works.

* This prince is mentioned so often, that it should be known that he was one of the most generous noblemen of the time, and a munificent patron of literature. He was Archbishop of Ratisbon and Bishop of Worms, and is the same Prince Bishop that *Betina Brantano* mentions so playfully and so pleasantly in *Goethe's Correspondence with a Child*. "In 1813 he voluntarily resigned all his possessions as a sovereign prince, retaining only his ecclesiastical dignity, and retired to private life. He afterwards devoted himself to letters, and published many moral and legal treatises." It was a brother of this prince who was Schiller's first patron.
—*Conversations Lex.*

“How often this winter have I wished that you could have met me in the street, or in the Harmony, then you would have seen my little squirrel upon my shoulder, who bites no longer. I ventured to carry him in my pocket when I held Dobineck’s son before the baptism font; but I was obliged to grasp him several times, and wind him in my handkerchief, for if, while I held the blessed little godson in my arms, the rogue had crept upon my shoulder, there would have been a universal disturbance of the baptism and every thing serious. At this moment the little fellow sleeps upon my sofa.

“Had it not been for the war, my *Levana* would have come to a second edition—wonderful! For none of my books have I so much *feared* the judgment of the public, and of fate; as much as I *hoped*, by the *Titan*—but the public always surprises one so, at least unpleasantly. My inmost being remains strong, dry, cold! The spring, with all its starry heaven, has not melted me. I would remain strong and cold, even till the great world’s game of Europe is won. Opposition only spurs me on, to work, to work with the best, and with the utmost of my powers for the improvement of all. . . . What time destroys, these exertions will restore. If the devils are a majority, yet the angels are a larger—yes, I say a larger, for in human nature ten angels are worth a hundred devils: were it not so, the excess of weak, foolish, and bad, would long since have sunk humanity, instead of saving it.

“I rejoice even now at your future joy over my three unlike, but unspoilt rose-buds of children—and it is difficult to say which will be your favorite. Ah, were you here! and yet I cannot desire it, as you are now building your future fortune. You have, on account of your knowledge and desert, the greater claims. This war should give you full confidence in the friendly genius that goes with you through life. Your rare fortune has rejoiced, but not surprised me, and had you any thing of my bold grasp into life, you would have had it before. I am curious whether you will appear to me like a man of the world when I see you again. I should think all these grand persons would make you a little bold. My wife greets you heartily, and we both wish you the balsam and nourishment of joy.”

At this period, 1808, Richter received a visit from Herr Varnhagen von Ense. He has left in his *memoirs* such a

pleasant account of him and his family, that the reader will pardon me for introducing it here.

"This forenoon (it was the 22d October), I went to Jean Paul's. A pleasant, kindly, inquisitive woman, who had opened the door to me, I at once recognized for Jean Paul's wife by her likeness to her sister. A child was sent off to call its father. He came directly; he had been forewarned of my visit by letters from Berlin and Leipsic; and received me with great kindness.

"First of all I had to tell him what I was charged with in the shape of messages, then whatsoever I could tell in any way, about his Berlin friends. He willingly remembered the time he had lived in Berlin, as Marcus Herz's neighbor, in Leder's house, where I, seven years before, had first seen him in the garden by the Spree, with papers in his hand, which it was privately whispered were leaves of *Hesperus*. This talk about persons, and then still more about literature growing out of that, set him fairly underway, and soon he had more to impart than to inquire. His conversation was throughout amiable and good-natured, always full of meaning, but in quite simple tone and expression. Though I knew beforehand that his wit and humor belonged only to his pen, that he could hardly write the shortest note without these introducing themselves, while on the contrary his oral utterance seldom showed the like,—yet it struck me much that, in this continual movement and vivacity of mood to which he yielded himself, I observed no trace of these qualities. His demeanor otherwise was like his speaking; nothing forced, nothing studied, nothing that went beyond the burgher tone. His courtesy was the free expression of a kind heart; his way and bearing were patriarchal, considerate of the stranger, yet for himself too altogether unconstrained. Neither in the animation to which some word or topic would excite him, was this fundamental temper ever altered; nowhere did severity appear, nowhere any exhibiting of himself, any watching or spying of his hearer; every where kind-heartedness, free movement of his somewhat loose-flowing nature, open course for him, with a hundred transitions from one course to the other, howsoever or whithersoever it seemed good to him to go. At first he praised every thing that was named of our new appearances in literature; and then when we came a little closer to the matter, there was blame enough and to spare. So of Adam Müller's Lectures, of Friedrich Schlegel, of Tieck and

others. He said, German writers ought to hold by the people, not by the upper classes, among whom all was already dead and gone; and yet he had just been praising Adam Müller, that he had the gift of speaking a deep word to cultivated people of the world. He is convinced that from the opening of the old Indian world nothing is to be got for us, except the adding of one other mode of poetry to the many modes we have already, but no increase of ideas; and yet he had just been celebrating Friedrich Schlegel's labors with the Sanscrit, as if a new salvation were to issue out of that. He was free to confess that a right Christian in these days, if not a Protestant one, was inconceivable to him; that changing from Protestantism to Catholicism seemed a monstrous perversion; and with this opinion great hope had been expressed, a few minutes before, that the Catholic spirit in Friedrich Schlegel, combined with the Indian, would produce much good! Of Schleiermacher he spoke with respect; signified, however, that he did not relish his 'Plato' greatly; that in Jacobi's, in Herder's soaring flight of soul he traced far more of those divine old sages than in the learned acumen of Schleiermacher; a deliverance which I could not let pass without protest. Fichte, of whose 'Addresses to the German Nation,' held in Berlin under the sound of French drums, I had much to say, was not a favorite of his; the decisiveness of that energy gave him uneasiness; he said he could only read Fichte as an exercise, 'gymnastically,' and that with the purport of his philosophy he had now nothing more to do.

"Jean Paul was called out, and I staid awhile alone with his wife. I had now to answer many new questions about Berlin; her interest in persons and things of her native town was by no means sated with what she had already heard. The lady pleased me exceedingly; soft, refined, acute, she united with the loveliest expression of household goodness an air of higher breeding and freer management than Jean Paul seemed to manifest. Yet, in this respect too, she willingly held herself inferior, and looked up to her gifted husband. It was apparent every way that their life together was a right happy one. Their three children, a boy and two girls, are beautiful, healthy, well-conditioned creatures. I had a hearty pleasure in them; they recalled their dear children to my thoughts, whom I had lately been beside! . . .

"With continual copiousness, and in the best humor, Jean Paul (we were now at table) expatiated on all manner of objects. Among the rest, I had been charged with a salutation from Rahel Levin to him, and the modest question, 'Whether he remembered her still?' His face beamed with joyful satisfaction: 'How could one forget such a person?' cried he impressively. 'That is a woman alone of her kind. I liked her heartily well, and more now than ever, as I gain in sense an apprehension to do it; she is the only woman in whom I have found genuine humor, the one woman of this world who had humor!' He called me a lucky fellow to have such a friend; and asked, as if proving me and measuring my value, 'How I had deserved that?'

"Monday, 24th October.

"Being invited, I went a second time to dine. Jean Paul had just returned from a walk; his wife, with one of the children, was still out. We came upon his writings—that questionable string with most authors; which the one will not have you touch, which another will have you keep jingling continually. He was here what I expected him to be; free, unconstrained, good-natured, and sincere with his whole heart. His 'Dream of a Madman,' just published by Cotta, was what had led us upon this. He said he could write such things at any time; the mood for it, when he was in health, lay in his own power; he did but seat himself at the harpsichord, and fantasizing for a while on it, in the wildest way, deliver himself over to the feeling of the moment, and then write his imaginings,—according to a certain predetermined course, indeed, which however he would often alter as he went on. In this kind he had once undertaken to write a 'Hell,' such as mortal never heard of; and a great deal of it is actually done, but not fit for print. Speaking of descriptive composition, he also started as in fright when I ventured to say that Goethe was less complete in this province; he reminded me of two passages in 'Werther,' which are indeed among the finest descriptions. He said that to describe any scene well the poet must make the bosom of a man his *camera obscura*, and look at it through *this*, then would he see it poetically. . . .

"The conversation turned on public occurrences, on the condition of Germany, and the oppressive rule of the French. To me discussions of that sort are usually disagreeable; but

it was delightful to hear Jean Paul express, on such occasion, his noble patriotic sentiments; and for the sake of this rock-island, I willingly swam through the empty tide of uncertain news and wavering suppositions which environed it. What he said was deep, considerate, hearty, valiant, German to the marrow of the bone. I had to tell him much; of Napoleon, whom he knew only by portraits; of Johannes von Müller; of Fichte, whom he now as a patriot admired cordially: of the Marquez de la Romana and his Spaniards, whom I had seen in Hamburg. Jean Paul said he at no moment doubted but the Germans, like the Spaniards, would one day rise; and Prussia would avenge its disgrace, and free the country: he hoped his son would live to see it, and did not deny that he was bringing him up for a soldier.

“ October 25th.

“ I staid to supper, contrary to my purpose, having to set out next morning early. The lady was so kind, and Jean Paul himself so trustful and blithe, I could not withstand their entreaties. At the neat and well-furnished table (reminding you that South Germany was now near), the best humor reigned. Among other things we had a good laugh at this, that Jean Paul offered me an introduction to one of what he called his dearest friends in Stuttgart,—and then was obliged to give it up, having irrevocably forgotten his name! Of a more serious sort again was our conversation about Tieck, Friedrich and Wilhelm Schlegel, and others of the romantic school. He seemed in ill-humor with Tieck at the moment. Of Goethe he said: ‘Goethe is a consecrated head; he has a place of his own, high above us all.’ We spoke of Goethe afterwards for some time: Jean Paul, with more and more admiration, nay, with a sort of fear and awe-struck reverence.

“ Some beautiful fruit was brought in for dessert. On a sudden, Jean Paul started up, gave me his hand, and said: ‘Forgive me, I must go to bed! Stay you here in God’s name, for it is still early, and chat with my wife; there is much to say, between you, which my talking has kept back. I am a *Spießburger*,’ (of the club of Odd Fellows,) ‘and my hour is come for sleep.’ He took a candle, and said, good-night. We parted with great cordiality, and the wish expressed on both sides, that I might stay at Bayreuth another time.”

CHAPTER IV.

DOMESTIC LETTERS.—JOURNEY TO ERLANGEN.—JOURNEY TO
NURNBERG.—JACOBI.

A. D. 1811,
aged 48. WE pass over three quiet years, in which no event of importance occurred. Through his pension Paul's circumstances were easier, and a little journey to Erlangen affords an opportunity for inserting a letter to Caroline, which proves that after eleven years of married life no flower had faded from their wreath of love and happiness.

“ June, 1811.

“ My dear good Caroline. Like this beautiful morning, has your long wished-for letter come to me. Every word of it was welcome. Fortunately, I did not receive it till the evening, when I long heart-breakingly for you and the children.

“ Max was on the way so tender, pleasant, and apparently so contented, loving all, obeying all, (he certainly forgets nothing on a journey,) and so good, that I began to perceive that I could gather the fruit of the education of my children, and how much better they really are, than they sometimes appear. He slept at night without undressing, and without a bedcover, like one dead; and in the morning he was lively, spirited and gay. The thought that I must leave him, would not, the whole day, go from my soul.

“ The middle-aged Madam S. comes when I ring, and is respectful and ready, and makes my coffee and bed as like them. Toussaint fulfils every wish, so does the obliging professor Mehmel. In the morning, heaven dwells in my solitary apartment, full only of books, and I am as homelike but more alone, than at Bayreuth. I went into the Italian garden, that stands open without key, and, without Kreuzers, on the day of the great pentecost church consecration, which Otto can paint for you without ink. This garden terrace is the only throne of nature in the beggarly environs of Erlangen. This alone would frighten me from a residence here, which they all wish to persuade me to. I am unusually well, and joke frequently in society.

“ I put by the pen, to sleep better than usual. First,

morsel of cheese, then a morsel of dessert cake—ah! sliced potatoes, where are ye? For in a whole week, none.

“ June 12.

“ Since Sunday, for eight days, not a line! This one cloud, which is indeed broad enough, draws itself through my blue heaven. Had I not, since two months, certain grounds of consolation, or to-day, not a wonderful confidence in my anticipations that my present cheerfulness does not indicate future misfortunes, I should become fearful through your silence—Heavens! how much you have to tell me, and formerly you were so industrious a letter-writer! Be joyful, good Caroline.

“ 14.

“ At last I am happy, without alloy. Take, for every heart's word, and heart's deed, in my absence, heart's thanks! Last Sunday I was properly frightened that I forgot your birth-day, and I found it in the calendar under the name of Lucretia. After my return we will celebrate it on a fixed day. If you gave attention, you will have seen that the last week in May I wore your ring on the little finger of my left hand. The heart should also have its festivals.* I could be borne on the waves of society here, for every one comes lovingly to me; but I have so many books before me, that I keep myself solitary—in the evening, reading and eating with my dog only. Either the old, true, French wine, of which I drink daily a quarter of a bottle, or the air, or very rarely a draft of *rosaliera*, or the less work, or all together, make me more healthy than I have been for years. No thirst, no dry heat, no tremblings; pardon these little bodily trifles—but you, dear wife, take in these as much part as I should in the smallest of your ailments.

“ Next day.

“ Yesterday I was in Nurnberg with the Hofmeister, young Rottenheim, and the bookseller—I was pleased with

* The last week in May was the anniversary of Richter's marriage. His finding his wife's birth-day under the name of Lucretia, is thus explained. The German custom was to celebrate, not only the birth-day, but the day in the almanac that bore the person's christian name. The old almanacs contained a name for every day in the year, the name of a saint, or some other remarkable person. When Jean Paul, then, proposed fixing a day to celebrate Caroline's birth-day, he would probably choose the day that bore the name of Caroline. I am indebted for this explanation to the notes upon Mr. Tracey's charming translation of Undine.

the southern, joyful, hearty tone of the people. M. will return with me on Friday. How new and beautiful all will appear to me ! If you have experienced any thing that will not be pleasant to me, write it, that I may forget it on the way, and the heavenly evening of our meeting again pass without a cloud. Ah : the post draws near, and I have so much to say to my faithful friend, who has done so much for me, and loves me so fervently. Heavens ! how often have I thought of you with overpowering ecstacy, when, at night, your face, with its indescribable love's eyes, and love's glance, has suddenly appeared to me as a form out of the empty air. But that ecstacy remains a reality for me yet—for you live, and I return. Ah, it goes to your soul as to mine."

The following year Richter went to Nurnberg to meet Jacobi. The reader will recollect that they had corresponded for some years, but had never met.

After mentioning the discomforts of their inn in a letter to Otto, he goes on to describe his friend. "I played with accustomed moderation the lamb, and remained sedate, only saying to my ever-hasty companion, 'In the morning we shall have time enough.' I can now bear witness to my second remark, that there is no better sign of a pleasant future than when the first hour in an inn is miserable and uncomfortable.

"At eleven I held to my heart a brother and friend of old longings.* He is not a man of the world, but in the most precious sense a quiet, noble *ancient*. It seems to me that I only meet him again after long separation, we sympathize so entirely ; his sisters also please me. In the evening they usually go early to bed, and I sit alone with

* Jacobi was the herald of the new faith. He discovered the weakness and insufficiency of the Kantian system, and showed the emptiness and lameness of a system, the religious conceptions of which do not extend beyond a narrow and cold morality ; which sees nothing in Christianity but a code of duties ; and represents the Creator of the universe as a mere Supreme Being—apart from his creation and from man. But he fell into the opposite extreme ; he denounced philosophy generally, and declared revealed religion to be the sole and exclusive source of truth. In his work, directed against Schelling's book, *Of Divine Things, and their Revelation*, he declares it as his opinion, "that philosophy is impotent to clear up the eternal mystery, and that we receive light through divine grace *alone*, not through human reason." Richter did not assent to these opinions, and expresses to Otto his displeasure at this one-sided view of the question.

Jacobi. They bid me not to suffer him to speak much of his childhood; but often as we have been together, we have scarcely begun to talk, and the eternal conversation upon philosophy, more rarely disputing than agreeing, will leave scarcely room for questions about his early life and former connections. He seeks earnestly, and with pure, warm zeal, unestablished truth. . . . In the first quarter of an hour he observed my wavering playfulness between jest and earnest, and as I excused myself, his sisters said, 'he did the same himself;' but he does not appear to me to have the true disposition for humor, and he said himself that he could not read through the *Katzenburger* and the *Fibel*. He is always calm, not cold, and it is as easy to him to speak to, to listen to, and to satisfy his enemies, as it is difficult for me to do so.

"He remained till midnight alone with me, and with the shadow of the lamp-screen resting upon his face, speaking softly, and listening to the mightiest themes. And yet, listen! He will give my earthly planet a new impulse around his higher sun, and be as much to me as Herder was. Yes, more than Herder. Both he cannot be; and yet, alas, my religious desires for myself can be fulfilled by no man from without—but only from within, by myself alone. 'Could I but see him,' I have hitherto thought, 'I should become a new man, and desire nothing more!' Ah! . . .

"He can be from morning to midnight in society, enjoying visiting, amusements, and driving, while I remain, much to his astonishment, true to my old rules, and, in the midst of the most animated society, escape to my cool solitude to reproach myself after exciting amusements. As I asked Jacobi whether I did not carry my freedom too far, he half assented, and yet in such a way that I had no satisfaction from his answer. Besides, he considers too much, and is too anxious about appearances, and his consideration with others, and indeed ventures nothing. Thus he earlier negatived my question, whether I should say in my dedication of the *Clavis* to him, 'that he had read it before its publication,' although he had. All the reviews of his and Schelling's books, as well as the notice of them in the Hamburg newspaper, he carries, neatly folded in paper, about with him; and all he is praised. The other day, in Erlangen, the professors, and we all, had drunk his health, he stood up, and, to the amazement of all, went round with his glass and touched

that of every one at the table. Something of this belongs to his age, and to the four female hands that support and rock him.*

"He wears beautiful, new-fashioned, smooth white-topped boots, and *hosen*† of good nankin; and a gray Russian hat, probably on account of his eyes.

"That he loves me, I know from the way in which he takes leave of me, and from his sisters, and from his gentle reproaches if I do not go to him in the intervals of his being at home; but how much he blames me, either justly or unjustly, I know not. He speaks often of his own works; upon *my* personalities, social or literary relations, he asked no questions. The excess of our materials for conversation was my fault, and yet there was nothing said of worldly affairs, and not enough of Haman, Goethe and Klopstock, and the little that was said, was in answer to my questions. In politics he is probably liberal. The rest when we meet."

There is another letter of the same date to his old friend Emanuel. The reader will recollect that he, as well as Otto, were Richter's neighbors in Bayreuth.

"Nurnberg, 1812.

"You gave me only one token of remembrance, namely, the packet coffer. As I unfolded paper after paper, it seemed as if you spake a word of love to me upon each. It is a half melancholy feeling to have the well-wishing love of an absent friend before one in solitude. For me a solitary apartment is a spiritual *Brunning* hall, full of medicinal water. Solitude shows itself in new relations; not in your own *solitary* apartment are you alone, but in a melancholy palace. I have, ridiculously as it sounds, every day a little perverseness, a little contrariety in thinking and acting. I write every morning that for which in practice I require further medicining.

"The first maxim is: 'Do every thing in its time, put off nothing!' and then I have the *night* equipage carried out of the room, but I leave the coffee equipage on the other table.

"The second day I write: 'Rise above little inconveniences'—that is, do not croak and cry alas! when in the

* These are the same aunts Lehna and Lotta, whose excessive care of Jabobi, Bettine describes so graphically in "The Correspondence of a Child."

† Gr. for indispensables.

morning you have to draw your shirt on or off, or even your narrow Sunday pantaloons and the rest, before you can sit calmly with your book upon the sofa.

"The third morning: 'After having been in society, have nothing to repent, but be rather too fearful, than too bold.' For, my good friend, when with benevolent intention you think you have spoken only boldly, then you have already spoken too boldly, and the previous improvement is to be every day recapitulated.

"'Arm yourself as powerfully against evil in others as in yourself.' That I do not obey this rule shows itself in my continuing, through fancy, to blacken myself, in comparison with good men. In short there are no other means in heaven or upon earth to heal and content the inward soul, but by strengthening that inmost soul itself, and it is foolish to think small helps from without can be lasting means of improvement. . . .

"Solitude on one's birthday is the only worthy personal celebration, that a man, thinking calmly and tenderly on the path behind him, and measuring seriously that before him, can permit himself. I hate also all business of pleasurable activity on the first day of the year. Frail and feeble man should look upon such *elevations* in time, like the spider for props to which he fastens the thread of a new web. All weighty things are done in solitude, that is, without society. The means of improvement consist not in projects, or in any violent designs, for these cool, and cool very soon; but in patient practising for whole long days, by which I make the thing dear to my highest reason. Reason works longer than feeling, and enlightens more, for it remains after the other has departed. We must first overcome the little faults, and be easy in this exercise of self-conquest, before we drive away the greater; and yet after all this, a man is only in the outer court of the Most Holy, and preparing to whip out of himself the whole of the old Adam! R."

The peace, so ardently desired and so acceptable to Germany, was at first disastrous to Richter. The abolishing, by the congress of Vienna, of the grand duchy of Frankfort, and taking away the immense revenue of the prince primate Dalberg, interrupted the payment of his pension, and threatened to suspend it entirely. It remained undecided for two years, and Jean Paul found himself constrained to send a

multitude of petitions to persons of both sexes connected with the congress of Vienna; among others to the emperor Alexander, which both his biographers have given at large, although it seems to us less important than many other of Paul's productions. After waiting two years without any result, he presented a petition to his own king and queen of Bavaria, and the payment henceforth was placed on the pension fund of the kingdom, and regularly received by Richter. That it was not immediately necessary to meet his every day expenses, appears from a note written to Otto, on the Christmas day after he was secure of the first quarter's payment. All his readers must rejoice that the poet had money to lend.

“December 25, 1815.

“A joyful festival, my Otto. Inform me, when my pension-money comes, whether Emanuel offers to take a part of it for half a year. Shall I not give him too much trouble, or can he even use it? I remark, that when men lend money, they value only the interest, and thereby become cursedly avaricious—so I will lend little, and spend more.

“I bring you a long-cherished prayer. My purse is open to you at all times and for any sum within it. *Five hundred florins** lie wholly *useless* there: so that I deserve nothing by the change to yours, except indeed the pleasure. Enjoy it also, old heart's friend. R.”

This is the place to give a few extracts from the private journal called *Via recti*, which was begun this year, and is the glass in which we see the man and the author reflected. He says in the beginning, “I am a libertine only from within; I enjoy neither beer nor wine; later, I have enjoyed neither company nor punch; but my inward fantasies, conceptions and representations, have reduced and consumed my life. I say here, and before God, that in all my works, and in all my representations, I am pure from all but the best motives, uninfluenced by poverty, the misunderstanding of others, sacrifices, etc. I have held it my duty, not to enjoy, or to gain, but to *write*—however much time or money I have thus thrown away—yes, joy also—that is, the sight of Switzerland, which merely the sacrifice of time forbade. I deny myself my vesper meal, merely to work; but I can-

* The half of his pension

not deny myself the interruption that comes from my children. Eating, drinking, money, health are nothing! The enjoyment of my children, nature, religion, assert their mastery."

Paul's nephew relates many beautiful instances of the pleasant intercourse he maintained with his family. "Could one see him when the longing after the exchange of endearing expressions drew him from his quiet and solitary study into the apartment of his wife. In his eye was a sunbeam of the purest love, while the loveliest smile played around his mouth as he seemed embarrassed to find an excuse for coming." Then, on the first of April, his delight in the innocent mirth that belonged to the day. He would mislead every one of his family, and the maid always came in for her share of the mirth.

Paul proceeds with his rules.

"Throw little pains immediately away.

"Have nothing to repent in society; be rather too fearful, than too bold.

"Show *love* only to children, not pain, or only that which will excite pity, not shame.

"Leave a good, but passionate man, time to resolve and cool, as you also need, yourself.

"Say not at the first moment *no*, but wait.

"To love only *one* man truly, thoroughly! what enjoyment and reward!

"Attempt, in the midst of work, to be indifferent to complaints, disturbing noises, etc.

"One should strive far more earnestly to gain and secure and elevate the love of wife and children than any other foreign love; for nothing can contribute half as much to the happiness of life.

"I will give to the children the morning pleasures of morning hours. I can *later* work and read.

"Children need *love* more than instruction; and use and example alone can give it to them.*

"As Winkelman set apart a half hour daily, to contemplate his Italian joyousness, a man should consecrate a half hour, daily or weekly, to reckoning up and considering the virtues of his wife, and children, and nearest friends; so that their perfections may not first, at their death, press

* See Appendix.

together to a burning focus. Often enough, alas, do we need this pressing together, namely, after an *offence*, in order to be only *justly* angry, and reflect all his light upon the *offender*.

“Place in *imagination*, in every company where you speak much, an enemy before you; a satirist among the enthusiastic; a spy, among lovers.

“Practise, every day, an acting and an opposing power, that you may be every day stronger rather than weaker. Every occasion to withstand or to sacrifice will be dear to you, without which you will never succeed. But you need only to make use of the *daily*—go not out of your way to seek sacrifices.

“With all my inclination to irony upon paper, I have never in actual life, neither alone nor in company, made a man ridiculous, but have answered his weakness with sympathizing earnestness.”

In the same book Paul says: “Nothing exhausts and touches me as phantasien, on the piano. I could thus kill myself. All buried feelings and spirits arise again! My hand and eye and heart know no limits! At last I close with an eternally returning, but too powerful tone! One can be satisfied with hearing, but never with making music; and every *true* musician could, like the nightingale, trill himself to death. When I have phantasied long, I break out into violent weeping, without thinking of any thing decidedly melancholy. The tones cut deeper and clearer into ear and heart. Tears are my strongest, but most weakening intoxication!

“No author can foresee the influence his works will have either for good or for evil, for they excite every species of mind, and kindle the inflammable.

“I could become a great author with Herder’s powers and my own application of the same.”

CHAPTER V.

RICHTER IN RELATION WITH THE UNHAPPY.—LETTERS.—
MARIA FORSTER.

WE come now to a trait of Richter's character that we can dwell upon with unmixed satisfaction—his relations with the unfortunate and unhappy who sought his sympathy or advice. There is no author who lives so entirely in his own creations as Richter. He himself speaks from the lips of his characters, and gives his readers consolation or pity, elevation or lofty trust. He steps before every heart, and shows it its inmost wishes; he lifts the veil of secrecy under which it sighs, and shows the reader that he knows and pities all that lies struggling or perplexed within him. He had experienced deeply in his youth that feeling of heart-solitude, that weighs heavily upon minds of sensibility, and he offers in his works sympathy and aid against this fretting sorrow. He had felt how easy, and yet how dangerous it is to take the first wrong step in life, while he knew how to draw lessons of wisdom from the reaction of error or folly. This distinguishing characteristic of Jean Paul made him the personal friend of his readers, the brother and the father of all orphaned and widowed hearts. By his expanding and never-wearied sympathy he responded to every confidence that was placed in him, and showed the beautiful harmony of the author with the man, and the power of a true Christian brother, in healing and calming the soul. How many came to him with bowed or broken hearts; how many in the midst of the storm of passion, sought his counsel and his help! He was trusted with the most delicate and important secrets by women of all ranks, from princesses to domestic drudges. Men and youths also appealed to him to decide affairs that concerned their entire lives. Repentant sinners sought consolation in a confession to him; and in some cases he was employed to make reparation, where a breath or a whisper would have tarnished the honor of the parties.

He answered with unwearied patience the letters of young authors, and their petitions for his judgment upon their literary works. He read them patiently, criticised delicately,

A. D. 1814.
aged 51.

and where he could, he gave encouragement. His sympathy and help, even if he could not give a favorable judgment of the work, were never withheld from the author. Thus, while he dwelt at Meiningen, he obtained, through his sole exertions, the office of cabinet secretary to the duke, for Earnest Wagner. He obtained also a situation for Kanne, the afterwards well-known enthusiastic preacher, whose supernaturalism and mysticism, alas! brought Richter's only son to his grave.

We have only room for a few of the answers Richter sent to those who sought his advice and sympathy. The first is in answer to a querulous letter from a young man, who writes under the name of *Henrich*, and which is filled with general complaint at his unhappy destiny.

"Dare not to judge from one year of unhappiness, the *Eternal*, who has shown his paternal care of mankind for six thousand years, and is the same great Father of all. He who has supported, formed, and educated the human race, will not desert *one*, even the least. Of the smallest ephemerata of a day his providence has protected the race from Adam to us. Let your heart be tender, but your breast strong, and struggle and hope at the same time."

The next is a person of a higher order of mind, who sent him several letters, and at last, a journal of his life. As the letters were anonymous, they were thrown into the general receptacle of unanswered letters. At last another despairing letter was sent, that hinted at suicide. Richter sought and soon discovered his name, and wrote to him the next day.

"Wherefore have you not trusted yourself more generously to me? My silence upon your letters, so filled with mind and heart, was owing principally to the fact that such letters must be answered not with lines, but with sheets; and that for most of the letters I receive, I have not time even for lines. The letter previous to your journal, covered my horizon with a thick cloud, through the suspicion of a misfortune to yourself; but your journal dispersed the cloud, and gave me again the sun. To an immediate answer, nothing failed me but the name, which I hoped to find in the first letter—but behold that was buried in the great letter vault, where, with a thousand others, it awaited the resurrection—that is, arrangement and order. But the first grasp in the coffer drew forth your first letter, like a roll of destiny.

I should wish and advise you more action, and less reflection : but, if we cannot discover the character of an author from many books, how much less the character of a letter-writer from a few pages ; and how difficult it is even after a long acquaintance, to give comprehensive counsels, that shall embrace the whole of life. Against your overvalue of myself I have nothing to say. To the youth it is always more healthful to reverence too much than to despise too much. You have a pair of gods too many, but a divinity too little. Trust yourself, or rather the *universal soul*, more. There will fall to you yet many of the blossoms of youth. Thrust out the invisible fruit buds of your soul, and as a man you will profit by the ripened fruit. Flee only the demon of ambition, and the wild ape* of vanity, and you will be reconciled with the angel of the good and the beautiful."

Among other communications to him was the autobiography of a man who possessed the fixed idea that his *thoughts*, by the medium of animal magnetism, were abstracted from his mind, and used by other people. At the same time, the same person desired Richter to petition the emperor Francis for a present of not less than twenty thousand dollars to enable him to enjoy the leisure to write an epic poem. In the mean time he prayed Richter to advance two thousand dollars, that he would repay when he received the twenty thousand from the emperor.

Another letter from another person, demanded that Paul should petition the allied sovereigns of Europe to free Napoleon from his imprisonment at St. Helena. To such absurd requests he gave of course no answer.

But I will leave these common instances, to mention only one other, that threw a cloud over Richter's life, and was the occasion of an almost repentant sorrow. The history of the young girl, who knit her being so closely to his, that she could not live without him, seems to us, in this prosaic land and age, so like a fiction of romance, as to be almost incredible in its sad reality. She had known him only through his books ; and what to others is but an abstraction, became to her the life of her soul.

This has been mentioned as a parallel case to that of Bettine Brentano, whose eccentric letters and journal have revealed to us her youthful passion for Goethe. But the

* *Waldterufel* is also the name of a butterfly.

cases are quite dissimilar. Bettine was living in the midst of the refined society where Goethe ruled, and her glowing imagination converted him into a divinity, to be worshipped and loved. Bettine had more imagination than sentiment or passion, and required of Goethe to understand and appreciate her rare intellect as much as answer to her heart. Unfortunately, Goethe was afraid of the ridicule that would attend such a friendship, and wounded her vanity as well as her womanly sensitiveness.

Maria Forster was living in solitude, in the midst of sublime mountain scenery. She had no one to sympathize with her passionate nature. She brooded in silence over her communion with Jean Paul, when she found her most secret thoughts and her own nature revealed to her in his books. To passion and sentiment was united a sensitive conscience and feminine delicacy, and we cannot read her history without the sorrowful conviction, that *before* she came to the resolution to throw herself into the Rhine, the contest between passion and conscience had destroyed the healthful action of her reason.

Maria was the daughter of a high-hearted German, who fell under the axe of the guillotine during the reign of terror in Paris. The heroic death of the father, who despised the means of flight that were held out to him by his friends, and the instructions of an equally high-minded mother, had increased the original tendency of the daughter's mind to enthusiasm, and given her an inclination to solitude, where she lived in an ideal world, peopled only with heroes of the ancient world and those among the moderns who were worthy to enter there. Yet she devoted herself with exact fidelity to all filial and domestic duties, and did not avoid the society about her. She rejoiced with the gay and wept with the sorrowful; but when her work was done, when the cares of the day were over, when the hours of darkness gave the choice of refreshment through sleep, or by communion with other minds, then she turned with ecstasy to her books, and drew from her favorite authors not only healthy food, but the intoxication that, in her solitude and with her peculiar temperament, became poison to her mind.

Already, in her tenth year, she became acquainted with the writings of Jean Paul, and in her innocent, childish enthusiasm, wrote him a letter. As she entered womanhood,

he became the *ideal* of all that was dreamed or imagined. He was the only *living* mortal that was admitted into her ideal world; the purest and holiest of men, a saint, "a new *Christ for her*," who could alone bear her over the waves of life, that threatened right and left to overwhelm her. To be near him in some form, or in some relation, was the only contingency in which she could find peace. To hold some kind of communion with him was a necessity of her nature. She must speak to him, or she must die.

Accordingly, in her thirteenth year, she wrote to him thus: "Is it not too bold—dare I write to the dearest friend of man, and call him my father? Ah, I shall perhaps never see him whom I have to thank for so much, for the dearest benefits, the most elevated truths, all the good that excites my imitation, and a whole eternity that has opened before my soul. When I think of your infinite goodness, I burst into tears, and my heart is filled with blessings for you. This firm faith in you is a blessing of which no man can rob me.

"You will ask, perhaps, who it is that speaks thus boldly to you? But I am only a little girl—too little that I need to mention my name. Ah, were I grown, as I shall be, no land and no sea should prevent me from *once* in my life seeing him who has long held the place of a father in my heart. But my own faults and intervening relations hold me back; and I would not trust myself to write one word to you if I did not hope to deserve your indulgence and pardon for my wishes.

"I scarcely have a wish but the highest, to be so good as to deserve your esteem, and the joy of having you once call me *daughter*. My whole life is only a striving after goodness; and yet, oh! father! wherefore does it go so slowly forwards? It is grievous that for me it is only goodness; that I am only true and honest.* But I will not burthen you with my faults."

Maria continued to write, and closed every letter with her ardent wish to go to Richter. The first portion of her correspondence only expressed a wish for a spiritual union with Jean Paul, and a meeting in that future world for which he had prepared her soul; but at length her letters betrayed her longing to be near him, her impatience for a more intimate

* She means to say, that she has no talent.

union. But now her eyes were opened, and it was as if she had touched the godlike with sacrilegious hands. In bitter repentance and tears she wrote the next day a letter, with her name, in which she endeavored to soften the impatience of the first, and to recall the contents of the postscript, but in fact repeating them both. A third and fourth letter followed in quick succession, in which she strove in vain to conceal the conflict that devoured her whole moral nature, and while she prayed him to forget her, she still held fast the hope of being admitted into his family.

Now she waited with burning impatience for an answer. She could not reckon the distance, the interruption of the post by the warlike condition of the country, the literary labors of her friend, or the many possibilities that lie between the reception and the answer to a letter. *One* only idea took possession of her mind—the thought of being despised by the most beloved of men; and to find contempt where she had looked for healing and sympathy, was too intolerable to be borne, and this infant, as she was in years and experience, could find no peace except in death.

In the twilight of a May morning she sought the river, and there, to make her resolution doubly sure, she placed a knife in her bosom. She looked round on the home where her mother still slept, which the first rays of the sun were just touching with splendor, and the thought of the inconsolable sorrow of her widowed mother made her waver in her purpose, and her sister, who had been a witness of the despairing night Maria had passed, and had followed her without betraying the cause of her fearful anticipations, arrested her, and saved her from her despair. They walked home in silence, and Maria resolved that while her mother lived she would never leave her.

But at last the expected letter arrived from Richter, and here it is.

“Your four letters from a good but over-excited heart have been received. I guessed the name, and so did a friend of mine, in the first hour. Your noble, departed father is worthy of so good a daughter. But as the earth did not reward him, may he now, when he looks down upon his daughter, be rewarded by seeing her full of a pure ardor for goodness and virtue. He would speak to her thus—‘May a good man receive my dear Maria as a daughter, and be to her a *spiritual* father. He will calm her excitement with a kind-

ness and indulgence that cannot be imagined; he will tell her that in actual life, especially in marriage, the strength of passion in women, *even innocent violence*, has been the thorns and daggers upon which happiness has fallen, and bled; that the mightiest and holiest of men, even Christ, was all gentleness, mildness, and peace. He will tell her she may soar with the wings of the *spirit*, but with the outward limbs must she only walk. She may kindle a holy fire in her heart, but must not *act* till the fire has become a pure light to guide her. I also, who speak to you in the name of your own father, desire such for my dear Maria, and will be that father to her.

“Your dream to come to me, you have, on awaking, laid aside. Leave your mother? Never! I shall more probably go to you than you come here. I and my wife both love you, and greet you kindly. Remain always good, my daughter.”

“R.”

Maria received the handwriting of Richter with floods of tears, before she looked within the letter for consolation and hope. She answered gratefully, and sent him, at the same time, the letter she had written the night before that frightful May morning, when she had entreated him to look upon her as one departed, who could not endure to live under the thought of his contempt.

Richter was shocked and alarmed at the recklessness, to which the choice between life and death seemed so easy. His own peace was endangered as well as Maria's happiness, and he wrote again with true paternal earnestness.

“Dear Maria. The abundance of what I have to say to you, of which much should go only from the lips to the ear, and my want of time, have delayed my answers to your last letters. The first that you wrote to me after my answer has shaken me more than any calamity for many years; for had it not been for an apparent accident, you would have thrown a frightful death-shadow over the whole of my future life. You should see my coffer of letters, of which at the best I have not, for want of time, answered one-sixth part, and between me and my best friends there is often a delay of months. Your first four letters truly animated me. I saw in them only a rare exalted love, and a glowing soul, but not a single line unworthy of you or of me, and I answered them with more interest and joy than I usually express. You demanded the answers only too

hastily, too punctually. Might I then not have journeyed, or been sick, or dead, or absent, or engaged in business? The fearful step that you would on that account have taken, I must, notwithstanding the greatness of mind it betrays, condemn most severely!—but never let there be mention of it between us. Besides, I wish you on your own account, and on mine, to show my two letters to your good mother, whose most painful sorrows I well know how to imagine. You think much too well of me as a man. No author can be as moral as his works, as no preacher is as pious as his sermons. Write to me in future very often all that is nearest your heart, either of joy or sorrow. You will thus relieve your mind of what rests upon it. You have become, by a peculiar bond, more knit to my life than any other absent acquaintance: only draw not false conclusions from my long silence. Very delightful to me will be our first meeting. May you be happy, my child; may these apparently only slightly and calmly written words rejoice, and not confuse or wound your heart. Your father,

R."

After the reception of his letter, peace returned to the heart of Maria, but only for a short time; the arrow had entered deeply, and the wound would not heal. In the fatal hour that she resolved on self-destruction she imagined that her inclination was more than a childish reverence, that it demanded a warmer love than that of a father, and on this account she resolved never to see Richter, and bound herself with a secret vow never to indulge the wish of meeting. She wrote to him:

"The only honorable way that can lead me to the heart for which I so long, is the grave. You will never be seen by me on this earth, for I love you too much; therefore, write to me something consoling; tell the poor Maria, that you will love her when we meet beyond this world. She can think of no joy in heaven, if there, as here, she is divided from the only soul through which she lives.

"Never again write me a letter so full of wisdom as the first, but rather one in which there is nothing but a lock of your hair; and be assured I will not cease to write till you tell me you have sent it, willingly, and your good wife also, for I deserve it, and would give half my hopes of happiness for it.

"I have no greeting for you from my mother, highly as she esteems Jean Paul, as neither she nor any one knows to

whom I write, nor any thing of the whole history. For, as she asked me *at that time* 'wherefore I would tear myself from her,' I promised her never to leave her, if she would ask me no questions. She cannot know how resolute I am, nor yet again how unreserved, and that it is my dearest happiness that Jean Paul has taken me for his adopted child. Ah, my father, love me only and be happy."

Richter sent the desired lock of hair, and wrote: "Dear Maria: The lock that my wife has cut from my bald pate, is the best answer to your last letter. Be not anxious. I pray you, that I shall let your letters, written as they will, be misunderstood to your disadvantage. I understand your warm, idealizing heart, and its great power, how then shall the words of a moment make me err? What I complain of is, that the sun-heat of your mind ripens too soon, or rather scorches and dries up its sweet fruit. Your vow never to see me comes to nothing, (now comes sermonizing, which you have forbidden,) for in the first place, one cannot vow for others; and, secondly, we vow only to do what is good, and leave the bad; and this vow we bring with us into the world in the form of conscience, and no newer oath can contradict it. Another thing; to swear to avoid a certain city, or a certain man, without reason, is to seek to control Providence; and, finally, your vow does not extend to me, and I shall see you whenever I can. No, I paint to myself the hour when you will first see my Caroline and my children, and then me, and I shall also see all your friends.

"Dear good Maria, you are the only invisible correspondent to whom I write so unreservedly, and send my hair. Could I do it if I had not so much esteem for you, and so much confidence that you would do much more for me than I deserve or can ever repay. Would you only not err when from business or necessity I am silent to your letters. Do not torment yourself, for your pain is doubled in me. Your father.

R."

"P. S. I have much cause to wish that you should tell *all* to your mother and sister, and find in their confidential love no occasion for opposition."

The result of this, perhaps, too kind and tender letter, was far otherwise than Richter expected. The words so gently admonitory sank like poison drops into Maria's heart. "He loves me," she cried, "he will seek me! He *suffers* on my account." Again the hope, the desire to see

him, grew to madness, and yet the veil of holy innocence lay upon her, and the fear that she had passed the limits of womanly delicacy and reserve distracted her.

Richter observed, with deep anxiety, the conflicting tempest in her soul—but *he wrote no more!* Then light flashed into her mind; she saw her error, and with heart-breaking repentance she wrote to him, promising to be again only a child, a loving child, and nothing more. Then he wrote to her thus: "I have received your last six letters regularly, but not always actually without the seals broken.* . . . Your last three letters were welcome to me, as they again beautifully spake of the only *possible* relation that can exist between us, that of a father and daughter. A relation in which your first letters enchanted me, and which has hitherto remained unchanged on my part. In this relation *alone* I ventured to love you so deeply, to send you the lock of my hair, to give you my confidence, and to oppose your incomprehensible scruples to our meeting. The word father is for a father, no less than the word daughter, a sacred and holy word. Dearer than all other words!

"Why do you imagine me troubled? I am happy with my children and my Caroline, and as truly beloved by them as they are by me. The sciences are my heaven. Why then should I be unhappy, except at these disastrous times, when all the nations of Europe bleed?

"Your unreserve gives me no pain, at least, unless you feel it yourself; on the contrary, it gives me only joy. You idolize me too much instead of following my counsels. I shall, therefore, offer you no more advice, so well do I know the female heart, especially the souls of fire to which you belong. Send me, instead of letters that I have not time to answer, rather journals of your life, your family, your little experiences.

"May it be well with you, dear daughter, and the gentle spirit of love, without that of *fire*, fill your breast.† R."

Maria's self-tormenting spirit now assumed another form.

* Richter wished her to understand that her letters were inspected in passing through the post office.

† Richter, in this advice, showed his knowledge of the human heart, especially of the female heart. He wished to engage her to expend that intensity of feeling under which she was *suffering*, in narrative, perhaps in imaginary scenes and sorrows, that are often in female authors only the too faithful transcript of real feelings.

The image of the best and most beloved of men, as it dwelt in her heart, had been profaned, and to restore herself to him demanded an expiation. No sacrifice was too great, and she would have thrown off the burthen of life had not her promise to her suffering mother restrained her. But the mother died, and Maria was free. Another care restrained her, the solitary and beloved orphan sister. But at this time an old friend of the family returned, unexpectedly, after a long absence, and took the orphan sister under his protection. He was an honest, firm, and benevolent man, and Maria could safely trust her sister's happiness to his keeping.

Now she could go to the beloved, and fall at his feet, and ask again to be his daughter. No! the meeting she desires must be for another world, where there can exist none but spiritual relations.

The domestic affairs of her friend and sister were all arranged; every minute care taken for their comfort; all her duties scrupulously performed, and now that the aim of her wishes was reached, she wrote to Richter.

"Do not be angry, dearest father, at receiving these lines from your unfortunate Maria. My mother has been two months dead, and she will consent that I shall now follow her. She wished me to take care of my sister—that is done. *Her* happiness is secure, and I can no longer endure to live, where *mine* has so incomprehensibly failed. Ah! in the great universe of God there will yet be a place where I can recover my peace, and be as I wish. I have suffered so much! I dare to die! Ah, you will despise me as long as I live, for you will never understand how I have languished to do something for you, or for those dear to you, and how much the thought has killed me, when I learnt that I could not make you happy. But despise me not so much, as not to let your children, of whom I cannot think without tears, accept a little present from me. Let them not know from whom it came. I would willingly be wholly forgotten, and unmarked, vanish away. No one can learn my history from myself. I have burnt all books and journals. Your hair only remains on my neck, and I take it with me. Farewell, beloved father! Ah! that it must be so with me! *Oh that it were all a dream, and I had never written to you!* My unfortunate spirit will hover about you. Perhaps I shall be permitted to give you a sign, or to bring you some higher knowledge."

Together with Maria's letter, Richter received one from the friend already mentioned, giving an account of her death.

"The letter of Maria, which you will receive with this will leave no doubt of her sad fate. What to us is a dark riddle, will find perhaps with you, who knew the unfortunate better than we did, a clear solution. She had long desired that death should come to her accidentally. But in vain. How often she inhaled, but without effect, the poisonous breath of pestilence. A thousand times she stretched herself upon the sick couch of the dying, and pressed her cheek upon that of death; but the poisoned arrow touched her not, and no bloom faded from her youthful cheek. Then came May again, with its dark recollections from the past year; but Maria was apparently happy, with a festive and wild gayety alternating with earnest and cheerful calmness. On the fatal day she read and wrote, and prepared the evening meal for the friend and her sister. She covered the table and fulfilled with graceful attention the duties of a kind hostess. She rose from the table to write a letter, and at about eight o'clock asked her sister to sit down with their friend at the piano, and embraced her at the same moment with warmth and agitation. She threw herself on the breast of the friend, and said, while her voice was choked with tears, '*Take care of my sister.*' Scarcely had she gone when an inexpressible anxiety was felt by both. They looked around, and saw the letters Maria had left, and hastened to seek the unfortunate!

"They met a multitude of people bringing the body of a young girl, that a fisherman had drawn from the stream. It was Maria! They bore the body into the nearest house and means of resuscitation were used, till at length she opened her eyes."

But Maria's purpose to die was too strong; she resisted all the means of recovery, and although perfectly conscious and calm, and self-possessed, before morning she had ceased to breathe.

Her death drew a dark cloud over Jean Paul; but he rejoiced that he had not followed the counsels of those who had advised him to treat her with severity or ridicule.

I do not envy the mind that can find any thing to ridicule in the melancholy history of this poor victim of the imagination, or in the far less tragical result of Bettine's enthusiastic admiration of Goethe. Bettine lived in the

same society with Goethe, and was happy in all the actual relations of life. Maria, on the contrary, brooded in solitude over an ideal image of the poet; or rather she found her own nature reflected in his pages, and, like Narcissus of old, she fell in love with her own ideal.

With all his boasted knowledge of the female heart, we must still think that Jean Paul erred in his treatment of Maria. At this time she was seventeen, and he was fifty years old; and, as his biographers assert, he had lost the traces of the poet, at least in his exterior appearance. Had he permitted Maria to go to him, no doubt her passion would have been cured. She would have found him fulfilling all the duties of a good citizen, a kind father, a faithful husband; living a prosaic life, with his squirrels and birds; her imagination, heated by solitude, and an intense spiritual egotism, would have fallen naturally into the calmness of the every-day domestic duties, in which woman's destiny is cast.

CHAPTER VI.

RICHTER'S LOVE OF TRAVELLING.—VISITS PRINCE DALBERG.—
VISITS HEIDELBERG.—RECEIVES HIS DOCTOR'S DIPLOMA.—
HENRY VOSS.—ANIMAL MAGNETISM.

WE turn now to more cheerful incidents. We have A. D. 1816,
aged 53. already learned from Richter's youthful history how much value he attached to the pleasures and advantages of journeying. During the war, and while his pension was withheld, the old desire slumbered, or was only indulged in short excursions to Erlangen and Nurnberg. But now he was again easy in his pecuniary relations, and his history will be best learned from his letters to Caroline, on his various journeys from 1816 to 1821. We cannot but wonder that the beloved wife was never his companion upon these excursions; but then he would not have enjoyed what he called the chief pleasure of travelling, the delight of returning to her.

Caroline was a true woman, and a true wife: one of those self-sacrificing, devoted beings, who, regardless of her own pleasures, was careful for the comfort of others. Every

thing was prepared by her for Richter's convenience on these occasions, even to the packing of the carriage, where he continued his literary works on the road, reading and writing, as if he were in his own study.

Paul left exact directions for his family in his absence: a sort of testament for each. To the youngest daughter was committed the care of the weather frog; to her sister the Canary birds, and the spiders; and for his wife such written directions as the following:

"In case of fire, the dark bound manuscripts must be *first* saved. Second. The money; and paper coffer *afterwards*. Third. Record every dollar that you take out, and the date, *but further of the spending, not*. Fourth. Let both the doors of my study be shut, and do not let the squirrel go in. Let all the windows be closed also, on account of the flies, and open them only on the day of my arrival. Fifth. Lend no book without recording it. I pray thee heartily, to eat regularly, and to drink a little beer, that you may be blooming. Do not be anxious about me. Do not remain always in the house, and take Spitz with you when go out"

He rewarded Caroline's minute cares by long and constant letters. He appears in all his journeys to have written to her every other day. We regret that her letters are not also given to us; but from the few we have, modest and beautiful as they are, we see his genius reflected in hers as the light of a distant star is reflected in the dew of the violet.

Richter's first journey is to visit the prince primate Dalberg, to whom he had been indebted for the first two years of his pension. The grateful disposition of the poet is evinced in this, that instead of visiting the enchanting scenes upon the Rhine he had so longed for, he should first go to the solitary Regensburg, before all things, to fulfil a duty of remembrance to the deserted and forgotten Dalberg.

"Regensburg, August, 1816.

"The prince is a tall old man, somewhat bent, with a strongly marked profile, especially the nose; the left eye is always, through weakness, closed. In conversation, as in every thing else, he is more of a learned man than of a prince . . . The first day, from eleven to twelve, he asked only about my wife, and at dinner also, when he drank her health. By evening our acquaintance was more perfect, than,

since Herder's health, I have enjoyed with any one. Never in so short a time has a prince won my love. Since then, I have been with him every day from six o'clock until half-past seven. We sit in the twilight with a half-emptied flask between us, and talk about religion, philosophy, and all the sciences. In faith and works he is a spiritualist, in the best sense of the word. He told me, unreservedly, of the mistakes of his youth, in short, of a hundred things, that can only be repeated verbally. His working day consists of ten hours; two hours he gives to public transactions; two he labors upon his work upon Christianity. After intellectual exertion, prayer, he said, strengthened and refreshed his mind more than any thing beside. His religious axioms are, the highest veneration for God, and the deepest self-humiliation. Against my placing Christ beneath God, he said, in a gentle tone, merely no! He desired my judgment of the great question of Pilate. It is not easily answered, but mine satisfied him. I spare the good old man of seventy-four all disputations.

He told me, if he ever received the twenty thousand florins, that without solicitation the Congress of Vienna had agreed to pay him, he should do something for my wife, after my course was finished.*

About eight o'clock last evening the prince took me to visit the Count Westerhold, a friend of Lavater's, who, on account of his ten years of gout, admits no one earlier. Enter his apartment, you have been there for years! Think of a table with a curious lamp, that I know not how to name, suspended above it. On the sofa his mild and sweet wife; the prince near her, and opposite, the eldest daughter, who is mending pens for her two little sisters, who, at a distant table, are preparing their lessons for their teacher; the Count, also, was writing at the great work-table. I have never seen such home-like simplicity in the apartment of a noble. We were all happy, especially the prince, and I was like an old outserved poodle, that had got comfortably upon his stool. There was tea, with rack, and afterwards the bishop.†

"Evening suppers and tea, as with us, are usual here.

* The prince died suddenly, without a will, and Caroline received nothing.

† Mulled wine, with roasted oranges in it.

Except the first time, I have been always in boots. You see to what boldness a quiet, self-formed man may come. I would the situation of the learned were more respectable here. I was never so moderate in conversation; and in drinking, I am completely to be wondered at.

"Yesterday, as I came from the heavenly garden at Prufflingen, I received your precious letter. It brought me a more beautiful Eden than the one I had just left. From strong emotion I was silent. Ah, could I have, instead of the pale image in my thoughts, your warm, living eyes before me! I shall leave here Friday the sixth, and get home about seven on Saturday. The children can go half an hour before to see if I have come, so that I may have you *alone* at first.

"Wherefore, good soul, do you excuse your necessary expenses? I fear only that you spare the money too much. I shall employ the two days of my journey back in moral observations, for which I have written a special book (that I studied also at Bayreuth, little as you observed me) to strengthen my mind against the perversity, which I inherit from my father, of making every where false lights and shades. My Primas alone has a heart full of pure love, and free from all selfishness. You would fall weeping upon his breast. Farewell, my beloved! Act freely, and do not trouble thyself, nor thine.

R."

The following year, 1817, Richter visited Heidelberg and saw, for the first time, the enchanting shores of the Rhine. His account of his reception of his Doctor's diploma and of a fête that was made for him upon the Neckar, and so naive and betray so innocent a vanity, that they should not be withheld from the reader.

"Heidelberg, July, 1817.

"On the very day, my beloved dear heart, that I have become Doctor of philosophy* will I write to you. How shall I paint to you the love and esteem, even to excess with which I am here received. The dog even, could I speak, would tell you he had never been so well fed, and from such beautiful hands. I have lived hours such as never passed before, especially on the water excursions; li

* Paul's naive delight at receiving his Doctor's diploma was expressed with the most childlike simplicity. He tells Caroline that Max must translate it, so that she could show it to the friends and neighbors.

tening to the *vivats* of the students, and the singing of old Italian music. But I thank the *All Good* as much as I can thank him, by mildness, quietness, modesty, love and justice to every one. I am most intimate with Paulus, and his wife, who is not after the Jena report, a pretending, literary coquette, but an enlightened, accomplished *hausfrau*, and their beautiful daughter, Sophia, who reads indeed, nothing but me and the Bible, and understands the most difficult parts, or suffers herself to be enlightened.

"On Sunday there was a water party on the Necker. It seemed to me like life in my romances, as the long vessel with an awning, ornamented with oak branches and ribbon streamers, and followed by a boat filled with musicians, parted for the mountains of Bergen. The greater part of the ladies and men sat at the long table in the centre of the vessel. Students, professors, beautiful girls, women, the crown prince of Sweden, and a splendid Englishman, a young prince von Waldeck, all united in the most innocent enjoyment. My cap, and the hat of the prince were demanded from the other end of the table by two beautiful girls, and returned wreathed with oak leaves, and we must both wear them thus. . . .

"One cloud after another withdrew from the sky. Upon the old castle rocks waved flags and handkerchiefs, and the young people shouted *vivats*. In our vessel there was much singing, and boat after boat followed us with music. In the evening a youth with a guitar sang my favorite song, 'Name not the name.' I was so powerfully affected, that I was obliged to think of foolish and stupid things to restrain the excess of my emotion; and thus in a beautiful evening, the whole little world of joy returned without the smallest interruption, accident or misunderstanding, to their homes.

"Thus blessed, and indeed encroaching on the gifts of the Infinite, I stood in the darkness of night in a circle of students, singing *vivats*, and gave my hand to be seized by a hundred hands, while I looked gratefully to heaven.

"August.

"Dearest! I write again upon my holy mountain! How shall I paint to you the open heaven into which I looked as the Upper Rhine opened before me. It flows eternally before me. I have passed from admiration to admiration. I have received in all the cities in the same manner. In Man-

heim they gave, on my account, the opera of the *Vestal*, by Spantini, which usually melts and weakens, by its exquisite beauty. I would, hearing these tones, depart from life. What lovely female forms came before me. I have not seen for ten years so many, and so youthful, and been kissed with such emotion; but I felt, thereby, the holiness, and elevation and deep-rooted nature of married love, and that this, in comparison, is only a rootless and scentless flower. The love of married life, in comparison with this, is like embracing one's own children rather than those of a stranger. I know decidedly, that my domestic heaven can and will be only the repetition of what it has been; and that it shall exceed the past for thy happiness, thou true and good!

"Max must study at Heidelberg. Pure, protecting spirits, in the form of my friends, will surround him. You will always, dear Max, be to your mother as you were the day after your communion, and not afar off trouble me. I so gladly think of you thus; and it would be hard if, on my return, I could not embrace you with the same affection as the others. I think often of you, dearest Caroline, often with painful longing; I will never repeat so long a journey without you. You would be so loved here, by Swartz, Hegel, and Paulus!

. . . "Ah! well, dearest! I have here much, too much to do, although I steal time to work from the fairest hours. When I return I will accomplish more, go out less, live abstemiously, and say often to the body '*thou must!*' It is incomprehensible the true oversight that one takes of himself, and the faults that one discovers in himself, when he arrives in a new place, under new relations. It is so with me, and I shall return to thee a new and improved edition of myself. Farewell, beloved! Greet my Emanuel, and *his* Emanuelle, and Otto, and the good Kinderlein; they will soon again be crowding on my sofa."

In this Heidelberg journey, Richter formed the most intimate friendship with Henry Voss, a man much younger than himself, indeed young enough to have been the friend of his son. He wrote with great delight to his wife, "that in the true German Voss, he had, in his old age, found a new *thou*."*

* The reader will recollect *thou* is only used in the familiar intercourse of intimate friendship.

"stood beside him like his youth." It is a rare blessing to the old to go back, and as it were live over again their youthful years in another and younger mind. It is like a new blossoming of life, after the fruit has been gathered.

In this journey Richter also made the discovery of his power of imparting animal magnetism, and he afterwards made use of it to alleviate pain in his suffering friends. While he was at Heidelberg, a lady brought her daughter, suffering from severe toothache, to him, after he had retired for the night. He rose instantly, and came into the hall with bare feet, and with the utmost patience and tenderness exerted the magnetic power, and sent the young lady home in a deep and quiet sleep. But while, on one side, the discovery of this power was a rich source of humorous excitement, and an occasion of benevolent exertion for others, the practical use of it at so late a period of life, suddenly impaired his vigor, and helped, with other evils, to bring on an early and premature old age.

The following year, 1818, Jean Paul left home again, to visit Frankfort and renew his pleasure by again seeing Heidelberg and the Rhine; but he seems to begin to feel the weariness of travelling alone. He wrote to Caroline:

"The fairest prospect to me this afternoon was your apartment, surrounded by our children. In the morning will your eyes and heart hover about me, and remind me of a day* that has now become holier and dearer than in its first birth. Be only joyful and hoping, as I am, and we shall need nothing more. Children! would you create a joy for your father, while he is away, make your mother happy by your goodness and love, and you will be truly dear to your father."

The next day:—"Perhaps I have consecrated our yesterday's festival by a health-giving action. I passed through Wurzburg, on account of the misdirection of my pension by the finance director. But I said not a word of the mistake, for he had a consumptive daughter of sixteen years, that the family physician had given over. I proposed to this man (as he had no faith in it) magnetism, merely as a last possible saving means. With his consent I magnetized the daughter in bed, and put her into a profound and gentle sleep. Another physician, an excellent young man, who has learnt in

* Twenty-seventh of May, their wedding-day.

Berlin, will continue the magnetism. I have, at least, saved the good mother from premature tears, for without magnetism the daughter must certainly die. Her face is already like white marble sculptured on a monument. It was my only consolation yesterday, when I had nothing to press to my heart but my own empty arms, that you would make for yourself a real joy, in thinking of this day, of our short separation and eternal reunion. Farewell, most beloved. My heart kisses the children! Had I, of the six or eight eyes, one only here!"

"Frankfort, May 30.

"To Caroline. Yesterday, in the midst of the coldest weather, I reached this great, splendid city. On the way I have gained on the right ear a wholly gray lock, and on the left, one nearly so. I must thank either the cold or the cap for this natural powder. . . . I am in the house of the rich bookseller, Wenner. Paying is not to be thought of. I could not, without great trouble, insist upon paying for wine and beer. His somewhat sickly, but noble and diffident (childless) wife, a singer and sketcher, and my warmest reader, has provided for the most minute conveniences. I have three splendid chambers and a private staircase. Near the writing-table a bell for the servants, wax lights and silver candlesticks, and, if I desire it, the most complete solitude. The lady wept for joy when I came here. Wenner has much goodness in his countenance, in which there is a strong resemblance to Goethe, and he always acts without many words.

"There are as many ugly female faces here, as there were beautiful in Mainz—truly, broadly, ugly. Till now I have only met and spoken with matrons, except two single ladies, which the humorist, Goethe's early passion, invited me to meet this evening at Brentano's. I can scarcely enjoy this heavenly weather, because there is no garden out of the city, where I can go.

. . . "How often I thought yesterday, on the water, under the splendid canopy of night, of you, and said, "Ah, could my Caroline enjoy her birthday festival with me; and this morning I awoke melancholy at the thought that you are always alone, or only with the children, on your birthday. But I need no festival of life to remind me of your love. The careful preparation and packing of every article,

the new wristbands on the shirts, every morning remind me of the pious hand that so lovingly orders every thing for my comfort."

The Frankfort enthusiasm for Richter was a repetition of the Heidelberg. They also gave him a night festival, in boats on the Maine, which was nearly a repetition of that on the Necker, except that the boats were illuminated with colored lamps, and the shore with torches.

He extended his journey to Heidelberg, and seems, almost for the first time in his life, to have made the melancholy discovery, that the same joys, although the elements are the same, are never felt a second time with the same intensity.

He wrote to Caroline: "I depart from Heidelberg in a wholly different disposition from the last time, although there was nothing *then* that ought to have been unpleasant or painful to you. Indeed, I look with too prosaic eyes upon every thing. The poetic flower of love of the last year, is (alas, for it was so innocent) entirely faded, as in its nature it could know neither continuance nor resuscitation. What I truly dream of, is our evenings together. How long shall they last? First Max withdraws, then the little girls, and we sit alone together; at last you are wholly alone. Ah! let us love as long as there is yet time to love! Eternally your own

R."

"As I passed through Offenbach, a beautiful mother of six children came out to meet me, and pressed into my hand a leaf of thanks for the Levana. Never female eyes, except yours, looked so amiably at me. What open, beautiful faces there are in this Offenbach. The love of my fellow-men is the only dew for my arid soul."

To understand the first part of the letter just read, it is necessary to refer to a circumstance mentioned by *one* of Richter's biographers.

In his first journey to Heidelberg, the daughter of Paulus, the beautiful and *spirituelle* Sophia Paulus, is said to have made an impression on the heart of Richter, that renewed all his romantic dreams of a spiritual love. This lady was afterwards celebrated for her literary productions, and by a short and unhappy marriage with William August Schlegel. Notwithstanding Jean Paul's deep, and hardly gained knowledge of the female heart, he is said to have spoken, after his return home, with such openness and fre-

quency of Sophia, as to awake a painful jealousy, and humiliating distrust in the heart of his devoted wife.

The reader may judge by a letter he wrote to the beautiful Sophia, after his return, how far the jealousy of Caroline had any real foundation.

"My Sophia: My first written word is to you. In the evening, in Manheim, I could not leave the apartment where there had been so much love, and in the morning I could not remain there,* but went for the whole day to Steinburg. This Steinburg held out to me a pure heaven, and if you will share it, a perfect one. He and others would get up for me the opera of the *Vestal*, which is the Madonna, the others are only nuns among operas. . . . You and the Rhine belong together, and when I meet it again, your image, like that of a star, will hover over it, and cast a splendor upon it, wherever it flows. How often I took the front seat in the carriage yesterday, to look at the Heidelberg mountains, that arose shining in the distance, as the clouds hung over the place where I was. . . . And so, farewell, never-to-be-forgotten Sophia. Write me, above all things, every pain that you feel, for I know your joys. Nothing can divide us, not even the great happiness that I so devoutly wish thee!†

"R."

CHAPTER VII.

VISITS MUNCHEN.—RICHTER.—HIS SON MAX.—HIS MELANCHOLY AND DEATH.

A. D. 1820,
aged 57. RICHTER'S journey, in the spring of 1820, was to visit his son Max, who had been placed, at the age of sixteen, at the Gymnasium at Munchen. An extract from one of his letters will afford an insight into the charac-

* Sophia and her father accompanied him to Manheim, on his return.

† Her marriage with August Schlegel, which lasted only a few weeks, when she returned to her parents in Heidelberg. The mother of Sophia was one of the most distinguished literary women in Germany, and she was herself remarkable for her study of Shakspeare, and knowledge of English literature.

ter of this interesting young man, whose early death threw a cloud over his family, that never wholly passed away.

"Dear Caroline,—Upon the way from Regensburg to Landshut, God sent me, in the forenoon, three cloudless, heavenly blue, sunny hours; and I had, for the first and last time in that journey, an idyllic frame of mind, for which I have languished long years; and that endures no society except that of the coachman, who sings in the distance as mine does. In the afternoon, where the distant prospect over Landshut opens richly, the devil himself I believe seized the opportunity, and poured so out of the clouds, that he drowned the beautiful Isar, and the bridge and the mountain crown over Landshut.

"This rainy introduction into Munchen continued as far as the Black Eagle. I sought Max in vain in his nest up five flights of stairs, and then went to the Schlichtgeroll's. I found them as *spirituelle* as in former times, but they convinced me of a truth I have long suspected, that years take from women more of the outward than from man of the inward.

"They conjectured that Max was with their son; and in two minutes he hung sobbing upon my breast. His form and face have filled out splendidly. He is half a head taller than I am; blooming, and fuller in the face. He was more neatly and elegantly dressed than I am, and yet wears only the clothes he brought from home. His personal appearance corresponds with, yes, exceeds his letters, and my whole heart yearns towards the pure, free, powerful, but unpretending youth. As he went with me from the Schlichtgeroll's, he asked, 'how then is my mother?' but his voice failed him for weeping. This is pure, honest sincerity, without extravagance. He will take nothing of all I brought for him, not even the watch, as he says, 'he needs nothing.' . . . He deprived me of one night's sleep, by telling me of his sorrowful life in the beginning of winter, in his first destitute lodgings, with only a little iron stove that imparted no heat, his windows broken and his wood stolen, with nothing to enjoy at morning and evening, as at home; his clothes, from his extreme thinness, all too wide for him; and in the solitary city without one friend, he wept all night from home-sickness, and yet continued to study till twelve o'clock."

This letter will prepare the reader to understand the

character of this son of the poet, whose melancholy fate opened a wound in the father's heart that never closed, but continued to bleed till it exhausted his own life. From early childhood Max had devoted himself to learning with incredible industry. In his fifteenth year he had read the Old and New Testaments in the original languages, Homer, and the Greek tragedians. His too ascetical and mistaken sense of duty in Munchen, and in Heidelberg, where he was afterwards sent; the intensity of his industry, the faithfulness with which he imitated his father's frugality, the few alleviations and comforts he would allow himself, and the high tone of his religious enthusiasm, soon and imperceptibly undermined the healthy tone of his body and mind.

Although distinguished for the facility with which he learned all languages, he was deficient in imagination and in creative power, and the poor young man was discouraged in not finding the rich results he had expected from his faithful industry; and in his painful doubts of himself, he attributed his failure to a want of sincerity of purpose, and took refuge in the mysticism of a severe, innocence-condemning supernatural theology.

Unhappily, Heidelberg was at this time the hot-bed of those unintelligible teachers, to whom the poor youth turned for support in the sea of his doubts; and when he could not comprehend their mystical and philosophical phrases, he attributed it to his own intellectual incapacity, and instead of turning to his father to find the cheerful and rational exercise of true devotion, he sank deeper in despondency.

The early martyrdom of this interesting youth was partly the tragic result of Jean Paul's system of education. The whole tendency of his teaching is to cultivate the higher powers of the intellect, to excite the imagination, to make poets and literary men; and those to whom nature had not imparted the higher intellectual gifts, were discouraged in his presence. His personal influence also, upon every one who came into intimate association with him, was overpowering; they believed the true aim of life was to become like him, a poet, or a literary man. Even women were not exempt from this influence, and his eldest daughter believed it her duty to remain unmarried, and to devote herself to the pursuits of her father, as his companion and friend. Happily, the instincts of woman's nature will sooner or later lead out of the labyrinths of theory, and after her father's death she

became a happy wife, contented with the feminine duties of a good *hausfrau*.

Richter had seen from the beginning the errors to which his son inclined ; and though he had warned him seriously and earnestly, he thought them perhaps only a stage in the intellectual progress of his youth, that he would soon pass over. But, alas, the poisoned arrow had entered too deeply, and his father's letters, instead of healing, but intimated prophetically, the issue. He wrote to him :

“ My good Max : Your letters have rejoiced and touched our hearts. But the *Kanne* theological watering-pot, that has showered you so effectually, makes me anxious for your *youth* ; an irrecoverable period of life, that should be cheerful and joyous without monkish vagaries, and, but a preparation for a serious and useful manhood. This *Kanne*, always and eternally *one-sided*, is exactly as enthusiastic in his theology, and in the pitiful life of his saints, as he was in his ancient wars, where he held all the historical persons of the Old Testament merely as astronomical emblems.

“ Study the history of the establishment of Christianity ; the letters of the apostles and evangelists, that were first collected at the end of the second century, that were known through Irenius, and particularized in the beginning of the third century by Origen. In all the conversations of Christ there is not a single word of the doctrine of all souls falling at the same time with Adam, or of satisfaction for sin. May God, my dear son, direct you to the cheerful Christianity of a Herder, and Jacobi, and Kant. Read rather, as I did in Leipzig, Arrian's Epictetus, the loving Antoninu's observations, and Plutarch's biographies, than *Kanne*, who is as worthless as an exeget, as he is an historian. There is no other Revelation, than the ever continuing. Our whole orthodoxy, like Catholicism itself, first centred in the evangelists, and every century opens and produces new views. Oh, could I complete my work on *ultra* Christianity ! With this new monkism you will destroy in yourself all joy, power and ardor, and in the end gain nothing.

“ I am somewhat calmed with regard to your *ultra* Christian despondency, by the hope that it has a physical source in your exclusively sedentary and studious life. It is indeed a poor consolation. The vigor of youth may enable you for some years to surpass others in knowledge, but then alas ! my son ! you come before me, in imagination, in

the years of full ripeness, twenty-five or thirty, pale, emaciated ! apparently more dead than alive ! God spare me that sight !”

The father was, indeed, spared that sight !—The inclination of his son to mysticism took a more decided form, and leaving philology as a human science, he devoted himself entirely to theology, as to the free gift of God. Religious enthusiasm assumed with this poor young man not only the form of distrust in, and contempt for all his intellectual gifts, but it was united with a severe asceticism of life, that he concealed for a long time from his parents. To his strenuous self-consuming industry, he added the most limited parsimony in food and expenses of every kind, and threw over this life-consuming self-denial, the tender veil of duty, thinking thus to spare his parents every sacrifice on his account.

His mother, also, upon whom he hung with childlike love, and who stood by him as a consoling and protecting spirit, wrote to him thus :

“ Your letter, under all the views we can take of it, must yet make us melancholy ; and I hasten, before every thing else, to inform you of it, and draw you, dear Max, from your tormenting errors. Your father loves you inexpressibly, and esteems you so entirely, that he can ask nothing from Providence, but such a son as you are. I, and your sisters, and all our friends, bless God that you are so pure, so innocent, the joy of your family, and of the world ; that you have preserved the honesty and truth of your mind in striving after science, and that there is ever developed in you the love of the holy, the true, and the beautiful. What would you have then further ? Can men be gods ? Nothing is to be said against your placing your *ideal* so very high. But if your jealousy of yourself, on one side, holds you in that touching humility that so well becomes the greatest men, yet real religion is only apparent when, added to our earnest struggle for the highest, cheerfulness stands as a companion at her side. To strive against the limitations of humanity, that are opposed more or less to every individual mind, is not pious—is not permitted by God. Oh, suffer your beautiful enthusiasm for faith, to show itself in this childlike submission. Strive, but torture not yourself with just nor unjust criminations, when neither the one nor the other belong to you. Depend upon the aid that is lent you.

and the success flowing therefrom will give you rest and peace.

'The lioness covets not the lion's mane ;
 The mother pheasant sighs not for ornament ;
 With proud neck the swan sails the sea ;
 Humbly, his mate shelters her young.
 The rivulet murmurs most sweetly,
 But bears no proud navy on its breast.
 The ruby outlasts the fragrant rose,
 But the dewy tears of evening
 Shed no mild radiance from it.
 Vain man ! What wouldst thou be ?
 Be thyself ! Covet no greater gift.'

"This extract from Plato's poems, that pleased me so much on the first reading, happily expresses my views. Oh how painful to me is your melancholy, and the slavish, unjust self-accusation before God, that impairs all your active powers ; that excess of religious sensibility, that instead of the cheerful and loving power of Christian faith, pours only death-streams into all the veins of life.

"Adieu, my dear son. I embrace you a thousand times, with the warmest love."

This wise and tenderly maternal letter, will make the reader regret that there are not more of Caroline's to her son, where the riches of an intellectual nature are united with the tenderness of a mother's heart.

The anxious solicitude of the parents of Max was only too soon justified. The too sensitive and conscientious youth returned home at the end of the year, shaken, pale, emaciated ! and a nervous fever of a few days' continuance, consigned him to an early grave.

This melancholy death of his son, at the age of nineteen, like a heavy blow, seemed to strike our Richter to the earth. The firm, strong man, whom we have seen, like a block of marble, by every previous stroke becoming only more polished and statuelike, was shattered and broken by the death of his son. He could not bear the sight of any book his son had touched ; and the word Philology (the science in which Max excelled) went through his heart like a bolt of ice. He had such wonderful power over himself as to go on with his comic romance of *Nicholas Margraf*, while his eyes continually dropped tears. He wept so much in secret that his eyes became impaired, and he trembled for the total loss of

sight. Wine, that had previously, after long-sustained labor, been a cordial to him, he could not bear to touch; and after employing the morning in writing, he spent the whole afternoon lying on the sofa in his wife's apartment, his head supported by her arm. Caroline stifled the yearnings of a mother, bereaved of her only son, to comfort and support her husband. She contrived every artifice to draw him from his grief—proposing amusements for her daughters, to induce him to dress and shake off his despondency, and go out; but at the same time she represented him “as a true angel” in his sorrow.

At the end of three months Richter was able to write to his friend, Henry Voss.

“How often, for a quarter of a year, have you complained of me, excused me, and again complained, and yet at last excused me, poor devil that I am. Ah! I could not do otherwise. My being has suffered not merely a wound, but a complete cutting off of all joy. All former losses are unlike the last, and my longing after him grows always more painful. Not on his account do I need consolation, but for the loss of his love. I have still the power to avoid constantly dwelling upon him, although every Grecian author, yes, even the word *Philology* cuts me to the heart. But to hear or see any thing that was his! Ah, that I cannot bear! Enough of this.

“I am revising the third volume of the *Comet*. The book upon immortality demands the strength, that I can only dare to think of in the fulness of health. In looking over the thirty years' work, I find that it descends into the depths of philosophy.*

“I will open new light for a thousand veiled and tearful eyes, and show them new kingdoms in the future world of existence! What new year shall I wish to you all? One only, that has not the most distant resemblance to my own!”†

* The *Campaner Thal*. Jean Paul began, on the day of his son's burial, a new work on the *immortality of the soul*, upon the foundation of the *Campaner Thal*.

† In Richter's letters to his wife, I have translated only what was *personal* to himself and family; allusions to persons and passing events are wholly unintelligible to us.

CHAPTER VIII.

RICHTER VISITS DRESDEN.—THE IMPRESSION HE MADE UPON HIS RELATIVES.

WHEN the spring returned, that season that Richter A. D. 1832, aged 59. so loved, and that had never failed to exhilarate him, his friends urged him again to journey, hoping to awaken new hopes, or to turn his thoughts from his heart-consuming sorrow. The loss of his son, also, made him wish to draw closer the bonds of relationship with the members of his wife's family. Caroline's sister, Minna Spazier, had lived many years in Dresden, and supported her orphan children by her literary exertions.* One of these sons was born in the same year and month with the poet's son Max. Such a coincidence could not fail to interest the imagination of a man who attached so much importance to coincidences, and to the time of his own birth. He wrote, therefore, to his sister-in-law :

"I come to you with a written petition, for which I will thank you verbally. In April I would enjoy again the beautiful city of Dresden, where many years ago, in the train of the Frau von Berlespsh, I lost more than I found. Ah ! I need now not to forget, for that would be impossible, but to continue to remember all that I have ever loved. I seek in Dresden only music, nature, that is, the environs of the city, and loving men. In myself, much has changed. Time treats wounded men like a block of marble, and beats off, with heavy blows, piece after piece, even if it were the form of a son. Ah ! that we were indeed of marble !"

To the young Richard Spazier, the twin cousin of Max, to whom we have been much indebted through the course of this biography, we owe an account of the first meeting with Richter.

The children had been educated in the utmost reverence for their uncle, the poet, and although they had heard

* Caroline Wilhelmine, called Minna Spazier, married the second time a person of the name of Uthe, and added his name to that of Spazier, her literary name. She was now living in Dresden, editor of the *Sinngrün* (Evergreen), a periodical, in which Jean Paul and many distinguished female authors assisted her.

of his works, they had never read a line of his. Their mother received the announcement of his visit with some timidity, and prepared her children for his reception with stories of his severity, of his penetrating knowledge of every weakness in others, and infinite firmness in their suppression in himself. He says, "even my eldest *pattern* brother trembled at the thought of appearing before Richter. My situation was most painful; born on the same year and day with his own son Max, my mother, in her maternal solicitude, looked upon it as the finger of Providence, indicating that I should supply to the afflicted father the loss of his son, and pointed out *this* as the decisive moment of my life. Ah, what could be expected of a youth of nineteen years, who had never read a line of his works, who had been half a year at the university, and was just in the most shining period of *Philistery*.* What would the severe moralist say to my beard, my *renownist** dress, my pipe, my open breast, my unshorn locks. I heard his voice in the hall and would have fled, but it was too late; and pale as a cloth, and with trembling lips I stood before him. But it was only for a moment, and fear gave place to astonishment. I saw a strong, but undersized, apparently kind-hearted man, with brown face, an eye that did not annihilate, but beamed mildly, even tenderly upon me. He was dressed in a summer coat of invisible green, with a straw hat. He held a strong stick in his hand, and was followed by a white poodle. I felt in a moment that here was a man who would leave to every one his own independence, who would not make *himself* the standard of morals or manners, and that the want of a neckcloth would be no crime in his eyes. And so it remained the whole time he was with us—he demanded nothing—he asked not that we should give him our time, or yield our opinions to his. He received, gratefully, the attentions we offered him, but left every one the liberty to speak freely the freest opinions. Instead of feeling reserve or constraint in his presence, he seemed to enlarge the region of self-dependence, to excite and draw out the resources of our minds. My students' nature, that others abhorred, he would draw towards him and protect—yes, he was often the direct advocate of youthful impulses.

* For the meaning of these words the reader is referred to Howit's "Student's Life in Germany."

“After he had been with us some time, from gratitude, and, perhaps, to give him pleasure, I read the most celebrated of his works, the *Titan*: the book left me for the most part cold, with the exception of the charming scenes in Italy, and the character of Linda; but my indignation was extreme at the catastrophe of Linda. Richter received, without the smallest surprise, my declaration, that I had never before read any thing of his, and observed just as calmly, that I was extremely displeased at the fate of Linda. He even led himself, to my excuse, by saying that Jacobi, and the best judges, had expressed the same displeasure; but for the purpose he had in view it could not have been otherwise; and no encouragement to read another of his works passed his lips. At last, it happened one morning, that he asked after my studies, and my aim in life. I answered only, ‘that I would learn all that was best and most beautiful, but that I had not yet made choice of a profession. He sought to help me to know myself, by asking ‘if I had not a favorite author?’ I had not, at that time, but I told him ‘that as a boy I had learnt Homer by heart, and that I now longed to read Tacitus.’ ‘I see,’ said he, ‘that, like every youth, you would be an author,’ and he asked me to show him any essay that I had ever attempted to write, etc.”

In the five weeks that Richter spent in Dresden, every thing united, as by mutual consent, to restore his wounded spirit to its former cheerfulness. The fairest blue heaven rested the whole time upon the valley of the Elbe. Distinguished strangers, such as Tieck, Tiege, Bottiger, and Carl Forster were then in Dresden. The inhabitants, indeed, manifested for him nothing but curiosity, and the court did not notice him. Distinguished and accomplished women, as usual, crowded around him; but, to avoid all exciting emotions, he strictly adhered to the rule he had laid down for himself, not to visit more than once at any house. His sister-in-law's family afforded him a domestic circle, where he could enjoy the privacy and the intimate friendship he loved. The highly nervous state of his mind made it necessary for him to avoid all excitement, and all deep impressions. He therefore did not set his foot within the Dresden gallery, or any other hall of art. He avoided the theatres, and only once heard a mass in a Catholic church, surrounded by friends who shielded him from all exciting emotions.

A lady at this time speaks thus of his reserve and self-

control in society, when he did not always take the hand that was held out to him, and suffered ladies to stand long moments, unnoticed behind his chair. "These little apparent incivilities should not bring into question the just, enlightened, ever compassionate disposition, that has made the soul of this extraordinary man its temple. How beautifully does he extend to every one, even the least intellectual in society, a spiritual arm. He comes to the aid of the poorest with the riches of the mind. How his host and hostess revere him. A wild animal, since he has been under their roof, has become mild and humane; a miser would build a house, merely to make him a convenient chamber. No, never shall I forget the night when my daughter, suffering from a severe toothache, burst into his lodgings at midnight, and waked him suddenly from his first sleep. How indulgently he came, barefooted, down the garden steps, for the fainting child had thrown herself into a garden seat, and began to stroke her magnetically. Soon her pain was alleviated, and after half an hour she was carried in a deep sleep to her own house."

How did Richter himself enjoy what gave others so much pleasure? He wrote to Caroline. "After a long time a blue sky is united with blue mountains. . . God wills, that I should again, and without display, be a little joyful. Among the women who here particularly interest me, is the wife of Professor Forster, who sends me frequently, by her little daughter, fruit and flowers. I enjoy here many pleasures through the society of enlightened men, and the arts, but I long inexpressibly for our life again, at home together."

To his young friend, Henry Voss, he also wrote: "The pleasure-gardens of Dresden exceed all Germany in beauty of prospect. The Brühles terrace, in the evening, with its lights, mountains, the bridge and the Elbe, gave me an hour of inspiration, that I have for many years sought in vain; when all hovered over me as in the spring of youth, and within and without all were blessed dreams. It was not melancholy, not even longing; but full intoxication of happiness from *within*.

The Dresden weeks were the last of light and joy Richter ever passed. The death of his friend Henry Voss, immediately after, bereaved him of one who hung upon him even with feminine tenderness; and it was during the Dresden

residence that he accidentally discovered that the sight of his left eye was so much gone, that he could only see about one inch from it, and that the right eye also was rapidly failing.

He wrote most touchingly to the mother of Henry: . . . "He and my Max lie buried in my soul in one grave, for I know how both could love me! Whatever other powers your Henry possessed, one glowed within him with resistless fervor—the disciple John's capacity of loving. It was strong, firm, trusting, sacrificing; but not the accidental impulse of an imbecile. His heart beat as strongly against one, as for another. Oh, Henry! for ever lost! Never more upon this earth shall I be so loved; but even this guaranties to thee and to us the assurance of meeting again. The sciences need for their enjoyment no immortality; but *love* demands the continuance of its objects! May your husband and son bind up your maternal heart, till the wound closes, or until all depart together to join the lost one."

It may seem to the reader, that there has been in the last year of Jean Paul's life, an unmanly despondency, inconsistent with that Christian stoicism with which he bore all his early disappointments. But to one whose whole employment and life had consisted in literary pursuits, who had still many works planned, for which he had made voluminous preparation, the prospect of closing his writing-desk and leaving his work unfinished, must have been full of melancholy. He had planned, also, before the death of his friend Voss, a complete revision of all his printed works, in a new and improved edition, for which Voss was to become the editor. He had also begun the *autobiography*, which makes the first part of this work; and his reluctance to speak of himself at first, and the cloud which his son's death threw over the present, prevented him from continuing that picture of his youth, that lay behind him in magic sunlight. But above all, there lay warm on his heart his beloved work on the Immortality of the Soul; that work, by the beginning of which he had consecrated the burial-day of his Max, and from whose sepulchre he hoped it would rise phoenix-like, and point the way to that immortal home, which was indeed the home of his spirit, and that where he now centred his dearest hopes. And after all these works were completed and all his life's duties finished, he had held, bright in prospect before him, a journey to Switzerland and

Italy, countries that he had thirsted to visit, and that he had looked to as the reward of a life of industry and zeal; but now a dark cloud had descended, and blotted out *all* but the inward consciousness of duty fulfilled.

Richter's nephew mentions the pain with which Jean Paul recurred, in his last days, to the loss he had suffered, in never having been able to look upon the *sea*; and his severe disappointment, that in his latter days he could not have ascended the Rigi, where, he fancied, he should see nature in her greatest elevation and her most lovely beauty.

CHAPTER IX.

THE PURELY COMIC WORKS OF JEAN PAUL.—THE LIFE OF FIBEL.
—NICHOLAS MARGRAF, OR THE COMET.

I HAVE omitted, for the purpose of bringing the active part of the life of Jean Paul to a close, all mention of his later, and purely comic works. After the publication of the *Flegelyahre* the troubles of the wars of Napoleon came on, when his deep interest in the fate of his country, and the necessity of providing for the daily demands of his family by short narratives, essays, and reviews, that brought an immediate pecuniary return, prevented him from completing any great and long-sustained work. *The Life of Fibel*, which he says in the preface was begun in 1806, was given to the public in 1812. In this preface, Paul calls the work "an octavo volume, in which some few harmless, guiltless, lightless, splendorless beings, with the like fate, live their little life. The whole is a quieting still life, a cradle for the *Farniente* of growing readers; a soft, gray, evening rain, that instead of drawing perfume from flowers, draws it from the lowly, invisible earth; where at most only a finger-breadth of evening glow shines out."

Spazier says, that *Fibel* was as much a turning-point in the author's works, as was the *Invisible Lodge*; and both are explained and understood only, through his life and his succeeding works. The first was written at the period, when emotion and earnest feeling burst forth from the ice-

rind, in which the winter-cold of satire had imprisoned them. In the following season of blooming and ever-increasing love, he had risen in creative power, and in richness of fancy, as his experience of life became more varied and full, till he reached nearly his own ideal in the *Titan*. Here, in ripened power and self-consciousness, he followed with the *Flegelyahre*, in which he analyzed and exhibited his inseparable double nature; his deep and earnest emotion, united with eccentric and comic humor. In the *Æsthetics*, he sought to justify and reconcile his poetical peculiarities, and the nature of his works, with the universal laws of art and beauty. But now in these last works he returned to the point from which he started; but with altered views, the result of his life and experience. The calm satisfaction and contentment, the harmonious quiet, the spirit of repose and order that breathed in his life, is imparted to all the works that were written *after* the *Titan*. There is moderation in his earnestness and emotion, as well as a genial tenderness in his humor, that divides these last from his earlier works, and proves that his poetry was only the reflection of his life, and deeply rooted in it.

The *theme* of all Jean Paul's works is the same, whatever the form in which it is expressed or evolved. This *theme*, the experience in human life, from the godlike in man, in contention with the *littleness* of life; the spark of the *immortal*, struggling with earthly damps and obstructions. This, in Paul's convictions, is not the distinction of the *few*, who, in lively consciousness of the contest, think themselves unfortunate beings, but is more or less the inheritance of every human being. In his latter works, it is no longer a subject for pain; for the illusions of life soften its strivings, and in themselves make man happy. He is healed by the same spear that wounds him. The strivings of the *ideal* in man; the disproportion between his aspirations and his attainments, that in his earlier satires were the occasion of bitter jests, become in his later works the subject of a genial and sympathizing humor. The *illusions* that nourished these aspirations, become the source of the highest and purest joys in elevated characters; and often produce in others, as in Don Quixotte, a humor in which the noblest minds can sympathize. *Fibel* has his *illusions*, that recreate his whole life; but the ludicrous contrasts in it are purely objective, and are revealed to the

reader alone. The author jokes here, as in his satires; but with wholly different feelings, with sorrow-enlightened wisdom rather than cutting contempt. He contrives to maintain in the breast of the reader, the secret consciousness that he is an exception to the general folly, that would live upon illusions; a feeling that gives to every satirical work its principal value. It produces, therefore, a strange mixture of feeling; the consciousness of universal insufficiency, and of individual success. This is partly the effect of the limited nature of his hero, and partly the result of the period in which it was written, and the circumstances of the author's life.

The outward relations of Jean Paul had become so harmonious and happy, that his mind was kept in perfect equilibrium. He had reached as far as is ever allowed humanity to attain, to the ideal of his former aspirations; his pension of four hundred dollars, raised him above all pecuniary anxiety; his children, blooming in health of body and mind, hung upon him with infinite love; he enjoyed the fruit of his early industry in his materials for further works, and the food of his mind, in the environment of his beloved nature; his works appeared to him the best that he could create, and their failures and imperfections not as peculiar to them, but as belonging to the universal imperfection of humanity.

The *Germans* deem the author more successful in his later, than in his earlier works. His humorous works are more completely artistical, and perfect as works of art than his serious. Although *he* thought otherwise, humor is more completely his native element. He could not represent a perfect, unfortunate, *elevated* character; but he was completely successful in his happy fools and simpletons.

Fibel is nothing less than the Don Quixotte of literature; not merely in the construction of his A B C book, with its bad pictures, and worse verses; but he believes he is a world-blessing genius, and that he has given to posterity the most precious works, when he has collected and put his name to all the old contemptible rubbish swept from the waste heaps of a bookseller's shelves.

Richter, who always united *persiflage* upon himself with universal satire, represents the heterogeneous contents of the books printed with the name of Fibel, as not unlike his own productions, prepared from his world-wide extract

books; and identifies the enviable happiness of a being gifted with the illusion of Fibel, with himself, as the relater of it, and endeavors to remove the joke from his hero to himself. The reader finds himself in Fibel's childhood, upon the same ground, and under the same circumstances as in the poet's earlier Idyls. In the schoolhouses of Joditz and Schwarzenbach, with the well-known consumptive figure of the finch-hunting schoolmaster, and believes at first, that as Wuz and Fixlien had both busied themselves with literary amusements, *this* is only a repetition of their characters. But Fibel differs from them in this, that it establishes the possibility of the happiest and most joyful existence, in the abdication of all wishes and employments, except those connected *with the illusion*. The hero seeks no honey except that made from the modest flowers of his own little garden. This stands, therefore, in intimate connection and contrast with the theme of the serious romances—the misery which the unsatisfied demands of an over-excited imagination, occasion in the breast of man, being the theme of some of the former.

Between the publication of *Fibel* and the *Comet*, Paul had the happiness to prepare many of his old works for new editions. We are reminded in this, as well as in his love of animals, and in many other peculiarities, of his resemblance to Sir Walter Scott. It was a work of love. His new editions were all furnished with new *prefaces*, from which, as in Scott's, many humorous incidents, and little biographical particulars may be gathered.

In the *Comet*, the other humorous romance of Richter, the same *idea* (happiness, from the illusions of life, rendered comic by the disproportion between the means and the end,) lies, as with Fibel, at the foundation of the work. But the *conditions* of happiness, through the preponderance of imagination in the hero of the *Comet* are two; First, the power of this fancy turns within upon the possessor, and plays only before him; and, secondly, his intellectual power is so limited that he is not conscious of the errors and falsehoods that his fancy impose upon him. This seems to differ little from the fixed idea of any madman, and Jean Paul might have found a hero for his romance in almost any lunatic asylum. This is the opposite of that exalted fanaticism of Emanuel, Liana, Linda and Gustavus, who would bring into actual life the *ideal* of a higher existence, which is *now* in contra-

diction with this actual life, but hereafter may be the soundest wisdom. To such exaltation all poetical natures are more or less inclined. Every species of unrestrained imagination leads to innocent madness; if from outward circumstances it has not playroom, it concentrates itself upon a fixed idea, that has no connection with the circumstances of actual life.

The difference between Don Quixotte and the hero of the *Comet* is as wide as the circumstances of the times and of their respective nations. Cervantes placed the eccentricity of the fixed idea of his hero close upon the limits of probability, while he unites with the errors of imagination in Don Quixotte, a refined understanding and extensive cultivation; and the satire turns upon the mania of the people of an age just passed. In our times, the fixed idea carried to such absurd extent, would soon make its possessor the inmate of an asylum.

Jean Paul takes, for the hero of the *Comet*, a man whose phantasy has led him, from his earliest youth, to cherish the imagination that he is the son of a prince, and that he must so accomplish himself as to act the prince through life, and thus he will find the father upon whose throne he expects to ascend. The psychological interest, and the humorous result, arise from his efforts to conduct himself right royally, in the midst of the most ludicrous outward difficulties, and surrounded by unbelieving friends, who make sport of him, and from the blindness of his fixed idea, and his own limited nature, are able completely to govern him.

Nicholas Margraf is the son of parents wholly opposite in character; his mother, a gentle and amiable Catholic, enthusiastic in her love for holy images and pictures of the saints, while her husband is cold and heartless; a miser, wholly engaged in the avaricious heaping up and increase of riches, by the gains of his apothecary's shop, and little scrupulous as to the means. The *fixed idea* of the son must be nourished by the lavish use of money; and this must be obtained by making diamonds with the chemical apparatus, furnished by the apothecary's business.

Richter begins his work in the biographical form, and, as usual, with the childhood and education of his hero. He brings out, in rich profusion, secret and avowed motives, and surrounds his hero with characters of every grade of humor and folly.

Jean Paul professed the artistical faith, that a fictitious character will not engage the sympathies of the reader, that does not create a *moral* interest in spite of his faults and weaknesses; he therefore unites with his hero's limited faculties, a disinterested desire to make others happy; and with his superficial smattering of all the sciences, a princely desire to lavish money. In the course of the work, Paul touches with exquisite satire, most of the follies and vices of the time. The vertigoes of education and finance; the follies of gold-seeking and title-seeking, of proselyte-making and system-making; the coquetry of love, and the affectation of the fine arts. And, in this last great work, he contended with noble courage, armed with his own weapons, for the political freedom of his country, and the object dearest to his heart, the cause and the freedom of the people.

In going back to his own childhood to describe that of his hero, to whom he gave the same contrast between the destitute present and the anticipated splendid future; the same phantasy for changing stones into gold, that belonged to his own, Jean Paul formed the resolution to unite his own life in a peculiar manner with that of his hero; and while he parodied the poetry in that of Nicholas Margraf, to place the *actual* life near it as a companion. He no doubt borrowed the idea from *Goethe's Dichtung und Wahrheit*; but instead of interweaving them, as Goethe has done, the *truth* from his own life was placed near its *poetry*, in the image of another. In this way only, can the comic tone and the apparent affectation of speaking in the third person in his Autobiography, be explained or excused. Richter apparently seized the idea of appending his own biography to a comic romance, as only under a humorous form could he lay bare before the world, his concealed emotions, his crushing poverty, and the low and narrow circumstances of his early life. But he seems soon to have found that it was far more agreeable to *idealize* his own life under the mask of his fictitious heroes, as he had already done from *Wuz* to *Fibel*, and thus reflect upon it a poetic splendor, that vanished as soon as the naked truth was opposed to the poetical illusion; he proceeded, therefore, only to his thirteenth year: afterwards, the death of his son, that rendered the humorous form in which he had begun it, displeasing to him, and his succeeding blindness, never permitted him to resume it.

Jean Paul had made more extensive preparation for his *Comet* than for any other preceding work. The books forming the *Quarry* consisted of sixteen volumes of twelve sheets each. It was left, as already mentioned, incomplete, although German critics pronounce it one of the most *artistically* perfect of all the author's works.*

CHAPTER X.

RICHTER VISITS NURNBURG ON ACCOUNT OF HIS EYES.—KANNE.
—HIS BLINDNESS.—LAST LETTERS.—“SELINA.”

A. D. 1823, ACCOMPANIED by his daughter Emma, once again
aged 60. only did Richter leave home to visit a celebrated eye-surgeon in Nurnburg. An extract from his letter to Caroline must suffice.

“Nurnburg, August 30, 1823.

“Yesterday, at noon, I arrived here. In Erlangen I visited Schelling, whose pleasing wife gave us tea. He was full of love, but cannot satisfy me.† Wednesday, I was with Kanne in his stove-heated chamber, on account of his gout. His is a noble, splendid physiognomy. The outer head has won, through Christianity, what the inner has lost. He received me with heartfelt love.‡ But in the midst of his cheerfulness he put out his theological sheeps-ears against his physician, thus—‘that medicine can do no good—only help from above.’ Of objections the little ears would hear

* To give a complete analysis of Nicholas Margraf would require sheets instead of pages, and would be quite beyond the limits of this work.

In the autobiography the reader has a specimen of Jean Paul's humorous style; the extract from the *Kampaner Thal*, in the Appendix, is in his earnest, or what is called his *sentimental* manner; while his description of his Curland Visit, also in the Appendix, is a fair specimen of Paul's usual manner of writing.

† With his philosophical views.

‡ This was the man for whom Richter obtained a situation with the duke of Meiningen, and through whose theological mysticism Richter's son was sacrificed.

nothing. He pointed with true friendly love to my heart, and said 'he would rely upon *that*—that it would *be* at last,'—(namely, Kannish.) I answered, 'that with age I removed further from him.' He said, 'In the end we shall see,'—I, 'and beyond the end!' We could live years happily together; yet, without one moving the smallest pebble's weight of the other. . . . Next week I shall end my useless visit here. My eyes will make journeying always an empty pleasure, and the most beautiful days one enjoys better at home. Here there is, alas, no distinguished head! Among the men, not one. The last time I had Schweigger, Pfaff, Hegel. But I knew all this before, and the ascendancy of the merchants, and their coldness towards poetry, and philosophy, and the arts; and the want of elevation in the women, that always keeps pace with the others, and on whose heads there are rarely faces such as one meets in the *Wendelschen tea dance* by the dozen.—I found only one beautiful exception, and was, on my way home, under the starry heavens, a little blessed.

"I knew all this before, and therefore I remain in the house, and am glad when the weather is somewhat bad. . . .

"The people here are well meaning and obliging; as the bookseller Eickhorn, who makes his servant mine, and my good old Osterhausen, who will take me to-morrow to a pleasure-garden. . . . The common people refresh me through their orderly appearance, and their true-heartedness.

"Poor Hof! The flames shine always horribly before me. If one could dare to think of himself in such a calamity! But one imagines the loss can be as important nowhere, as to himself. Thus I reflect that, for the second time, all the memorials of my youth are burnt; in Schwarzenbach and in Hof; and if I should return there is nothing left for memory and reflection, and my youth has a second time passed away. We will love each other more truly, my Caroline, since life is so short, so full of changes, so decaying! I greet ye, my dear children. Greet all thy friends warmly."

Richter made no more journeys. His increasing blindness rendered all the tender attentions of home necessary, if not to his cheerfulness, at least to his daily comfort. He consulted many celebrated oculists, tried glass after glass, and many reputed healing remedies; but, although he parted

with the light of day, and his beloved occupations with painful struggles, and ever-increasing regret, he was obliged at last to feel that the contest was hopeless, and resignation his latest duty.

Once again was he separated from his wife, which gave occasion to a few more letters, the last, except a few notes, that he ever wrote.

Caroline never left home, except upon some call of sorrow or duty; namely, at the death of her father she visited the widowed mother, and spent some time in Berlin; now she was summoned to the dying bed of her sister Minna Spazier, who has been often mentioned as supporting by literary exertions, her young family in Dresden. From scattered hints it would appear that Minna was very unhappy in her second marriage.

No reader can have avoided noticing the singular fact, that united as were Richter and his wife, and apparently sympathizing in every agreeable emotion, and in every social enjoyment, Caroline was never the companion of those little journeys, from which Richter derived such elevation of spirits, that it would seem as if the being he loved best, must have been indispensable to his complete enjoyment. But for this there were many reasons. Their income was never sufficient to permit them to relax the strictest rules of economy in their expenses; and, although the recreation of journeying was absolutely necessary to restore the powers of the *author*, exhausted by intense application during ten months of the year, Caroline, in her quiet, domestic, feminine duties, did not require the alleviation of novelty or pleasure.

Richter, also, in all his journeys, was received and *fêted* as a literary lion, a distinguished author; he was patronized by people of rank; and invited to the palaces of princes, not on a footing of equality, but as one who was expected by his wit and celebrity to repay the condescension and flattery graciously bestowed upon him.*

Jean Paul had less obsequiousness, and a more manly independence in his intercourse with princes and nobles, than any foreign author, with whose works we are acquainted; and, although it is difficult for us in the new world to understand the wide differences of rank in the old

* See Appendix.

aristocratic countries, we can easily imagine that to a woman of true nobility of soul, and refined delicate feelings, all *con-descending* attentions, that implied any inferiority in outward advantages would have been painful and derogatory.

From what we can gather of the character of Caroline, she seems to have been the guiding and protecting spirit of all who came within her influence; all her journeys were errands of mercy, all her letters messages of love. She had become like those beautiful plants, that from the centre of the flower send out protecting branches, that shade and refresh after the blossom has fallen.

In this last separation Richter wrote to her thus:

"Beloved Caroline: The clock-work of housekeeping goes and strikes accurately, as you have wound it up. Emma does every thing well, and takes excellent care of me. She is an excellent *Hausmutter* (house-mother). The children are good, and every day give me a new joy. I have nothing to wish, but one dearer than all the others near me. We speak longingly of thee, and I shall rejoice at your return, as formerly at my own, when so heavenly a time always followed it."

Again: "Beloved Caroline—Letter-writing is, as you know, extremely difficult on account of the gray paper. The sulphur bath, for which Emma takes punctual care, works excellently, but not immediately upon the eyes; but reading, and still more, writing, is impossible, as the light is not strong enough.

"Ah, this melancholy half year of my life! The former years of poverty and contempt were Sundays in comparison. Now, I am deprived of so much, and condemned to so much. . . .

"Enjoy, at least for thy sacrificing days, a few joyful hours. Be not too anxious for us who are sound at heart. Visit the terrace often at evening, and, farewell! farewell!

"Next day.

"Your letter has touched and refreshed me, dearest! and increased the longing for your return that I have hitherto concealed. Exactly on the morning that, the first time for many months, I went to Rolwenzell's,* your heart's words delighted me. I must indeed suffer much—much! for as

* The cottage, *out* of the city, where Jean Paul had his study.

yet all means help only a little, or imperceptibly; but I firmly believe God will send me, even in this extremity, only what is best for me!

"For God's sake provide a good opportunity to return. Venture upon no risks, but think of the poor children who love thee so inexpressibly! Control yourself, and take no *formal* leave of Minna—rather take none, and tell her before that you must leave her, else she will die in your arms. How do I already rejoice at your relations of your Dresden life. Come, only, soon! You will be received with thirsting love and jubilee! Greet the sufferer. Thine! R."

Thus adjured, Caroline was obliged to leave the death-bed of her sister, and when she returned to her home she found her husband almost wholly deprived of the light. His blindness obliged him to relinquish the hope of finishing *Selina*, the book upon the immortality of the soul. So fondly had he cherished the hope of completing his proofs of this highest consolation of humanity, that he seemed really to believe the Eternal Providence would grant him time; that darkness would not fall upon him, until he had made it light to others; and in this view he withstood all indications of illness, and repelled any anticipations of death.

The dramatic interest of *Selina* is slight. The characters of the earlier work, *Campaner Thal*, are again brought before the reader with the beautiful addition of *Selina*, the daughter of *Gione*, of the former work. The proofs of immortality are drawn from the positive religious belief of every nation, and of all times; and Richter wished to impart to them the highest degree of completeness by poetic illustration, as well as by arguments of the deepest philosophy.

"There are souls," he says, "for whom life has no summer. These should enjoy the advantages of the inhabitants of Spitzbergen, where, through the winter's day, the stars shine clear as through the winter's night. They should have the nearest compensation for their colder and more distant sun." For such persons the book is written. "Take from the wounded soul, lying on the *sick bed of life*, the prospect from *above*, and he is doubly unhappy, and robbed and wounded."

The divisions of the book bear the names of the planets; and it is said in the preface, "as Herodotus gave the divi-

sions of his history, Goethe his Herman and Dorothea, the names of the Muses, so, on account of the greater number and the inferior value of his chapters, Jean Paul gave them the names of the eleven planets. At least, he says, there is one resemblance in his chapters, of which the wandering stars need not be ashamed, "that *these*, as themselves, revolve around a sun as their centre, which has the double name of God or Immortality."

When Richter found his strength, as already mentioned, rapidly failing, instead of going on to the completion of the whole work, he did what he had never done in any former work, went back, and revised and improved the five planets, or first chapters; and a few weeks before his death, said, with a deeply melancholy tone, entirely unusual to him, "that now these chapters were ready for printing." This was the more remarkable, as he was apparently unconscious of the near approach of death, and, although he despaired of ever seeing the light again, he hoped, by the help of an amanuensis, to complete the numerous works already planned.

The last words he ever penned, except a short note to Otto, and these with trembling hand, the lines running into each other and almost illegible, were: "Knowing each other again (in a future world) is the cardinal point of immortality, as many paternosters close with a relic." "Life departs not *from* the soul, but *in* the soul. It lays its organic sceptre down, and dismisses the world that had hitherto served it, or rather it abandons its empire."

Thus unfinished, the work was hidden from Richter's eyes, that yet lay so warmly at his heart that he wrote by the hand of his wife to her nephew Otto Spazier, to lend him his eyes and pen for its completion. He closes his letter thus:

"I expect a delightful life with you. Every morning till ten o'clock you shall be left to your own studies; then, I shall request you also to lend me your eyes, if not your hand, for the chaos of my library. We will read a little, copy a little, talk a little, be a little joyful, and that is all I expect from you. . . . You cannot guess what a balsam your arrival will be for my wounded eyes, and for the half of my life crushed by destiny!"*

"Such a call from the immortal old man, as it entered

* Jean Paul refers to the death of his son.

my solitary apartment," says his nephew, "filled me with delight. The reverend image of his beautiful old age, a just reward for a holy life, rose before me, and with joyful haste I travelled through the wet days of October, and entered his study on the evening of the twenty-fourth of that month. The same joyful tremor affected me as formerly, when, at the twilight hour, I had listened here with his family to his voice of wisdom. The windows of his room looked towards the rising sun, and far over the garden and over scattered trees and houses, towards the Fichtelgebirge, that bounded the horizon. A mingled perfume of flowers and grapes led the fancy to southern climes, to beautiful blue June days, or to the vintage on the Rhine. His sofa, where he usually read in a reclining posture, was opposite this window, and before it his writing-table, upon which appeared a regular confusion of pens, paper of all colors, glasses, flowers, books, among which last were the small English editions of Swift and Sterne. At the other window stood a small piano, and near this a smaller table. Depending from the cage of his birds was a little ladder, that led to his own work-table, where the birds were permitted to roam among the confusion, sprinkling with water from the flower glass the sheet upon which the poet was writing. Often was Paul seen to stop in his most excited passages, to let his little canary, with her young, travel undisturbed, over the page, where the water she scattered from her feathers mingled with the ink from his pen. In the corner of the room was a door by which, unobserved, Richter could descend the steps into the garden, and on a cushion near it rested his white, silky-haired poodle. A hunting pocket and rose-wood staff hung near. All three had often been the companions of his wanderings, when, on beautiful days, he went through the chestnut avenue, to the little Rolwenzell cottage.

"All in the room retained its usual position, but the ruling hand appeared to have been absent. The light was shaded, and the windows hung with green curtains; the robust form that in former years, even before the snow-drop had loosened the icy crust of winter, had worked long hours, with uncovered breast in the open air, lay supported with cushions, and shrouded in furs upon the sofa; his body drawn together, and his eyes for ever closed. 'Heaven,' said he, 'chastens me with a double rod, and *one* is a heavy cudgel! (meaning his blindness;) but I shall be well again now.

Ah! we have so much to say and to do. But we shall have a thousand hours—at least, minutes.' His voice was weaker, his words slower, and it cut me to the heart to hear him speak of himself. It was late—and soon his wife, ever watchful, called me away, to return to him again in the morning."

Early the next morning he began a complete revision of his works. The nephew read aloud, and Paul inserted his alterations. When Spazier thought one necessary, he indicated it by pausing, to draw his attention. With great mildness and patience Paul listened to every objection; and himself related, explained, praised, and blamed. He reconsidered and overlived thus his whole spiritual life in his works. In the comparisons scattered through his sixty-four volumes, of which indeed every page is filled, he found only two or three were repeated.

The arrival of his nephew, and the hope of completing *Selina*, and the revision of the new edition of his works, gave new life to Richter. Great indeed was his joy, as they were read to him, that he could assert, that he had never written a line against virtue, or one, that for this reason, he could wish to blot. But he soon began to *perfect* rather those that he considered unfinished, than to continue his new works; and we must ever regret that he left his Autobiography unfinished; that he went home before he had given us this golden key to his works; the psychological unfolding of his poetic nature; the impression that the ever-changing scenes of life and literature had made upon him since his childhood. This he intended to make a memorial of gratitude to those great men, Gleim, Herder, and Jacobi, to whom he felt himself so much indebted. He had already spoken earnestly of his eternal gratitude to Gleim, for the timely present of fifty dollars; and he intended to give a full-length picture of the princely form of Herder, and to illustrate his character with beams of light. But alas, it was now too late. His weakness increased so rapidly that he was obliged to resign, but with all possible submission, the design of continuing *any* of his works. He withdrew from all self-activity, and gave up the pleasure of speaking of subjects, that in his circumstances, would have had only an egotistical interest, and devoted himself for the short remainder of life, to the happiness of those about him. The long, dark days of November were cheered by reading.

The books that until the last he delighted most to listen to were *Herbart's Psychology*, and *Herder's Philosophy of the History of Man*. When wearied of these, he desired to smile at some humorous work, and his nephew laments that German literature is so poor in books of this kind.

At this moment rose higher than ever within our Richter the apostle John's power of love. Age often serves the heart as it does the outward form, takes from it the fulness and tenderness of sympathy, and leaves it hard, and sharply angular; but in the heart of Jean Paul love was a plant that found ever a richer and a warmer soil, disclosed continually new buds and blossoms, spread its roots and fibres always further, and extended, in his last days, the perfumed shadow, that gave him peace and blessed dreams.

He sat, as Spazier describes him,* like an innocent, tranquil child, with the firmest confidence in God and in future good, although the present was sinking around him. His own pain only increased his interest in the joys of others. His weakness, that denied him acts of love, impelled him to express more fully the *language* of affection, that had been till now concealed in actions. The friends who visited him never heard a complaint over his blindness; but to anxious questioning he answered with low, but cheerful, hopeful, signification. When others, thinking to conceal from his situation, spoke of hopes and joys for the future, he drew them immediately to subjects of more universal interest. Self-forgetting, he would speak to his visitors of any other subject. As this was the time of the so-called freedom's contest in Germany; deeply as his true German heart had been directed to the interests of freedom, now its beams spread a glow in his evening sky.

As his eyes were extinguished, and expression denied him through this organ, he sought, by a more tender tone of voice, to draw others to his heart, and when his voice also failed, love pervaded the whole expression of his countenance. His cheerfulness was much increased when one or two friends were added to his domestic circle. Otto, or Emanuel, came almost every evening. They clustered around his sofa, and here, like an electric spark, he kindled

* The narrative from which I have taken that of the last days of Jean Paul, is so extremely inflated and diffuse, that the wish to avoid the same has perhaps led me to the opposite error.

all about him. Every new thought received from him organization, and he ever suggested something new; his picture-language never-wearied; and the departure of his friends was always too early. One evening the conversation turned upon the sense of smell, and Richter mentioned how strongly the recollection of perfumes excited the imagination. He said "that his father sometimes, in his boyhood, shut him into his room, and that when he went again into the open air he met the fumes of the tobacco the carpenters smoked, and that tobacco *now* brought back, like the sound of the cowbell, his whole childhood before his soul. Through the sense of smell, as its impressions are so undecided, the romantic is singularly excited. Schiller always rejoiced in perfumes, while Goethe, the plastic artist, was more interested by the form of the nose. Smell is the most refined of the senses. A gentle and refined Indian would think us all offensive animals. Herder had the most delicate sense of smell, but in every thing he was an *elephant*." With this *one* word Richter delineated Herder's greatness, his delicate organization, which also distinguishes the elephant among animals, and his Indian nature.

In the last weeks of his life he would take a less active part in the conversation, on account of the weakness of his voice. For this he often touchingly asked pardon; and Caroline sat with her ear close to him, to interpret to those less accustomed to his accents.

Eight days before his death the darkest night settled upon him. Even then he sat patiently, trusting the coming spring would bring again *for him*, the warm sun, and the blue heaven, and the eternal stars. Many times he raised his darkened eyes to the window, hoping a faint ray would pierce the gloom; once only his pain broke out in words, as his friends were lamenting the helplessness of his situation, that prevented him from seeking relief for his other infirmities. The thought for a moment overpowered him, and in the most touching voice he cried out with Ajax in the Iliad,

"Light! light only, then may the enemy come!"

The extraordinary talent for music that Richter possessed has often been mentioned. When weary with thought, he would seat himself at the instrument, and with an accompaniment on the keys with one hand, he would translate with the other the emotions that filled his mind. When

they were tender, he as well as all who heard him, would break out in tears, till all hearts were melted. The music of others also affected him deeply, and once in a large party, he could not restrain his tears, when *Mignon's* song was sung by a young lady.

In the evening, during this last dark period, when the day had exhausted him, he longed for the refreshment of music; but the voices of his children overpowered him, and his father's heart wept at their simplest tones; but when in the next apartment the sounds appeared to come from a distance, he could listen to the voices that he loved. Then he would turn his face towards the wall, and earth and sorrow were forgotten; while he flew with the sounds to fairer climes, and flowers, and mountains, and beautiful forms. When his family returned, they would find him sitting upright on the sofa, and in his face were the traces of emotion that his darkened eyes could no longer express.

Schubart's splendid composition of the *Earl King*, "Thou dear child! come, go with me," Zelter's song of the *Harper* in *Meister*, and the many-voiced little song of the people, "So many stars are in the sky," and many of Goethe's songs lulled him so blessedly, that they seemed to exert a wonderful physical power on his well-being. One evening he said it was as if, during the singing, some one had drawn over him a soft and warm mantle, and when the sounds ceased, he wondered to find no covering upon him. He was deeply moved one evening, when a young girl sung a Spanish song before his door, accompanied by the guitar. It brought the south into his winter apartment, and excited and warmed his fancy.

Richter went every morning to his study, and continued revising with his nephew the new edition of his works, until from weakness of the breast, his voice could no longer be heard. The soul seemed to have withdrawn from all the external organs, and to communicate with the outward world only through the ear; the eye was turned inward upon the soul, and his biographer says, "The volume of the noble brow seemed to expand still more, as if thought sat visibly upon it; the outline of the delicate nose became more beautiful, and around the firmly closed mouth the most amiable mildness played. That which has come to us from tradition, of the bust of Plato; what the saints have told us of the expression of the holy Christ, hovered upon

his face. Deprived of the veil of human senses, with which the earth protects the dwelling-place of thought, the beautiful form spoke only of the spirit, and of immortality; a tremor of reverence filled the heart of the spectator, and unconsciously, the hands were folded as if in prayer; every one who entered spoke softly, as if in the presence of a holy being."

On the morning of the fourteenth of November, when his nephew came down, Richter for the first time was absent from his study. Spazier found him in the apartment of his wife, and, although early, Otto and his physician were with them. Caroline sat with her ear close to the mouth of her husband, for she only could now understand the well-known, but imperfect accents. He said "good morning," when his nephew entered, for his hearing was still acute.

Through the perpetual night about him, and the irregularity of his repose, Richter had lost the consciousness of the course of time, and thought it was already evening. He was confirmed in this impression by the presence of the physician, who usually made his visit in the evening; and not to make him more uneasy they humored the error, and did not try to undeceive him.

His nephew read the newspaper to him, and some passages from Herder's spiritual works; but he seemed this day to thirst more than ever for the voices of his wife and children; his youngest daughter climbed perpetually on the back of his chair, and held her youthful face close to his. The son of Herder came in; and it so happened, that just at this time the *transfer* of the princess of Lucca took place in Bayreuth. The incident was more noticed, because it was to the same Saxon prince Max, the transfer of whose *first* wife, also an Italian princess, Jean Paul had described in *Hesperus*. So remarkable a coincidence could not escape a poet, who professed, as Richter, to believe in the *duality* of all things. Young Herder told him, that the *Bust* of the prince, as the *Portrait* in *Hesperus*, accompanied the princess, borne in a sedan chair; and what appears infinitely comic, dined and reposed wherever the princess rested. This led the conversation to *Hesperus*, and Richter whispered many alterations he intended to make in that work; and said it had failed totally of the object he wished to accomplish in writing it.

Noon had by this time arrived. Richter, thinking it

was night, said, "It was time *to go to rest!*" and wished to retire. He was wheeled into his sleeping apartment, and all was arranged as if for repose; a small table near his bed, with a glass of water, and his two watches—a common one and a repeater. His wife now brought him a wreath of flowers that a lady had sent him, for every one wished to add some charm to his last days. As he touched them carefully, for he could neither see nor smell them, he seemed to rejoice in the images of the flowers in his mind, for he said repeatedly to Caroline, "My beautiful flowers, my lovely flowers!"

Although his friends sat around the bed, as he imagined it was night, they conversed no longer; he arranged his arms as if preparing for repose, which was to be to him the repose of death, and soon sank into a tranquil sleep.

Deep silence pervaded the apartment. Caroline sat at the head of the bed, with her eyes immovably fixed on the face of her beloved husband. Otto had retired, and the nephew sat with Plato's *Phadon* in his hand, open at the death of Socrates. At that moment a tall and beautiful form entered the chamber; and, at the foot of the bed, with his hands raised to heaven and deeply moved, he repeated aloud the prayer of his Mosaic faith. It was Emanuel, and next to Otto, the most beloved of Richter's friends.

About six o'clock the physician entered. Richter yet appeared to sleep; his features became every moment holier, his brow more heavenly, but it was cold as marble to the touch; and as the tears of his wife fell upon it, he remained immovable. At length his respiration became less regular, but his features always calmer, more heavenly. A slight convulsion passed over the face; the physician cried out, "that is death!" and all was quiet. The spirit had departed!

All sank, praying, upon their knees. This moment, that raised them above the earth with the departing spirit, admitted of no tears!

"Thus Richter went from earth, great and holy as a poet, greater and holier as a man!"

Involuntarily we recall the death-bed of another great poet, on that delicious summer's day when the windows were all open, and the only sound the ripple of the Tweed upon its stony bed. *Here*, in the midst of winter, a deeper repose must have consecrated the death-bed of Richter, as if Nature herself stood reverently still, when her worshipper and in-

terpreter laid down the garment in which he had ministered in her temple.

Richter was buried by torch-light: the unfinished manuscript of *Selina* borne upon his coffin, and the noble ode of Klopstock,—

“Thou shalt arise, my Soul!”

sung by the students of the Gymnasium at the burial vault.

Otto could not survive his loss. He lived only a few months, in order to arrange the unfinished sheets of *Selina*; and then, in secret mourning, followed the departed friend.

CONCLUSION.

I HAVE now finished my task, and I might safely leave the biography of Richter to make its impression upon the reader without one word of commentary; but like Otto, I linger by the tomb of my friend, unwilling to part with him who has been my companion so long.

I have not the presumption to imagine that I can enlighten those who have had opportunities to study the works of Jean Paul, from which alone his character can be appreciated; but in this country it has been the custom to contrast him with Goethe, and to class them, as belonging to opposite schools in literature. They are, indeed, widely different, but *the one* need not blind us to the excellence of the other. They were widely different in their lives. Goethe grew up in a happy home, where the genial disposition of his mother, who used playfully to say, “her Wolfgang and herself were of the same age,” (in fact, he was born in her seventeenth year.) led him to enjoy every natural good, every innocent pleasure; while Jean Paul, born in poverty, brought up in almost ascetic frugality, tended by a mother so sorrow-bowed, so fearful of joy that she could not even understand her gifted son’s fame; living in an obscure village with few associates, and none superior to herself, so that he could form no impartial and accurate estimation of himself,

differed in this, as in every other respect from Goethe. Goethe stood upon an elevation above his fellows, attained by what the Germans call universality, the power of observing all the bearings and points of the times, from an elevation far above them all.

The difference between Goethe and Richter is not more striking than the anomaly in the character of each, and the discrepancy between that character and their works. Goethe, whose classical culture would not allow him to violate the unities, whose polished exterior gave him the appearance of a Grecian god, in private life permitted himself much license, and of his associates would cry out, "oh, that they had the heart to commit some absurdity;" while Jean Paul, in his works so wild and luxuriant, that he might be compared to a great, gnarled oak, making grand music in its branches as they stretched towards heaven, while the little singing birds nestled in its leaves; in private life hedged himself round with rules and resolutions, and all the safeguards of order and form. His journals are filled with reiterated regulations, and expressions of repentant sorrow whenever he violated the least of them. It was safe for Goethe to allow himself the seductions of social and polished life; but Richter, whose great and irregular nature was always breaking through the polished border of conventionalism, planted himself around with the thorny hedge of minute observances. Goethe needed no rules, no restraints; he was in no danger of the discourteous developments of a generous manhood; his nature was polished to elegance. If he ever struggled, "the *graces*," as Bettine said, "kept him prisoner."

He needed no reiterated hints in his journal, to do every thing in its season, and keep every thing in its place; the clockwork of his nature went neither too fast nor too slow, and struck the hour at the exact second, while the virtue of neatness was in him almost sublime.

Richter's life may be divided into three epochs, and his works into three corresponding divisions. The first, that of pure satire, terminated with the writing of the "Contented Schoolmaster."

The *infancy* and *early youth* of Richter *alone* were genial and poetical. From his entrance into the Hof Gymnasium, through his Leipzig life, he was struggling with actual want, and opposing an iron resolution to an adverse destiny. At this time a cold skepticism shrouded his mind; he had

not broken the crust of that merely intellectual period of his life, when the buds of his fancy and all the warm springs of his heart were imprisoned by the ice of an ungenial belief. At this time, his French and English studies led him to Pope, Shaftesbury, Swift, Rabelais, and the encyclopedæists. He wrote only satires. To give interest to these essays, that were without all poetical or dramatic charm, he acquired his peculiar manner of writing, crowded his page with figures, comparisons, and antithesis; ransacked heaven and hell, and all the regions of earth for illustrations, anecdotes, proverbs, and quaint expressions, and acquired what Carlyle has called his *claptrap* manner. This manner was foreign and artificial, for his private journal, written at this period, is free from every thing of the kind. This manner of writing became a second nature; he says himself, he could not help it, "that his figures and illustrations were like mice let out of a trap, one caught hold of the tail of the other in interminable succession."

The usual theme of Richter's satires is the contrast of the infinite in man's breast with the low and narrow circumstances in which he is placed, and in this early period it is treated with the bitter and cutting coldness of a sarcastic laugh.

But his soul was soon unsatisfied. He began to long after his inheritance. He could no longer quiet his thirst after a higher good with a scornful laugh. We find in his journal that, "he laid long hours in the night upon the dewy grass, and longed to allay the thirst of his soul by looking into the starry heavens. When he arose and saw the impression his body had made upon the grass, he thought of his grave, and the flowers thus pressed together; the terror of annihilation seized him with iron hand. Then came the warm beams of the arisen sun; and the blessed thought of God, and his love to man, that would burst the gate of the grave; and his sunken heart rose again."

Such moments sometimes occur in life, when a strong and powerful emotion has the effect of the most startling events. We know not whether Richter meant to represent this moment as a turning from darkness to light; but the death of his two youthful friends, that occurred at this period, fixed his thoughts upon immortality, and a strenuous exertion freed his soul from its fetters. Now, he turned back in imagination to his childhood in Joditz and Schwar-

zenbach, and it appeared in the ever-increasing light of poetry; the perfume of his childish faith and early education, was again breathed into his life. Now his heart began to overflow with emotion, and bitter pain at a misdirection of his talents, that had deprived his youth of elevation and spiritual joy. He had no longer before his mind, the cold conception of the follies of fools and simpletons, but also the disappointments and fond longings of the suffering and good. How significant is this passage in his journal of November in this year. "And you, my brothers, I will love more, I will create for you more joy. I will give up my greater plans, and limit my endeavors, to make you cheerful, and turn my comic powers no longer, as hitherto, to torment you. I will use my art to make myself cheerful, to content myself with every necessary limitation; and thus to win joy for you. I will make you happy by imparting what I have hitherto gained. Fantasy and wit shall be united to find consolation, cheerfulness, and joys in the most limited of life's relations." The result of this holy purpose of his life, were the works beginning with *Wuz*, and ending only with the *Selina*. Few have been like him, faithful to a great *idea*. He had, as we have seen, consecrated himself to instructing his countrymen through the press, and no office, no emolument, no honor seduced him. In his cold and hungry hut, in his humble school, he wrought out, in patience and solitude, the gems that he afterwards joyfully produced. He surrendered his soul to God, and his life became in harmony with the true, the beautiful, the good.

The very limited relations in which Richter stood with others, the poverty of incidents in his life, the few characters he knew, the small number from which he could choose his hero, compelled him to go back to his early recollections; and his memory and fantasy supplied him with a model that answered to the wants of his soul, that in poetry, as in life now, thirsted for love. *Wuz* is the embryo of a whole succession of such characters appearing in Jean Paul's after romances. He is the first result of the author's creative imagination, and the transition from his satirical to his serious, earnest works. In this conception is first apparent the so much talked-of double nature of Richter, the contradiction, the contest of form with tendency. Richter had not in the beginning of his change the courage to manifest his feelings and emotions. He was ashamed to open his heart to the

public; he is, therefore, in this work, through ridiculous follies in *Wuz*, constantly interrupting the earnest impression of the work. But although he had freed by this exertion, his earnest creative power from the mastery of the comic and familiar, the process took place too late for the comic ever to be entirely subjected. The contest continued through all his serious works, and takes the form in them of the most genial humor. He compares this tendency of his nature to the bird *Merops*, whose tail is turned towards heaven, but in this direction continues to rise.

The second peculiarity of *Wuz*, which is more or less that of all Richter's serious works, is, that he lends to the character the peculiarities of his own childhood. Hence, for the first time, his father and himself, and all the idyls of village life, appear in the borrowed light of poetry. As they pass before him he gives them individuality, and the coloring of reality. It seemed only necessary for him to touch his native ground, the home of his childhood, and from them he immediately received inspiration.

The contest, as I have said above, of the serious and humorous, never ceased. *Humor* was often, even in his most serious works, the quality that ruled his nature: the product not now of contempt, but of love; springing from the heart, as much as from the imagination, and pouring the balm of a sympathizing spirit over the wounds of humanity. If I mistake not, Richter's humor is the quality that has made him so beloved by the Germans. Its origin is a true sensibility to the discrepancies and contrasts of life, and a quick perception of the alleviations, which his rare gifts enabled him to present with a simple and touching pathos.

In his preface to *Quintus Fixlien*, which is an enlarged repetition of *Wuz*, he tells us the purpose for which he writes. "That I may show to the whole earth, that we ought to value little joys more than great ones; the night-gown more than the dress coat; that Plutus's heaps are worth less than his handfals; the plum than the penny for a rainy day; and that not great, but little good-haps can make us happy. Can I accomplish this, I shall, through means of my book, bring up for posterity a race of men finding refreshment in all things; in the warmth of their rooms, and of their night-caps; in their pillows, in *mere* apostle's days, in the evening-moral tales of their wives, &c. You perceive my drift is, that man may become a little tailorbird, which,

not amidst the crashing boughs of the storm-tost, roaring, immeasurable tree of life, but upon one of its leaves, sews itself a nest together, and there lies snug.”*

The whole of this preface, with its quaint illustrations, is an exquisite essay upon contentment, and worth all the philosophy and all the sermons that ever were written on the art of being happy.

In the succession of works that followed *this*, Jean Paul's power of conception and creation rose higher and higher, till he reached the ideal of his *Titan*. But the *theme* is always the same, the contrast of the *ideal* with the *real*, the Godlike spark striving with the mists of earth. This leads us to the *third* series of his works—the *Comic*—where the striving after the ideal becomes an *illusion*, and the source of *joy* and contentment, rendered infinitely humorous by the limited nature of his heroes, and the contradiction between the striving of the heart and the striving of the head; the contrast of the *grand* idea with the *limited and paltry* power of execution; as in Nicholas Margraf, who believes himself born to be a king, and conducts himself right royally under the meanest and most pitiful environment. All such characters protect themselves by their *ideal*, from the frosts and miseries of the external world. A true enthusiasm, as Richter says, is “like the bird of paradise, that slumbers flying, and on his outspread pinions oversleeps, unconsciously, the earthquakes and conflagrations of life, in its long, fair dream of its ideal mother-land;” an illusion becomes comic and ridiculous only, when it is like that foolish bird, who thinks she protects her body by hiding her head.

I have said too much, perhaps, upon this subject, but it seems to me to solve what has been called the enigma of Jean Paul's works.

When we come to the *execution* of his works, to the outward form, there indeed he falls far short of his own ideal. He pronounced one of his works a *born ruin*. *All*, more or less, partake of that character. His conceptions were glorious, perfect; the edifice stood whole and secure in his mind, but when he comes to the execution upon paper, it seems to fall together in a confused mass; the fair-proportioned columns, that should support the edifice, stand alone,

* I avail myself gratefully of Carlyle's translation, as I have not the original at hand.

or are prostrate; ignoble parts of the structure are thrust out in close contact with the beautiful, and mar the just proportions of the whole; the divine pictures, and cabinets of gems, that should adorn with chaste beauty, are scattered in reckless profusion over every part; meanness and grace, beauty and deformity, are every where mingled together.

That Richter was deficient in taste has been allowed by his warmest admirers. He had an eye open to beauty, but he had also no disgust at deformity. He seems, indeed, to have imagined beauty in all deformity, except that of vice. This want of taste may be accounted for, by the homely poverty and meanness of his early life. He had a deep and pervading feeling of moral beauty, he also discerned beauty in the humblest forms, where other eyes had never looked for it. But as he was ignorant of the conventionalisms and elegancies of polished life, he did not see meanness and deformity where a fashion-educated eye would have found both. Every form of human life, the humblest domestic occupation, possessed beauty for him; and, in his view, the hunting of rats was as heroic as the hunting of hares. In this respect he reminds us of Shakspeare,—how soon, after an acquaintance with Shakspeare, are what the French call his barbarisms, forgotten.

The result of the perusal of one of Jean Paul's works is like going through a gallery of pictures, where celestial Madonnas, St. Johns, and St. Cecílias hang, side by side, with Dutch Inns, Sancho Panzas, and drinking boors; but we go back again and again to study the *divine* pictures, and feel their elevating influence, while the others, although admired for their truth and nature, are forgotten as works of art.

Another peculiarity of Richter, which has been ridiculed by superficial readers, is, what has been called his *sentimentalism*. It is not a weeping or sickly sentiment that characterizes Jean Paul, but a tenderness of heart, a poetry of his own, that leads him to cherish the flower planted by the hand of love; to remember birth-days and anniversaries; and to institute many festivals of the heart. It is a religion of the affections, that belongs to the Germans more than to any other nation, that makes them capable of superstitious illusions, but that it would be unjust to call sentimentalism. Humor also is united with this sentiment, as in no other author, except Sterne, whom Richter is said to resemble.

In this respect he also resembles Burns, united with a deeper tenderness, an equally playful and heartfelt pathos. Humor is fatal to *false* sentiment, extinguishing it as fire devours water, but it heightens the tenderness of Richter, as a smile on the lip enhances the charm of a tear in the eye.

Ah! I feel how impossible, and how presumptuous it may be, to endeavor, through translations, to do adequate justice to an author whose writings awoke the enthusiasm of the whole German nation; excited the admiration of every rank, and were equally felt by such opposite characters as Lavater and Herder, Jacobi and the ancient Gleim. The circumstances of our own country are, it is true, widely different. Richter appeared in Germany in the midst of that mighty shaking that was given by the French revolution to all established institutions, to all artificial distinctions among men. As one of his critics writes, "The whole nation, like Jean Paul himself, was laboring with the great idea of spiritual and social emancipation. Napoleon's giant hand had arrested the advancing steps of freedom, and the nation gave itself back to a secretly-growing skepticism of feeling, before which the earnest emotions were ashamed to appear. Under this secret pressure of the heart, Jean Paul's works were like the words of a prophet, who appeared before them with the freshest and purest emotions of nature; he had the courage to bare for them his breast and his beating heart, while at the same time he held the scourge over the pitiful restraints and vulgar ridicule before which the tearful eye concealed its love, its longing, its enthusiasm and its higher faith." Richter's heart beat in unison with the heart of his fellow-men. While Goethe withdrew in philosophic retirement to study osteology, or mark the beautiful shades upon the lip of a shell, or the corolla of a plant, Richter threw himself, with all his powers, heart and soul, into that uprising of the German people for freedom, which has been called a *living Poem*. With us, there is, indeed, no restraint in thinking, writing, or speaking; but is there not a secret infidelity as to the existence of disinterested and self-sacrificing love; an extremely practical course of thought, that leads us to place all spiritual relations among the illusions of life? Is there not a cold egotism that disposes us to undervalue every thing whose material existence cannot be proved by its solid advantages? All that deviates from the straight-forward railroad path of life, is, with us, called

transcendentalism. Even Richter has been said, in *this country*, to belong to the "*Bedlamite school*." It would be nearly as just to call *Paradise Lost* of the *Bedlamite school*.

The charge of affectation that has been made against Jean Paul, is perhaps as unjust, but is not so easily disproved. All affectation supposes some insincerity, or attempt to appear otherwise than strict truth allows. Now Richter was the truest of men; he was so open and fearless in the assertion of all his opinions, that he made almost as many opponents as persons with whom he conversed. But the charge of affectation applies only to the *form* of his writings, and as already mentioned, arose from the nature of his first works. I repeat again, that they were essays and satires, without dramatic form or fictitious incident. To give novelty to old themes, he sought out every strange and striking form of expression; exhausted every department of science, and all the realms of nature, for illustrations; heaped image upon comparison, and comparison upon image; distorted, and reversed, and turned his sentences topsyturvy. He was like a juggler, who, in the absence of all *dramatis personæ*, makes *one* material assume many different forms, to be now a bird, and directly, by sleight of hand, a jewel, a flower, or a stone. This manner became habitual to him, and later, he could not, if he would, have thrown it off. Otto was always urging him to *translate* some one of his works into plain German, and publish it without name or preface. Richter answered "that he would preserve his *own* manner, in an age when Schiller found nothing in Thummel, and Herder nothing in Schleiermacher and Tieck, Schlegel every thing; when Herder called his (Richter's) style classical, and Merkel called it poor; when Goethe said, the stupid Genovefa was good; and all were pitifully in opposition to themselves and to each other."

It was a heavy disadvantage for Richter, that his estrangement from Goethe took place at the beginning of his popularity; he lost the benefit of that severe, but candid and friendly criticism, that to one so regardless of all form, would have been of incalculable benefit. The reviews, as he justly complained, bestowed upon him only indiscriminate praise, or boundless censure. Mrs. Austin, among English critics, has been most impartially just. She says, "Jean Paul has overlaid a world of genuine and humane wisdom, with bewildering conceits, and far-fetched, unintelligible illus-

trations. But the reader who will look below the surface, will find, that his knowledge of actual human nature was profound; and his views, as to what human nature should be, benevolent, elevated, and consistent with the soundest *reason* and *humanity*."

Mr. Carlyle, to whom we have been so eminently indebted for his beautiful and eloquent essays upon Richter, has been singularly happy in presenting him to the English reader. But I must be permitted to say, that his genuine admiration has led him to exaggerate the peculiarities of Jean Paul. He has taken the color of that upon which he fed, and now gives it back in intenser shades. His later translations from Jean Paul, have been deeply overlaid with Carlyleisms.

What may be called the machinery of Jean Paul's romances, is as strange as their form. Like Scott, he prefaces his works with a humorous account of the motive and the manner of their composition; and however serious the subject, it is usually set in a comic frame. His characters are few in number, but with little change, they are always the same company, and appear again and again in tragedy, comedy, or farce. Sometimes, as he says himself, they play their parts upon the "cold *Mont Blanc* of aristocratic life;" then, in a sheltered cottage in the valley, or in a shepherd's hut: his favorite theatre is the quiet parsonage of a country minister, where he takes a part himself, and holds the wire that involves or extricates the mysterious motions of his puppets. One of his favorite modes of addressing the public is in a letter to one of his own *fictitious* characters, in which he indulges himself in all sorts of witty allusions and humorous remarks.

His various works are like episodes, where we meet in other, and far different circumstances, our old acquaintances, who belong to one great whole, like characters in real life, who meet and part, and meet again. Those that we have met in their early years in one romance, we see again in a happy old age, or we listen to the eulogy that is pronounced by a successor upon their grave.

The reader may be surprised that I have uniformly called Jean Paul a poet; but if the definition of poet, be "one that gives expression to what others feel;" one, who interprets *that* in the heart which, like the inarticulate lisping of the child, cannot be made known for want of adequate

expression, then he as truly deserves the name of poet, as if every line he has written, were measured, and rhymed with another line. His great heart beat with the united pulses of all human hearts. He is the truest interpreter of joy and sorrow, love and grief; and all those hidden feelings that are revealed by the poet, as the sunbeam penetrates the mine, and shows its hidden treasures.

Finally, no poet's inward life is more distinctly made known than Jean Paul's, in his works. In his elevated characters; in his *Gustavus*, his *Albano*, his *Dehore*. Like a solitary sage, he looked out from his hermitage upon the ever-swelling and rushing waves of the literature and politics of that remarkable period in which he lived. Unmoved by its passions, still and calm, he was like a holy prophet of its issue. Glowing for freedom, truth, and the happiness of man, yet never failing in the clearness of his understanding, or the firmness of his will. Full of scorn and hatred of all servility and all tyranny, yet ever free from the folly and madness of enthusiasm. With impartiality and justice he weighed the advantages of this world in the same scales in which he had placed the hopes of another.

I have seen a cast of the Alps, a few feet square, in which mountain and valley, river and lake are represented in their true position and just proportions. The avalanche, the cataract, and the shepherd's little hut are there; nothing is added, though much is left out; but ah, how inadequate to represent those giant palaces of nature, those glorious masses of light and color, rising in the blue depths of ether, close neighbors to the stars. Such a representation the present biography must bear to the real Jean Paul. May it induce those who have the power, to become acquainted with him in his works.

APPENDIX.

I.

WIELAND was born in 1733, (just thirty years before Richter,) in Biberac, in Suabia. His father was a Lutheran minister. In his fourteenth year he was sent to a cloister, where he penetrated deeply into the spirit of the ancients, and became acquainted with English literature. Every thing conspired to make Wieland a poet—his humble natal roof, hallowed by the presence of his father, a learned, patriarchal pastor; the ancient cloisters of Bergen, the still monastic Tübingen, his devotion to Sophia La Roche as to the idea of perfection, and the hope, ever retreating before him, but always kept in view, of one day consecrating himself to her, and to the highest virtue, as to one and the same thing; his long residence in Switzerland, where he elaborated his works, and gave them the elegance, the clearness, and the natural grace, which cannot be attained by mere drudgery. These glad, bright regions of the golden time; this paradise of innocence, when he regarded what he imagined and dreamed, as absolute reality, he dwelt on long; but disappointments came; he could not succeed in combining these high interests with the *necessities* of every day existence; the conflict with the outward world began, and, after long struggles, he accepted the *actual* as the *necessary*, and henceforth made war upon his former romantic dreams; his idea of Platonic love, and upon all that cannot be shown to exist in *reality*. Henceforth he permitted no single impression to have dominion over him.

Wieland's change of views may be in part attributed to his residence with count Stadion. His library, rich in modern French and English literature, helped him to descend from the *ideal* region, in which he loved to dwell with Sophia La Roche, and after he had been wounded by what is called experience, he threw himself entirely on the side of the *real*.

In his fortieth year he was invited by the duchess Amelia to superintend the education of her sons; and from this time he was

assured of a life of leisure and independence, which was continued to him after he had done with his pupils, by a pension from the duke.

Wieland, in possession of complete literary leisure, longed for a more poetical retirement, and bought an estate in Osmanstadt, not far from Weimar. Man, born for society, often cheats himself with the sweet dream that he can live better, more joyfully in seclusion. In the excitable days of youth we imagine that solitude is the great refuge against ourselves, the grand remedy for the wounds we receive in the contests of life. It is a grave error. The experience of life teaches us that neither the enjoyments of literature nor art can fill the abyss of the soul. Wieland's happiness was interrupted by the death of Sophia La Roche, the daughter of his first love, and the excellent, careful partner of his life, whom Jean Paul thought he could never survive. He did survive for the space of twelve years, but the solitude of Osmanstadt became too oppressive to his bereaved heart, and his friend the duchess Amelia recalled him to herself. He was henceforth a member of her court and house, and when, with others, he had to bear the afflictive event of her death, court and city vied with each other to console him.*

Wieland's *heart's* history, of which Jean Paul says he imparted the particulars to *him*, a willing listener, was in part his early and innocent connection with Sophia La Roche, the grandmother, that Bettine mentions so often in her letters to Gunderode. She was the daughter of an eminent physician. Her father possessed an extensive and excellent library, and when she was only two years old he taught her to read by the titles of the books, as they rested on the shelves. Her parents gave her early religious instruction, and cultivated a love for all that is beautiful in nature or art. In her sixteenth year she was strikingly beautiful, and was sought in marriage by a learned Italian, who instructed her in the language and literature of his native land. At this time Sophia had the misfortune to lose her excellent mother, and her father became desirous to have her marriage completed; differences arose, however, in consequence of religious scruples. Bianconi insisting that all the children of the marriage, daughters as well as sons, should be educated in the Catholic form of Christianity. The father of Sophia immediately annulled the engagement; and poor Sophia was obliged, in the presence of her grandmother, father and aunts, to destroy all the letters and souvenirs of her happy love; the picture of Bianconi was cut into shreds, and a ring, set with brilliants, broken into pieces, and all committed to the flames.

Her mother, who had been her tenderest and most sympathizing friend, died too early for the happiness of her daughter; for she would, no doubt, have found a way to smooth all difficulties; but

* From the notes to *Mrs. Austin's Characteristics of Goethe*.

Sophia, who would shed no tear in the presence of her stern relatives, retired to weep in the solitude of her chamber, where she struggled alone with a new temptation. She received a note from Bianconi urging her to a secret marriage, and a flight to his own country, to the bosom of a noble and loving family. He fortified his request by more than thirty letters from her father, where he had *unconditionally* promised him his daughter. Sophia would not leave her father without his blessing; but in the depths of her soul, and in unconsolated solitude, she vowed constancy to the man who had done so much for her intellectual nature. With this view she desired to enter upon a novitiate, in order to pass her life in a cloister. Her father would not permit this sacrifice; but he allowed her the uncontrolled use of her time, and to live in retirement, where she devoted herself to study, and to the sciences and accomplishments that Bianconi preferred.

Sophia's disinclination to society obtained for her permission from her father to go with her sisters to live with her maternal grandfather, who was brother to the mother of Wieland. The death of the grandfather occurring soon after, Sophia entered the family of Wieland's father, where she lived, as her biographer expresses it, by *her own economy*.

Young Wieland came in the vacation to his father's house, and the beautiful maiden of nineteen inspired him with the most enthusiastic passion. He was two years younger; but Sophia could then appreciate his noble character; a close friendship was formed between them, and even in old age they thanked God for having led them both under the same roof. Often, they kneeled together, and devoted themselves, in prayer, to the eternal pursuit and worship of truth and duty.

Wieland says, "It was an ideal, but a true enchantment in which I lived: and the Sophia that I loved so enthusiastically, was the idea of perfection embodied in her form. Nothing is more certain than that if destiny had not brought us together I should never have been a poet." They vowed to love each other as long as either lived, and virtue eternally.

Sophia returned to her father's house, and Wieland to Tübingen; but longing to see Sophia impelled him, at the end of two years, to return. He then went to Switzerland, where he lived eight years, but always without the prospect of any provision that would allow them to marry. At the end of this time Sophia gave her hand to Herr La Roche. It does not appear whether her father's authority was again, as in the first instance, exerted; or whether considerations of prudence influenced herself; but the marriage was a very happy one. She informed Wieland of it by a letter, and he seems to have been convinced that her upright and true heart could not have done otherwise; and he prayed for the continuance of her friendship. "A friendship that had been so pure and disinterested, need not be broken by another union, and in the land of the blessed, if never in this life, we shall meet each other again."

Many years after Sophia's marriage Wieland visited her. As she sat at the window, there was a knock at the door;—a presentiment that it was her friend ran through her frame, and she called out to him to enter. At the well known sound of her voice, Wieland remained transfixed; when she opened the door, and met him with the heartiest welcome. He stood speechless. Seeing her eldest son, a beautiful youth, he called him to him, and bowing his head over that of the boy, shed streams of tears. Sophia's husband entered the room, when, taking the hands of Wieland and his wife in his, he pressed them together. The noble La Roche cemented the bond of their friendship, which endured yet many years.

Sophia could not be otherwise than happy with a man so gifted with every noble quality, as the one with whom Providence had united her, although she married against the voice of her heart. She had hitherto lived in retirement, or in learned circles; she was now introduced by her husband into the exclusive society of the German nobility; and her knowledge of the world, gained by reading, was corrected by experience. Her truly enlarged mind rose above the conventionalism and artificial distinctions of rank, and enabled her to see and acknowledge worth and talent, wherever it existed.

After sixteen years' service at the court of a German prince where Sophia had every opportunity to form friendships with distinguished characters, her husband retired to an estate in Offenback, the beautiful residence from which so many of Bettine's letters are dated, and the letter was written that is published in the body of this work. Here she lived with her husband in the enjoyment of the quiet of domestic life; in devotion to her favorite sciences, surrounded by a beautiful nature—a poet called her house a temple of *Euphrosyne*, where the pious sacrifice flame was always lighted. Goethe, in his biography, gives an interesting account of the manner of life at Offenback, and of Madame La Roche. Here, after thirty-five years of happy union, she lost her husband, and soon after the blooming youth of twenty-four years old, whom she mentions so touchingly in her letter to Jean Paul.

In consequence of the French war she lost the greater part of her fortune; but her trust in Providence was so firm, that she never for a moment lost her cheerfulness. After thirty years' separation, she visited Wieland at Osmanstadt, near Weimar, where he was living at the time of Jean Paul's second visit at Weimar. Wieland had taken the daughter of Sophia La Roche—Sophia Brentano, into that intimate friendship he had ever preserved with the mother; and after the death of both he said, "What I have once tenderly loved, never dies for me. I help myself with illusions. They are dead only to my outward sense, and that is certainly painful."

The life of Sophia La Roche was a high ideality, and age, instead of lessening it, only increased its pure and lofty purposes. She was a living proof of the immortality of the soul, for her life was so spiritual, that it must have come immediately from a higher sphere,

and immediately returned there. Her deep religious faith, and firm confidence in Providence, were immovable; hence her enthusiastic love of plants, and all the works of God, and her knowledge of all the appearances and phenomena of nature. She was extensively acquainted with the sciences; well versed in ancient and modern history, and her knowledge of the philosophy of history, and observation of the fate of nations, as well as of eminent men, not only established the benevolence of her heart, but made her patient under sorrows, and grateful for her own happy destiny. Every thing connected with the beautiful arts was infinitely dear to her. In early life her poems and pictures of touching scenes were charming.

She held the purity of the female character to be the foundation of all domestic happiness; without which, no other female virtue could have its influence or power. She studied the science of education, not only through her tender interest in her own children, but to make her little books for the benefit of young people more useful. All these virtues are expressed in her writings, and make her one of the most distinguished female authors of Germany. They are not highly imaginative, but they recommend virtue and domestic happiness in a noble, simple, and attractive manner. Her stories are domestic scenes, after the manner of Richardson. She wrote many real and imaginary journeys for young people; many stories to teach resignation under affliction; books of *instruction for young wives and housekeepers*, and published many translations from the French and English. The female literature of Germany is rich in books of the kind above mentioned, and those of the Fraulein La Roche are among the best.

After her death Wieland had the melancholy satisfaction of editing her whole works, and writing many prefaces and notes.—*Abridged from Schindel's Biography.*

II.

HERDER was the son of poor parents. His father was the teacher of a humble school for girls, "but an earnest, duty-fulfilling, honest man; his mother, a sensible, industrious, quiet *Hausfrau*, distinguished by her gifts of mind and person, and by accomplishments surpassing others of her sex in lowly life." The history of Herder's youth is the often repeated tale of the unfolding of mind under every circumstance of oppression and want. In his father's family all the domestic business and the hours of reading were strictly regulated. If there was any thing to be done, the children *durst* not excuse themselves. It *must* be done. It was only by strenuous industry that his father could make his small income meet the expenses of a large family. When his father was satisfied with him, his countenance expressed it; and he laid his hand upon his head, and called him *Gottes-Friede*, (God's peace.) His name was *Godfried*.

Herder's youth was so quiet and reserved, that his teacher thought him dull, and advised his father to bind him to some mechanical employment; but he observed, that the young man kept his light burning late at night; and, going into his room long after midnight, he found the bed covered with Greek and Latin classics, open, as if they had been studied; and the boy lying asleep in the midst, with the lighted candle in his hand.

About this time a regiment was quartered in Herder's native place. The surgeon, a benevolent and enlightened man, was favorably impressed by the young Herder, and offered to take him to Königsberg to study either medicine or surgery; and to obtain help for his already impaired eyes. The offer was received by his parents as a light from heaven in a dark night; and although Herder felt no inclination to surgery, he regarded this deliverance from his destitute and oppressed situation with joy.

Immediately after his arrival at Königsberg, his friend led him to an anatomical school, and the young Herder sank fainting upon the floor; from henceforth he could not bear the name of surgery without a nervous shudder.

As he returned from the school, he met an old school-fellow, who was a student of theology, and resolved to present himself for examination to the theological faculty of the college. He was immediately admitted; and although his worldly possessions were only three Prussian dollars and eight *grotchen*, he wrote to his parents, that he would support himself by his own industry. He kept his word, although he practised the strictest economy, and his food was often, for many days together, only bread and water.

At the age of twenty, Herder was chosen a teacher of the *Domschule* in Riga, and began to preach. With true religious feeling, Herder knew how, in his preaching, to excite careless minds and insensible hearts. His themes were immortality, love to God and man, and every virtue. With soul-moving eloquence, the ornaments of a youthful fancy, and a persuasive voice, he seized irresistibly upon every heart; while his fine speaking countenance, his eloquent eye and graceful gestures, heightened the impression made by his sermons.

It would be delightful to follow Herder through his life; but I wish to speak of him only in his union with his accomplished wife. In reading the lives of literary men and women, no one can avoid the melancholy conviction, that *divorces*, consequently unhappy marriages, are more frequent among them than with any other class. The reasons that might be given for this, would open a sorrowful page in the history of women.

It is delightful to find, in the lives of Herder and his wife, two literary characters, living from youth to age in the most beautiful harmony of mind and of pursuit. Caroline helped her husband in his literary difficulties, sympathized in his disappointments, and

vindicated his memory in an eloquent and touching *memoir*, published after his death.

They were betrothed long before their poverty would allow them to marry. Herder had become governor to a young prince of Darmstadt, and in accompanying him on a visit to a kindred prince, he was invited to preach in the court chapel. Caroline gives the following account of her first meeting with her future husband.

"Herder was invited to preach. I heard the voice of an angel, and soul's words such as I never heard before. In the afternoon I saw him, and stammered out my thanks to him. From this time forth our souls were *one*. Our meeting was God's work! *More* intimately could not hearts be united than ours. My love was a feeling, a harmony. Ah, certainly no one knew him as I did, thanks be to God! From this time forward we saw each other daily. I felt a happiness never experienced before, but also an indescribable melancholy; I feared I should never see him again!

"The twenty-fifth of August we celebrated, in the little circle of his friends, his birth-day. He gave me his first letter, and with this letter I received the holiest gift this earth contained for me—his love! Ah, I could only thank God! The twenty-seventh he left Darmstadt, to go to Strasburg. At the moment of separation, I spoke with him for the *first* time alone. But no *words* were necessary; we were *one* heart, and *one* soul! No separation could ever divide us."

It was upon this residence in Strasburg, for an operation upon his eyes, that Herder met Goethe, who has given a minute account of their intercourse, in his *Dichtung und Wahrheit*.

Caroline gives the following account of their marriage: "A worthy old clergyman married us, in the circle of my relations, by the rose-light of a beautiful evening. It was God's blessing that seemed audibly spoken over our union. The separation from my sisters was painful, but he indemnified me for all, and gave me a thousandfold more than I deserved. I thought now with pain, how, during our betrothment, I had tormented him with asking him to forget me; for I had no fortune, and possessed no other advantages to make him as happy as he deserved. In every letter, he told me that I was the blessing of his life; that I durst not, I should not leave him, for thus he would be alone in the world. That God would never leave us; that He would bless our union."

Thirty-three years afterwards, Caroline wrote to Jean Paul on this anniversary, "I am to-day alone, and in the *other world*. It is the *second of May*, our marriage day."

Their marriage was indeed a happy one.. Herder usually wrote by the side of his wife, and she assisted him by copying his rough sketches and first thoughts.

Three years after his marriage, Herder was invited to Weimar, to fill the place of Consistorial Rath, and court preacher. Many reports had preceded Herder, of his heresy and his contempt of forms.

They had said, among other things, that he preached in boots and spurs, and that after every sermon he rode three times around the church and out the door on horseback. Accordingly the church was crowded to hear his first sermon. All were charmed with his eloquence. Herder refers to the reports about him in a letter to a friend, where he says, "I live, in the whirlpool of business, a quiet and retired life, and preach in Dr. Luther's coat and *surplice*."

Herder and his wife were both distinguished members of that delightful literary society that formed around the duchess Amelia; where they enjoyed the fairest evening hours, with spiritual men and accomplished women, and read the Poets, and acted Shakspeare; and where we meet again Wieland and Goethe, Knebel and Einsiedel, Madam von Kalb, and all the names so familiar to us in the life of Jean Paul.

Herder's first separation from Caroline was occasioned by a journey to Italy, where he spent nearly a year. This was the occasion of many delightful letters. I translate only one.

"To-day is the day of our *Verlobung* in spirit, when I brought you my first letter, my Caroline. Oh, a thousand, thousand times dearer than when, trembling, I gave it to you. Oh, believe it, thou much-trying, good, dear, richly-sacrificing, heroic soul! You have made me all that I now am; have cared for all, and have given yourself to me a thousand times! And what have I done for you? how can I repay you? Spare your health; and I am certain, as of my existence, that we shall lead a new bridal life together, happier than the old; for we are wiser, and in the future we shall be better. I am certain our short separation has been a present from the All Good. Remove all doubts from your heart, and be with me with thy good, strong soul, as thy dear, beautiful form is always at my side."

Herder wrote also to Jacobi at this time: "I have a wife that is the *tree*, the consolation, and the happiness of my life. Even in quickly flying, transient thoughts, (which often indeed surprises us,) we are *one*! She suffers only when she sees me suffer; at other times she is all peace and activity, full of good courage and cheerful views."

Herder's situation in Weimar was never favorable to his happiness. He was oppressed with a multiplicity of affairs, obliged to preach all kinds of occasional sermons, especially to eulogize all the members of the Ducal family; and he was constantly opposed in his efforts to improve the schools and the churches under his care, and to place a barrier against the fashionable levity and irreverence for religion, that made giant strides in Weimar during the time of the revolution in France.

Herder died, not of old age, but as his wife expressed it, "from disappointment over his false position, his *failed life*; of highly excited nerves, and a heart wounded and broken by the evils of the times."

After his death, Caroline exerted all her power to collect materials for his life, which she did not publish herself, but prepared

them for a literary friend. She arranged his unpublished papers, and prepared them for a complete edition of his works; saw her six sons well established in life, and her only daughter married,—and then followed him, from whom her thoughts had never strayed.*

I have given this little notice of the Herders to show that literary women are not necessarily eccentric or egotistical; not necessarily mad enthusiasts, or careless housekeepers; faithless wives, or neglectful mothers; but that they may perform all the duties of life as cheerfully, as gracefully, and as faithfully, as if they had never learned the alphabet of literature.

III.

THE KAMPANER THAL.

The Kampaner Thal is so beautiful a work, that I wish to give a fuller account of it than I had room for in the text. It purports to be part of a journal, kept by the author in travelling through France, and is addressed to *Victor*, the hero of the *Hesperus*. Jean Paul was in the habit of addressing letters to his *fictitious characters*, as to his other correspondents; and it seems as if it must have been difficult for him to draw the line between his living and his *imaginary* friends.

To return. In this imaginary journey he meets a gentleman, Carlson, called the Rittmaster, who had been travelling with a party of friends, consisting of the baron Wilhelmi, his wife, wife's sister, and their domestic chaplain. Carlson had been deeply attached to Gione, the newly married wife of the baron; and it is delicately hinted, that the attachment had been mutual; but some German conventionalisms interfering, she had married, although not very unhappily, against the voice of her heart. The party rest at an inn, where a bridal party are celebrating their nuptials in one apartment, while the young and beautiful daughter of the host lies in her shroud, in another. The sight of the pale face, with its crown of roses, affects Gione, whose nerves are already weakened, in such a manner as to produce a fainting fit, so long, as to assume the appearance of death. Carlson, whose love for Gione had taken the nun's veil, and he had built around his heart a cloister wall, is betrayed by the sight into the discovery of his concealed passion, which he expresses in an ode, "*The complaint without consolation*," and leaves the party before Gione had recovered from her swoon. Just now, Jean Paul overtakes him; and having been later at the inn, tells him it was only a fainting fit that had assumed the appearance of death. He returns to the party, and takes Paul with him.

They all agree to travel on foot through the beautiful valley (Kampaner Thal) situated in the upper Pyrennees, at the termina-

* From the Life of Herder, by Carl L. Ring.

tion of which is the castle of the baron, the future home of Gione. The description of the valley is in Jean Paul's best manner, and the female characters are made known with exquisite touches. *Nadine*, the sister, to whom intercourse with the world and a happy temperament have given a playful, light, ever cheerful exterior, is contrasted with Gione, who has a tender and earnest expression, with a slender and perfectly Grecian style of beauty. Carlson is not an Atheist, but his "complaint without consolation" has betrayed his disbelief of a future life, and his faith in annihilation. The chaplain is a disciple of Kant. Jean Paul undertakes to support the doctrine of the *immortality of the soul*, and a future recognition of friends beyond the grave. After asserting many proofs drawn from *analogy*, the Kantian said, "that from the unity of the universe it may be concluded, that emigrants from the earth will visit every planet; and those delicate souls who shun the sun will find themselves happy in Uranius: that the widely differing climates in the planets was no conclusion against the future residence of man upon them, because man can accommodate himself to every climate."

Jean Paul answered, "I have a strong objection against the future *voyage pittoresque* through the planets; we bear in our own breasts a *heaven*, full of constellations. There is in our hearts an inward, spiritual world. I mean, that inward universe of *goodness, beauty, and truth*; three worlds that are neither part, nor shoot, nor copy of the outward. We are less astonished at the incomprehensible existence of these transcendental heavens, because they are always there, and we foolishly imagine that we *create*, when we merely *perceive* them. After *what model*, with *what plastic power*, and *from what*, could we create these same spiritual worlds? The atheist should ask himself, *how* he received the giant idea of God, that he has neither *opposed*, nor *embodied*? an *idea* that has not grown up by comparing different degrees of greatness, as it is the opposite of every measure and degree. In short, the atheist speaks as others, of *prototype* and *original*.

"As there are idealists of the outward world who believe that perceiving a thing *creates* the thing itself; so there are idealists of the inward world, who deduce the *being* from the *appearing*, the *sound* from the *echo*, instead of, on the contrary, inferring *appearance* from *reality*, *consciousness* from the object itself. We take erroneously the power of analyzing our inward world for the *preformation* of the same; that is, we think ourself the *originator* and founder, when we are only the genealogist.

"This inward world, that is indeed more splendid and admirable than the outward, needs another heaven than the one above us, and a higher world than that the sun warms; therefore, we say justly, not a second *earth*, or globe, but a second *world* beyond this universe."

Gione interrupted me—"and every virtuous and wise man is a proof of another world."

"And," continued Nadine, quickly, "every one who undeservedly suffers!"

"Yes," I answered, "that is what draws our thread of life through a long eternity. The threefold echo of virtue, truth, and beauty created by the music of the spheres, calls us from this hollow earth to the neighborhood of the music. *Why* and *wherefore* were these desires given us? Merely, that like a swallowed diamond, they should slowly cut through our earthly covering. Wherefore were we placed upon this ball of earth, creatures with light wings; if instead of soaring with our wings of ether, we are to fall back into the earth clods of our birth?"

Carlson asked: "But could not our spiritual powers be given us to *preserve* and *heighten* the enjoyments of the present life?"

"To preserve?" I answered, "as if an angel would be imprisoned in the body to be its dumb servant; its stove-warmer and butler; its *cusinier* and porter at the door of the stomach? Shall the ethereal flame merely serve to fill the circular stove with life's warmth; obediently burn and warm; and then become cold and extinguished! Every tree of knowledge is a Upas tree to the body, and every refinement a slow *poison* infused into the cup of sensual pleasure; but on the contrary, corporeal needs are the iron key to freedom of soul; the stomach is the rich forcing-glass of future bloom; and the different animal impulses are only the earthly steps to the Grecian temple of our higher nature.

"For *enjoyment* do you say? That is, we receive the food of *animals* to satisfy the taste and hunger of the gods? The part of us that is of earth, this indeed, like the earth-worm, is filled and nourished with earthly food. All the conditions of our earthly existence must be complied with, ere the demands of the inward nature can be made known. Is the bellowing *animal* circle fed, the animal contest finished; then the inward being demands its nectar and ambrosial bread; but if this inward being nourishes its appetites with *earthly* food alone, they become avenging angels; or change to a god of hell that impels to self-murder, or is destroyed in a poisonous mixture of all joys. For the eternal hunger in man, the unappeased longing of his heart demands not *richer*, but *other* food. Thus our indigence is not satisfied with the *quantity*, but depends on the *species* of the food. The imagination can paint itself a degree of satisfaction, but it is not happy in the accumulation of all possessions, if they are other than *truth, beauty* and *goodness*."

"But the finer souls?" said Nadine.

I answered: "This discrepancy between our wishes and our relations; between the *soul* and the *earth*, remains a *riddle* if we continue; and if we cease to live, a *blasphemy*. Strangers, born upon mountains, we consume in lowly places, with unhealthy *heimweh* (homesickness). We belong to higher regions, and an eternal longing grows in our hearts at music, which is the *Kuhreigen* of our native Alps." . . .

"From hence, what follows?" asked the chaplain.

"Not that we are unhappy, but that we are immortal; and that this world *within* us, demands and manifests a *second, without* us! Ah, what can we not say upon this second life, whose beginning is so evidently in this, and that so wonderfully doubles our joys? Wherefore does a certain higher purity of character disable us from being always *more useful*, as, according to Herschel, there are suns to which no earths belong? Wherefore is the heart consumed and broken by the long, feverish, but infinite love for an infinite object; and only alleviated with the hope that this heart sickness, like the physical, will be stilled with the ice of death, and afterwards raised."

"No," said Gione, with a voice trembling with feeling, "it is not ice, but lightning, that, when the heart is laid on the altar as a sacrifice, falls from heaven and consumes it, as a proof that the sacrifice is well pleasing to God."

I know not why, but her touching voice and eye entered my soul, and totally interrupted the concluding links of my chain of argument.

Nadine, who is usually victorious over all emotion, was touched by her sister's voice. She reached her hand into a neighboring garden, and took from under the hairy leaf of a potato branch, a large, night butterfly, and showed it to us with a calm and tender smile. It was the so-called *death's-head*. I stroked the depressed wings and said, "It had its birth in Egypt, the land of mummies and graves; it bears a *memento mori* upon its back, and a *miserere* in its plaintive note."

"It is, nevertheless, a butterfly," said the chaplain.

Upon Gione's face again rested that reflective calmness that made her, through the silence of her sorrow, so infinitely beautiful and great. "Once you said—the female Psyche, although pierced through with burning iron, should not beat violently and convulsively her wings, for she thus would destroy her exquisite, unruffled beauty! Ah, how true a word!"

At this moment, the already-mentioned ode of Carlson's is read, in which he laments the *annihilation* of so much beauty and truth, and avers his inconsolable sorrow.

Jean Paul resumes—I cannot tell thee, my Victor, how painful, how *monstrous* and *horrible* the thought of an annihilating death, of an eternal grave, for this noble form, in all its spiritual beauty, now appeared to me! If Carlson was right, this innocent soul, that had never been happy, would pass from its prison upon the earth, to its hollow prison under it. Men often bear their errors, as their truths, about in words, and not in feeling; but let the believer in annihilation place before him, instead of a life of sixty years, one of sixty minutes; then let him look upon the face of a beloved being, or upon a noble and wise man, as upon an aimless hour-long appearance; as a thin shadow, that melts into light, and leaves no trace; can he bear

the thought? No! The supposition of imperishableness is always with him. Else there would hang always before his soul, as before Mahomet's, in the fairest sky, a black cloud; and as Cain upon the earth, an eternal fear would pursue him!

I continued—but all argument was now changed to feeling; “yes, if all the woods upon this earth were groves of pleasure; if all the valleys were Kampaner valleys; if all the islands were blessed, and all the fields Elysian; if all eyes were cheerful, and all hearts joyful—yes, then—no! even then, had God, through his very blessedness, made to our spirits the *promise*, the *oath* of eternal duration! But now, oh God! when so many houses are houses of mourning, so many fields battle-fields, so many cheeks are pale; when we pass before so many eyes red with weeping or closed in death; Oh! can the grave, that haven of salvation, be the last swallowing, unyielding whirlpool? No, the trampled worm dares raise itself towards its Creator, and say, “Thou durst not create me *to suffer alone!*”

“And who gives the worm the right to make this demand?” asked Carlson.

Gione answered softly, “The All Good himself, who has given us compassion, that speaks aloud in us for all; and which *alone* would give us a hope, a claim upon him!”

This gentle and beautiful word could not immediately calm me. About my inward eye collected the forms of those whose hearts had been without guilt, as their lives without joy; who had not attained one wish of their innocent souls, and were now lying under the snow of the past; for they had been like men who, in freezing, try to sleep. And the forms of those who have loved too well, and lost *all*, like the beautiful one near me; and so many others, who are most surely martyred by destiny, as the beautiful flower Narcissus is consecrated to the God of Hell! Then I remembered your true remark, “that you never heard the words *sorrow* and the *past*, spoken by a woman, without at the same time heaving a sigh over the eternal union of those two words,”—for women, in the narrower theatre of their plans, and with their ideal wishes, build more than we do upon the worth of others; and have to suffer for more failures than their own.

The sun sank deeper behind the mountains, and the giant shadows rose like birds of night out of their eternal snows; I took the hand of Carlson, and looking in his beautiful, manly face, I said, “Ah, Carlson, upon what a blooming world do you throw your immeasurable grave-stone, that no time can lift. Your *two* difficulties, which are founded upon the *necessary* uncertainties of men, if solved, would only have the *effect* to destroy our *faith*; which is the solution of a thousand other difficulties; without which our existence is without aim, our pains without solution, and the Godlike trinity in our breast, three avenging spirits. From the formless earthworm, up to the beaming human countenance; from the chaos of the first day, up to the present age of the world; from the first

faint motion of the heart, to its full, bold throbbing in the breast of manhood, the invisible hand of God leads, protects, and nourishes the inward being; the *nursling of the outward*; educates and polishes, and makes it beautiful—and wherefore? That when it stands as a demigod in the midst of the ruins of the temple of the body, upright and elevated; the blow of death may prostrate it for ever, that nothing shall remain from the corpse-veiled, the mourning and mantled, immeasurable universe, but the eternally sowing, never harvesting, solitary spirit of the world! One eternity, looking despairingly at the other! and in the whole spiritual universe, no end, no aim! And all these contradictions and riddles, whereby not merely the harmony, but the *strings* of creation are tangled, must we take, merely on account of the two difficulties, that indeed our annihilation cannot solve!*

Beloved Carlson! into this harmony of the spheres, that is not *over*, but ever *around* us, will you bring your shrieking discord? See, how gently and touchingly the day departs, and how holily the night comes! Oh, can you not believe that even thus our spirits shall arise from the dust, as you once saw the full moon rise from the crater of Vesuvius?

Carlson touched accidentally the strings of Gione's lute that he carried.

Gione took it with one hand, and gave him the other, while she said in a low tone—"Among us all, will you alone be tormented with this despairing faith? *You*, who deserve one so beautiful?"

Her words touched the buried love of his long-closed heart, and two hot drops fell from his blinded eyes. He looked at the mountains, and said, "I can bear no annihilation but my own! My *heart* is of your opinion; my *head* will slowly follow."

The party now drew near the castle, the future home of Gione, which was already illuminated, and filled with music to receive its mistress; and the book closes with the celebration of her nuptials.†

Jean Paul called the *Kampaner Thal* the living work of youth. In it, the proofs of immortality are drawn more from feeling than from philosophical investigation. In the *Selina*, which was begun on the burial day of his son Max, he intended it should be otherwise. The same party are introduced, with the changes that would naturally take place in thirty years. Gione, the beloved of Carlson, is dead, but in her daughter Selina, she has left a full echo of her heart, and a bright reflection of her form. Her voice also resembles her mother's, and she enhances the likeness by always wearing her mother's favorite colors.

Upon Carlson, who had borne his love-veiled heart into many

* Carlson's *two* difficulties were the uncertainty of our union with the body, and of our union with friends in a future world.

† This short extract will give the reader but an imperfect idea of the work.

lands, time had left few marks. From the melancholy shadows that hovered over his noble countenance, and the traces of pain about the firmly closed mouth, it was difficult to determine whether his sorrow had been recent, or remote.

Carlson had at length married a lady of the court of *Albano* and *Idoine*, and was the father of two sons. He had become a firm believer in a future life; but his eldest son, Alexander, professed his father's ancient faith in annihilation; and on Jean Paul's visit, with which the book commences, this faith is combated with philosophical arguments and poetical illustrations of the most beautiful order.

Paul says, among other beautiful things, that "our investigations of our immortality, are too often held in a time of sorrow and mourning, when we seize the proofs from spiritual necessity, and therefore they are not transparent. The graves of others are like icy mountains, that travellers visit with veils upon their faces.

"My principal exertion in *Selina* has been, to gain a height, where the prospect may be open on every side, where the glance may be freely thrown into the grave, into earth and heaven. Endeavor to free the mind from systems, and early prejudices, and then look boldly around. Do you find no consolation near, rise and seek it higher; like the bird of paradise, who, when his feathers are ruffled by storms, rises higher, where none exist."

Speaking of the church, he says: "To the crucifixion and girdle of thorns, they should add hopes and joys; or flowers, as well as herbs. In the vineyard of the Lord they grow herbs and emetic wine; but the little Hamburg piece of land, and the little church flower-plot is wanting, as *cheerfulness* is wanting in religion."

IV.

The friendship between Otto and Jean Paul was one of the most beautiful that literary history has made known to us. But the frequent outbreking jealousy of Otto, at what he imagined approaching coldness in Paul, was the occasion of many letters that disclose the generous and forbearing spirit of his friend. As these letters would have taken too much room for the body of the work, I have placed some extracts from them in the appendix. Otto's were written immediately after Paul finally left Hof, to accompany his brother to Leipzig.

"You have appeared to me, my Richter, in these latter times, to be no longer the same. Inspired by fame, you only now and then returned to yourself and to me; when in a moment of emotion, your countenance itself (but probably under the thought of separation) painfully declared it. Your short letters, if you were necessarily absent, wounded me; and when in the evening you came, our conversation was constrained and one-syllabled. I missed every where the accustomed warmth, and our former life: we had become strangers to each other. Thus we lived near each other, in different houses,

and nothing but the neighborhood seemed to bring us together. I felt as if I must withdraw in some degree of self-dependence, within myself, and not advance too submissively; thus I endeavored to harden myself in your absence, but never in your presence. I consented that you should *live* with others, but a secondary sympathy through narration I could not give up. I said, as I withdrew into myself, man can have nothing nearer than himself; he must, let him be what he will, have a reliance upon himself; he must be self-grounded. If he would be self-consistent he must advance and rise by himself. The judgment that he must pass upon himself, can be formed through no foreign help; he must therefore depend solely upon himself.

"Rank and station appeared to exert an increasing influence upon you, and you appeared to give into the *pretension* to both that distinguished and accomplished talent establishes. You believed that you penetrated all things, (but sometimes you yield to first impressions that you rarely contradict with the second,) and, as you did not betray yourself, you thought I should not perceive your feelings; but I knew quickly all that you felt, for all that interests so deeply, makes us penetrating and sharp-sighted.* . . .

"When I wrote the above, I said to myself—yes, we are for ever divided—but *you* will never find a man, a friend who will love and understand you better—Ah! there is much passed, that will never return. The most precious bloom and consciousness of beauty in every thing, in every being, when once past, never—never returns—all disposition, every effort, every exertion to recall it helps nothing—but to make the loss more deeply felt. In vain we stretch out our hands, nothing returns but the longing and the shadow, that vanishes when we would hold it.

"At that time, long passed, when sleeping together, we never thought of speaking; we thought not of entertaining each other. I neither saw, nor feared, nor thought, nor felt, that you could *descend* to me! Ah, then it was other and better than now! Now I sit alone, and think of those lost times of freedom and equality. But since I have been compelled to understand that our roses are withered, I have gained self-reliance, that came not indeed from reason, but from necessity; and I am obliged to acknowledge that I am reduced to myself.

"In that early time, when you found me in the upper apartment; when we were pressed to impart to each other; and if we were silent it was not oppressive, and we parted again, strengthened and joyful. Formerly, you enjoyed for me as for yourself; now, for yourself alone. Formerly, the fleeting and changing joys of the moment were prolonged, and received a greater value from the thought of repeating and enjoying them again with me. Think not

* There are many more charges, too long to be inserted. Paul's answer makes them apparent.

that I do not miss this communion. That I have not reminded you of it, was because I would only receive the gift with the double value, that generosity makes itself doubly happy, when it imparts to another. Formerly, you were more lenient towards every one—you esteemed what every one gave, according to his good will, and not after the measure of his mental riches—now you demand beside the gift, that the giver should be rich. Now you take *consciously*, what you formerly received *unconsciously*.

“By degrees your letters became colder, hastier, more selfish—self-sustained, measured, prudent, passing more ceremoniously over the present, and anticipating the future with no animating hope—and in your letters, the cold *you* would more frequently come, if you did not reluctantly recollect yourself, than the intimate and precious *thou* (DU).

“I am not susceptible! you do not yet wholly understand me; and my worst and best sides, not justly.

“If you should return again you could not alter. The past will never return! The tender, once blooming, but not perennial past, never, never! There is a self-confidence, a repose in oneself that suffers every man to be what he *can* be; and to mine belongs this faith *in*, this clear perception of an unchangeable destiny. I know, too well, that it depended most upon me; but yet, somewhat upon you. I have never, never believed you inconstant, and never will. Say, always, that I do you injustice; say, that I misunderstand you; but yet I cannot conceal from you that I believe, you have not yet left all the errors of your life *behind* you; that it seems to me as if you stood very near the last; and that it is my fervent wish and hope, if you conquer it, or can ever conquer it, that we should again approach each other.

“Be not angry on account of what I have written; or if you are, and must be—tell me so at least—be not silent—*this time*—not silent. In future, as often, and as long as you will. But if you are silent—if you *can* be angry with me, yet I will love you as formerly, as *now*, unalterably, as none other! eternally! eternally!

“Thine!

OTTO.”

Richter answered immediately, and would not by a single day’s delay, allow Otto to think he was wounded.

“Dear Otto: Your letter gave me, occasionally, little shudders; but it is well that you should lay before me the whole web of your errors, that I may unravel them. May you never, in future, weave a single thread that shall cut into your heart. How have you misunderstood me, but always from love! and all that gives me pain in your letter, is *your* sorrow.

“I will now go through with all the objections against me in your letter, either to acknowledge or remove them—this is the only way to relieve the oppressive fulness of my heart.

“R. appears to me so absorbed by fame as not to remain wholly

himself.' I have often thought that to many I should appear thus, and that they would thus represent me. But I assure you, my Otto, my inward being cannot, by all the laurels in the world, be raised one inch higher than it was before the publication of the '*Mummy*.*' I have a humility within me that no man can guess, and, that is not a victory over, but a necessity of my nature; as I *alone* know how to separate my industry, my added growth of years, from my natural powers. Towards the R——s, towards Renata, towards your family, I am as I have always been; but when the mercantile, despising, money-loving, egotistical Hofers came, then, not my intellectual nature, that the public alone have praised too much, but my moral nature arose, and compared the Hofers with strangers; and I could not forget how they formerly, and indeed always have treated me, and how they despised and deserted my poor mother, in her poverty. Remember that the contempt, (a contempt that I felt much more strongly in my poverty,) was only expressed against arrogance, at least against the H——s; never, never against thee or thine!

"Evenings when we met, we sought painfully for conversation; he appeared to let himself down to me; sought to talk politics, to speak of the peace, etc.

"This suspicion had been fearful to me if I had guessed it, and I should have been altogether silent or remained away. But with you, my Otto, I felt always that *fantasying* freedom to speak either about every thing or nothing. I cannot tell you how happy I went from you, because I have been excused the trouble and ennui of seeking after conversation. Me, poor innocent, how pitiful my quiet satisfaction now appears to me! I asked about the peace, because the newspapers torment me, and I read them very unwillingly, and your opinion was more valuable to me than my own; and the idolatry in *these* for the, to me, scarcely human French, permitted me no questions. Politics, or history always turned a new side towards us, and was more prolific than any other subject. Then our Schwarzenbach conversation had the double charm of exchanging mutually our novelties, from the eight days' separation. Your judgment upon politics, and not my own, was the only one that I had faith in. I never thought that friendship need *entertain*, or that silence was a sign that the heart was cold.

"Of the 'letting down,' had my heart, as my understanding, no sense—never a thought. Ah! how can I represent to myself such an idea? Yes, our personal separation was indeed a happiness if such a monstrous, infinitely painful suspicion was to continue to gain strength. Or, if not the separation, a letter, such as you have written.

"'Concealing my departure.' This you do not understand. I do not know whether you are acquainted with the fearfully destroy-

* The *Mummy* was another name for *Siebenkas*, or *Fruit-Flower* and *Thorn pieces*.

ing power of emotion, that the excitement of imagination leaves. What I see, and do not think about, I can bear; but if the object turns from the eye to the fancy, which is the key of my heart, then the weakening power of emotion is so great that I seek *levity* instead of *tenderness*, merely that I may not think. I could write sheets upon this subject. Formerly I loved the storms of feeling; but no longer, for they destroy. I ask for little from the world that I have already tasted; less on account of the pain than the physical consequences. Emotion is never wholly bitter when the love therein makes it sweet; but I would deny it if it injured others.

"The last Sunday I was with you there arose in me a whole world of tears as I looked at you; and as I saw in your expression the same emotion, I could look no longer, but stifled my tears and left you rather.

"‘He believes that he has discovered every thing.’ I believe it, never! As I know that, on account of my imagination, I see nothing justly in the beginning; and also that at first all things—men, places, books, music, appear to me too good.

"‘He considers me vain.’ I have never found this vanity exercised towards me. I was satisfied with every thing in you, and thought you knew it. I never think when I love any one, of assuring him of my esteem. In the ecstasy of love, I see nothing, I think not of appearances, I merely rejoice. When I made you guilty of vanity, and wrote you a cold letter, it was when you were at Bayreuth.

"‘Ah, there is much past that will never return.’ Every stroke of the clock is to me the funeral bell of a past emotion, but also the baptismal bell of a new one. Ah, the twenty years’ feeling of friendship, the twenty years’ delight of love are past, and will enjoy no earthly morning; but as old stars go down, new ones rise. No emotion remains the same, but the new-born are sweeter; and the heart, if it is more unhappy, is not colder than of old. Upon this subject I could write a book. Nothing fades! The growing plant throws off its leaves in harvest, but it blossoms again, and at length is a perfect tree. Man has many springs, and no winter.

"‘Why do I tell you so little of myself.’ Ah, innocent as a child do I stand before thee. The eternal repetition of my *I* was hateful to me, as I could only speak of my works. Every day the individual features became worse, and I gave you, *unwillingly*, a history, that as I became more accustomed to it, appeared only a perpetual abstract of the same thing; and, further, I did not think you expected it. . . .

"I have read yours, and this letter again. Mine does not satisfy me. In yours I find excellent remarks, and a *love* that I can never forget, although the same faults that you reproach me with, namely, upon *you* alone has my new relation with the public produced a change. . . .

"I never mingle you with others; my feeling for you is unique, and belongs to no other human being. Often when I hear music, and long for my Hofer friends, you alone come before my heart; and it is always, as it was lately, in a dream, when Renata appeared grown old, and your younger brother led Albretch with swollen lips! At last you came; and for joy loudly weeping, I fell upon your neck, and awoke!

"Only when I *need* to, shall I write. Ah, that is always. But I have no time; and when the need is strongest, I had rather not write, but *phantasie* on the piano; *that* gently quiets the longing that writing increases. Ah, every year my love for you increases, becomes purer and nobler, spite of the faults that I discover in you. I would that it were the same with you! When in the spring I again find myself in the blooming circle of your love, and the old, disturbing relations have passed into pure benevolence, then we shall find no firmer love and joy, but a higher, a greater, a more heavenly—and I willingly give the past for the future.

"Nevertheless, you only are right. I fail often without knowing it. There are also other reasons why you misunderstand me. I have more faults than you know. Until now I have only given negative answers; to the positive belong a book. How strange it has been the last year with my inward being, no one can guess. Enough. I give you again my hand, and say, forgive *me*, for *I* have nothing to forgive! Forget your pain, and stand by me eternally—as I
R."

V.

Jean Paul kept a record of the remarks of his children, when they were quite young. I select a few.

Odilia, three years old. After speaking of God, said: Ah, dear God! I prayed, make my mother sleep well.

When they asked how God looked? I answered: More beautiful than the sun; than the starry night; than any dress,—that they might get an idea of the *Infinite*, without corporeal existence.

Odilia. I will be a thousand times good to thee! I will be a hundred *gulden* good to thee!

Emma, five years old. I love thee so well—so well as a great *piece*. I love thee as good as thou art; I cannot love thee more.

I told them my father had punished me because I drew a key from the door. What would you do, if your children were to do so?

Max. I would throw them out of the window.

I will, then, throw thee out, I said.

Max. No. For then I could not throw mine out.

Mother to Max. Why did you not work this morning?

Max, five years old. Why did you not tell me to work this morning instead of now?

I said : Your father and mother work without any one commanding them to work.

Max. But the dear God commands *you* to work.

Max said, angrily, he would not bring in the coffee. I repeated the order, and he went ; but said, as from revenge, that I had made him tell a lie ; for he had said, he *would not* bring in the coffee.

I said : Now in the spring the *Christkindchen* has no presents.

Max. The dear God gives every thing himself, and does not need the *Christkindchen* in the spring, when every thing is so beautiful.

Odilia came sobbing, and threw herself on the sofa. "Do you know the shoemaker's little girl is dead ? I wish I were myself dead !"

After an hour, I said, if I were to cut a little place on your finger with my knife, and you saw the blood, you would not wish to die.

Odilia. I am not so sorry now ; and as she is at last dead, we will leave her.

Max. The dear God has made us, and will kill us ! What then can help ?

Max, when asked to pray, said, "I will *think* in the night—will not God hear ?

Somebody asked, what they would do if father and mother were dead ?

Max answered : We would weep.

And what else ?

Max. We would go out a little in the street, &c. &c.

Richter had a peculiar manner of clothing his requests in a garb of pleasantry and humor. I translate only *one*, a billet to his brother-in-law. "Day before yesterday the academy of sciences in Munchen offered a prize of two *ducats* for the solution of the *prize questions*, 'What is the best *dish* in Bayreuth ?' and 'What is the best *drink* in the world ?' As a member of the academy, I answered the question, 'that the best dish is a *ham* cured by my *Frau*-sister, and the best drink is the *beer* that my brother sends me.' To-day, by the running post, I expect to receive the two *ducats* of which you shall have *three*, dear brother, upon condition that you send me your splendid beer, soon, often, and for a long while to come !"

VI.

One other journey of Richter's deserves a place, because it has been the occasion of a very pleasant description of the amusements of the court of Kurland, published by Cotta in the Ladies' Pocket-book ; and shows, that the cheerful, hospitable, country life at a

German court, is very much like the country life of the wealthy classes in England.

Jean Paul was rewarded, in the year 1819, for the want of a *spring* journey, by the splendid blue harvest weeks in the Lobichau, the estate of the duchess of Kurland, where, with her three daughters and her sister, the countess Eliza von der Reck, and a multitude of distinguished visitors, literary men, artists, and beautiful women, they lived after the true old German custom, in princely hospitality. I translate from the printed account.

“If I should now tell you, that a quarter of a hundred strangers have made the castle their autumn quarters, and that sometimes on Sundays thirty-five guests sit down in the dining saloon, you would not wonder if I should go on to say, that there are not many examples of guests remaining only a few days. Besides those from the neighboring city, who can come and go when they please, there are many, like myself, who stay from the 31st of August to the 17th of September. There are others, with families, who have been here four, five, six weeks. But at last, dearest, I will surprise you with the fact, for you cannot yet guess the reason of the union of so many people in one place, so that guests of every species sit, or wander about. Counts and countesses, barons and baronesses, doctors of medicine and doctors of theology, doctors of justice and laws, presidents and painters, sons of the muses, poets, all with, or without wife and children. For the present, to mention only the poets, there are Schink, Tiedge, and myself. . . .

“But, my good reader, you would know, from a true hand, the duchess of Kurland, and how a princess, who can summon together such a wide circle, can hold them fast in a ring of enchantment. Her name would often be pronounced with delight in the whole of Europe, but she loves rather to bloom in the midst of the surrounding blossoms of her daughters; for whoever would look with penetration behind the enchanting eye, and deeper than the beautiful face, where the soul, with its peace and mildness and love, dwells, would find the face faded little by time, for the inward keeps the outward young.

“But I will describe the Lobichau daily life itself, and begin in the morning, when all is apparently solitary and calm. Every guest breakfasts in his own room, and merely sees from his window, if like myself he has one upon the balcony, ladies wandering at that cool morning hour in the park; or a few chambermaids, who are not yet before the hot fire, engaged in folding and plaiting their mistresses' white dresses. Many gentlemen, who belong to the learned class, are at work among their papers; but if it is with them as with me, they bring little to pass. A little later, morning visits begin from the gentlemen to the ladies, such as from me to my friend the Fraulien von Ende, whose apartment, with that of her son, is close to mine. The princesses, who live in the adjoining palace of Tannefeld, now receive visits from young gentlemen, or from me. The duchess Dorothea sits in her chamber, and reads and writes.

"All this goes on after the early private breakfast, and before the call to the general breakfast, that takes place about twelve o'clock. Many, among whom I place myself, are of opinion that the word breakfast is altogether unjust, for apparently this is what used to be called, after the good old custom, although an hour later, the German dinner. It consists of a multitude of warm dishes, such as are to be served at what used to be called the German supper, at six o'clock; but which is now, an hour later, called our dinner, and differs from the breakfast, not by the greater variety of dishes, but by more distinguished splendor in the service, which for the stomach, in its reckoning of time, has little weight. Whoever, from love to the old customs, or from any other cause, prefers the old dining-hour of two or three o'clock, may remain away without excuse, for all may come and go; and conversation and dressing goes on, free from all court restraints.

"I consider the princess happy who can wear a light hat, free from the heavy weight of a royal crown, for she can bow her head without inconvenience to the humblest field-flower of joy, or raise it to the highest star for devotion. The canopy of the throne is open to the prince, and leaves *him* some little freedom of prospect; but the courtier is often more closely imprisoned by the flowery chain of *favor*, than by the *fetters* of displeasure. The *princess* is bound, at the same time, by the hereditary golden chain of rank, the silken cord of sex, that enfolds her like an ornament, and the iron ring of conventional custom.

"Freedom descends here to little things; for say what you will, dearest, it is very agreeable to a literary counsellor like myself, if he is about to appear at court, and has no three-cornered hat, and no shoes, and consequently would have to borrow them, to be able to appear as he is. Wonderful indeed is it, that at court, where every thing rounds itself into a circle, the hat alone must show its three-pointed corners, or that the throne should be a *Vesuvius*, which it is well known can only be ascended in shoes. But what is the absence of extensive or minute forms of constraint to the blessed power of freedom of speech? Fair reader, you may sit at the table at Labichau, or afterwards upon the sofa, and attack or defend any opinion you please. You may be for, or against Magnetism, for, or against the Jews, for, or against Ultras or Liberals. Yes, you can, in the last circumstance, if you are a lady, raise your beautiful voice the loudest *for liberalism*; no one will say any thing against it, or at most, give his reasons. There happened a political contention, where all fought together—the learned, princesses, and the other ladies; when the always calm and cheerful Dorothea entered upon the theatre of the war. Immediately the burning beams and opposing lights, that were rushing together, sank apart, and changed into a mild, pure radiance, in which all could see and rejoice. This freedom in social conversation, as in social enjoyment, is now the *Contract social* in Lobichau. Give but freedom, and both joy and know-

ledge will advance of themselves. The tree of freedom supports the clusters of the vine of joy, as well as the branches of the tree of knowledge.

“ I remark, first, that we have not yet risen from the table of the so-called breakfast, where, if conversation succeeds, it may endure some hours. Afterwards, every one goes where it may seem to him good; into his study or his reading apartment, where he may provide himself from the select French and German library of the duchess, or into the library itself; or, if it be a lady, into her dressing-room, to prepare for the evening dinner; or, as I often do, into the carriage with the countess Eliza von der Reck*—where I see, in this distinguished woman, in her pious will, her firm faith, and warm love, a wholly different being, than in the journals of Biesters or Nicholai; or at last I, and many others go to Tannefeld to the princesses, who rarely *all* appear at the mid-day breakfast. All, in that little dwelling-room is as brightly cheerful as if it, with the chambers of the heart therein, formed together a spring temple for the sun. There are Johanne and Pauline and Wilhelmine, and sometimes the beloved-loving mother, with her guests from the hall, united in cheerful conversation or business; as we said above, it is open to every guest.

“ The evening dinner, that begins about seven o'clock, lasts, after we have risen from the table, till twelve o'clock at night, and this is the most delightful part of the day. It possesses a charm that fills and rejoices every heart; for one becomes weary of the harvest of joy, merely, when they do not gather the fruit from the tree itself.

“ About seven o'clock the writer, whose window opens upon the balcony that leads to the several apartments, has the satisfaction of seeing the guests collect for dinner, and he could have thrown flowers upon the beautiful heads of the ladies as they passed under his window. All the inhabitants of the Tannefeld enchanted castle appear at the *evening* dinner, and remain to share the evening joy; and for a benevolent heart it is a beautiful spectacle to see with what mutual joy mother and daughters meet after a short separation; and how with them those signs of tenderness which have become vapid in the world, receive a new dignity and warmth through their heartfelt sincerity.

“ The dinner now begins under the departing beams of the sun. Upon the writer, the long table, to which sometimes, especially on Sundays, a supplementary was added, filled with gay youths, with the *clare obscure* of twilight, which before the artificial lights were brought in, excited the gay society most agreeably; but upon the writer (to whom it always renewed the memory of his childhood's years, where, in the poor village of his birth, the evening meal in

* The countess Von der Reck was one of the most distinguished female authors of Germany, severely treated by said reviews.

summer was taken in the soft twilight,) it made a childlike, poetical, enchanting impression.

“What took place after dinner, it would be difficult to prophesy. Sometimes a celebrated *violinist*, as it happened twice, played for us. Princess Pauline, and her sister Wilhelmine, could sing in a masterly manner from *Tancred* or a *Stabat mater*, or the whole choir could unite in the German and Swiss national songs, or they read aloud, or played charades, or danced, or did all at once, for each took part in all; or if *one* wished to devote himself to *one* alone, there was no restraint, but perfect freedom in the choice of joys. Flowers of joy are no artificial growth, but the sensitive-plant of feeling.

“But I must excuse the absence of what every *less* cheerful society possesses, namely—*cards*. I will not deny that the higher we rise the more indispensable they become, and that where a king is present the four *card kings* are either regents or vassals, for without the four *cardinal* colors, the heavenly chart of social pleasure cannot be illuminated. Also the *noble* cannot dispense with his card-table, as a free table of gain, where the whole collection of friends sit at their tables, and pray mutually, as the people in Blankensea, by Altona, do in the church, that God would shipwreck the one, for the advantage of the other. But how were mixed society held together, without cards? The card is the olive leaf, or sticking plaster of secretly angry people, who otherwise would wound each other with something sharper than *trumps*. For to men that have nothing to say, at least to women, they present cards out of tenderness, as a passport, or a dispensation bill from conversation, and thus they can pay their debts of wit in good *card paper* during the evening. But a quadruple alliance of the four card kings, against ennui and peevishness, was not necessary in the Tetrarchate of Lobichau.

“Every evening the *beautiful* world, or a part of it, danced for some hours, and the other part sat and looked on. Frequently they chose hastily a charming princely dancer, and placed her at the Vienna Piano, where she formed, alone, a complete orchestra, till another took her place.

“The twelfth of September, the harvest festival, was also made a spiritual harvest. A valuable altar service of gold and silver vessels, with a new altar cloth, the duchess Dorothea had from the first intended for the harvest festival, when in the afternoon all the guests collected in the little friendly church, to hear the harvest sermon. Besides, the four princesses had not waited for such an occasion to visit the church for the first time. A warm, pure love of religion ennobled both mother and daughters. In this, women differ from men in the most decided manner, especially in the higher ranks, which always upon their journeys visit the churches to perform their devotions before the pictures, pillars and colored glass of the windows, so that they often interrupt a full church in their singing and preaching. Therefore, as in French cities, a bell is rung before

the *Porte-Dieu*, called the Jew's bell, to inform the Jews of the entrance of the crucifix, and frighten them away—thus for travellers and connoisseurs, before they enter a church on Sundays, a bell should be rung, that they may not unawares disturb a whole church in their devotion.

“In the Lobichau church there was devotion, pious joy, and gratitude to heaven, that had given them the rich harvest and the benevolent princess. This gratitude looked beautiful in so many country faces. Many of the old heads were *worthy of a painter*—I had nearly written—as if the artist himself had not been made by the original Artist, whom a Raphael had earlier to thank for his own enchanting face, than for his painted faces. An hour after the service was ended, a more joyful and beautiful procession than God usually receives, (for whom, among us, there are only sorrowful and praying processions,) brought the princess the signs of grateful love and joy.

“They collected with music before the castle, upon whose balcony the princess stood surrounded by her friends—boys and girls, virgins and youths, and old men, with wreaths of flowers upon their instruments of agriculture, and cried aloud their love and joy. The duchess threw them not merely glances, but words of her own gratitude and joy, which, for true men like them, were more acceptable than presents of money, stamped with the crown.

“The young men looked up delighted, forgot the gift in the giver; and looked their thanks for a *second*. Some of the ancients brought their speeches, and a printed poem, with freer bearing, than alas, the learned of middle rank can usually command. They received from the duchess, with grateful modesty, the offer of a free ball at the *Werthhaus*, but declined it, as they would rather, themselves, pay the last joy of their harvest festival.

“I here add my harvest sermon, as a thanksgiving to my hostess, composed in the chapel of my sleeping chamber, on the fifteenth of September, in a dream.

“‘My devout hearers, from Kurland and Germany.’—So far the beginning of the sermon—for, alas, in awaking I had completely gorgotten the introduction, and the thirty-two parts into which the sermon was divided; only the application, or the *usus epanorthoticus* remained with me, and sounded thus: ‘I have, then, dearest flock, in the thirty-two parts of my sermon, shown for what harvest of sheaves, and clusters of joy we have to thank our revered Dorothea, that we have enjoyed the highest freedom from all the bandages of court restraint, for the bonds of love, in reason of their lightness, are counted for nothing; our fetters have been only formed of flowers; not in the *sweat* of our faces, but in the *smiles* of the same have we all gathered our joy-sheaves, from thence to Tannefeld; and the preacher himself returns to Bayreuth, overpacked, with the most respectable *tythes*.

“‘Beloved children of my flock, whether in Lobichau or Tanne-

feld, consider the happy neighborhood of the mother church to the filial church, yet more attentively, whereof in the twenty-fifth division of my discourse, I have already hinted. In heaven, as astronomy teaches us, the suns are so far apart, that they do not disturb the attraction of each other's planets ; but, on the contrary, in Lobichau and Tannefeld, the neighborhood of the different suns increases the attraction of the revolving comets ; and the worshippers of the four stars of beauty maintain, after present astronomers, that they consist of Dorothea, Johanne, Pauline and Wilhelmine. . . .”

Only one more of Paul's thoughts, in his chapel at Lobichau. “ The more tenderly and warmly one loves, so much more does he discover in himself defects rather than charms, that render him not worthy of the beloved. Thus are our little faults first made known to us, when we have ascended the higher steps of religion. The *more* we satisfy the demands of conscience, the stronger they become. Love and religion are like the sun. By mere daylight and torchlight, the air of the apartment is pure and undisturbed by a single particle, but let in a sunbeam, and how much dust and motes are hovering about.”

I have given these long extracts, as a fair specimen of Jean Paul's most familiar and trifling manner of writing.

THE END.







